



WHEN LIFE GIVES YOU LEMONS

By: Simphiwe Molaba

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

1

I sit at the sports field of my daughter's school and smile, as I see her get ready to run. She is in grade 2 and is more a tomboy than anything.

I see her running and I cheer as loud as I possibly can. And as always she comes out first. She's looking at me jumping up and down, and I wave

After she gets her medal, and the sports day ends. I hold her hand as we walk to the car.

Her; Mommy did
i do well Me; yes
love. Extremely
well Her; I wish
daddy made it
Me; maybe next
time love

I smile at her, but she doesn't smile back. I know she's hurt that her father didn't make it, but honestly there is nothing I can do about it. Msizi and I have been divorced for just over two years. He knows about Ayanda's race today, and well he's decided not to pitch

Me; how about we get you

something nice for dinner Her;

Mcdonalds?

Me; Mhmm

She knows that I hate it when she eats junk, but I've decided to let her be. I don't want her being upset anymore that she already is

Me; but first I need go to the garage and fill up petrol Her;

do we have to?

Me; Yes Aya We do.

I look at my reaview mirror and see that she is sulking. I roll my eyes and continue driving Me; do you have any homework

Her; No. But I have a speech that I need to do for next week Me; about

Her; what I want to do

when I grow up Me;

and that is

Her; and engineer

I look at her, and wonder what I'm going to do with her. Sometimes I worry about her being too clever for her own good. Like seriously what 7 year old wants to be an engineer.

We get to the garage and I tell the attendant to fill it up, while Aya and I walk into the shop and pick out a few snack for our short ride home.

I pay for both the petrol and snack, and we walk out hand in hand.

Ayanda immediately stands still, just as we walk out. She lets go of my hand and runs towards some sports car. I roll my eyes and walk towards her.

Me; Aya how many times must I tell you not to run off like tha Her; sorry Mommy. I had to see this car

She walks around the car admiring it.

Me; come. Let's go before someone
arrests us for invasion of privacy She
looks up at me and rolls her eyes.
Her; mommy, I'm just looking at from the outside
Me; I know, but I don't see what the fuss is about. It's just
another sports car. Plus its way to dark for my liking
She gives me a stern look and shakes her head. I look at
her and wonder who the mother is in this relationship
sometimes. Like really. She is way to mature for her age.

I don't know what made me look, but behind me stands a man, who I'm guessing is the owner of this ugly waste of money

what colour would you have preferred he asks? I look back at Ayanda and she is giggling. Mxm Me; I'm sorry. we were just leaving

Him; that's not what asked. I asked you what colour you would've chosen I look at him and now he is standing right next to me.

Me; I wouldn't have bought it in the first place

Him; and why not

ME; not my kind of car

Him; I see

I see a ghost of a smile across his face..

He looks at Ayanda, and asks her if she would like to see the inside.

She looks at him excitedly and he opens the car for her, and comes back to stand next to me, while Ayanda inspects everything about the car. She keeps looking at me smiling, and I know that she is in her zone. I want to pull her out when I see her touch the steering wheel, but he looks at me

Him; Let her

Me; I don't know what it is with her and cars Him; she's got good taste. Let her enjoy it Me; mhmm

Ayanda steps out the car and has

the biggest grin on her face. She looks at the man standing next to me and smiles

Her; thank you

Him; It's my pleasure

Her; see mommy. One day I'm going to make cars like that Me; ok. We should go.

That's why I want to be an engineer mom. I'll make cars as good as that.

I smile at the enthusiasm in her voice and take her hand to lead her to the car.

I say thank you once again, and we start walking away. Ayanda gets in the back and puts her seatbelt on. While we get ready to leave.

Im about to reverse, but I see the owner of the walking towards us. He signals for me to wait, and I open my window

Him; sorry. I was wondering. Maybe if you like. I can ahmm

I look up at him and notice how good looking he is. He looks at Ayanda and smiles. While I wait for him to finish his sentence

Him; I can maybe bring the car to your school if you like. You know for your speech

Ayanda lights up like a Christmas tree and immediately nods. I on the other hand have alarm bells going off in my head. Why would he offer to do that? What if he is some molester who wants to know what school my child goes to, so he can kidnap her and sell her off?

Me; that won't be necessary. I'm sure you're far too busy for that.

He looks at me and I see his smile fading, he takes out his wallet from his suit jacket and pulls out a business card.

Him; if you change your mind. Call me.

He gives me the card, smiles at Ayanda and walks off. I start my car and drive off feeling a bit bad. Maybe I should've just said something else.

I look at Ayanda and she is also upset

Me; Ayanda, what did I say
about speaking to strangers Her;
mommy, You were right there
Me; that's not the point.

I put the car in my ashtray
and continue driving Me;
maybe you can write about
my car

Her; mom. You drive a bmw x4. There is nothing special
about it

I look at her and just decide to let the conversation go.
Ayanda will just have to write her speech without that
car. Its not like it's the end of the world.

We go past Mcdonalds and then we head straight home.
Ayanda sulks all the way home and I just let her be. she
can sulk all she likes. I will not be phoning that man.
She eats dinner in her room, and goes to bed.

I sit yet another Friday night watching The fixer on
catch up, with a bowl of popcorn in my hand. Its really
funny how much my life has changed.

Just 2 years ago I was Mrs Bhele. I was the envy of my
friends. He was a pure gentleman, and we were in love.
Well at least I was. Then just 2 years ago, I found out he
was sleeping with my best friend. Needless to say that
was the end of our marriage. He told me he loved us
both and couldn't live without either of us. So I made the
decision and walked away.

I still remember that night like it was yesterday. I was
standing in the house crying my eyes out about how stupid
I had been. I married my very first boyfriend. Then I fell
pregnant and he went to pay Lobola. We stayed together
for 6 years, and at the age of 27 I walked out with just my
hand bag and my daughter. I had endured years of

emotional abuse, and every time he told me I was nothing, I just prayed about it. And the day he hit me, I told the devil to leave my marriage. But the day I walked in and found my best friend in my bedroom half naked with him in the shower, is the day I knew that I had to leave.

2

Getting a call from my ex isn't exactly something I look forward to in life. Most times i just want to ignore him but the fact that we have a child makes it difficult.

I stare at my phone, and finally gather the courage to answer Him:

what took you so long to answer?

Me: what can I do for you

Him: I want to

speak to my child

Me: she's sleeping

Him: I'll pick her up tomorrow at 9am. Make sure she's ready by the time I get there

Me: we've got plans tomorrow Msizi, maybe

As usual he cuts me off before I even finish my sentence

Him: Don't make me drive there. You will have my daughter ready by 9 tomorrow are we clear

I don't answer. I'm frozen to my seat. Msizi and i may be divorced but he is still manages to make me feel like he owns me.

Him: I am not going to ask you

again. Are we clear Tshidi? I take

a deep breath, and clear my

voice.

Me: I'll make

sure she's ready

Him: good.

With that said he drops the call, and i am left feeling cold from inside out. I stand up and go to Ayanda's room and find her fast asleep.

I look at her and all I see is her father. I remember how nervous I was when I found out I was pregnant. Msizi and I had been dating on and off since I was 15. He was the young Soweto charmer. Every girl in Diepkloof had a crush on him.

The day he came and told me he liked me, I thought I was the luckiest girl alive. I became the envy of every girl in my township.

We spent a lot of time together. I was in grade 10 and he was at his first year in varsity. Many of my friends used to tell me that he would drop me for a varsity girl, but nope. He never.

Till one day he asked me to bunk school. I was hesitant at first, but he managed to convince me.

I left home in my uniform, and even got into my transport. But as soon as Bab Zulu dropped us off, I ran in the opposite direction, where I planned on meeting Msizi.

We left together hand in hand and he snuck me into his res at school.

At first I thought he wanted to be romantic, because he made me juice, and gave me biscuits. Then he gave me a P.S. chocolate that had a message written I love you. But then he started kissing me, and putting his hands up my skirt, that's when I knew I had to get out of there.

I stopped Msizi and he instantly started getting more and more intense. He put his hands roughly into my panties. I tried fighting him, but that just made him even more stronger.

I was saved by a knock on the door. He told me to hide under the bed, which I did.

He walked out the room with one of his friends and I took that as an opportunity for me to leave. I snuck out

of the res, and went straight to my mother's work.

I told her wasn't well and that my teacher had said I could go home.

For some reason she believed Me, and gave me one of the hospital beds, and told me to sleep, while she worked.

That week, I was dumped by Msizi for a varsity girl just as my friends had said.

I was heart broken . I thought the world was coming to an end. But little did I know that that was only the beginning.

Msizi and i made up and broke till I was 20. Msizi was already working and I was in my second year of varsity when I found out I was pregnant.

A month before Msizi had insisted that I had strung him along for to long. So I gave in and finally gave him my virginity.

I didn't have much experience with sex. Hell I had never even seen porn In my life. I had grown up amongst 4 of my sister's and 3 brothers. Being the last born only made it worse. My brother's were over protective as hell and they basically mAdE my teenage years unbearable.

So imagine the day I told my oldest brother Thapelo that I was pregnant. His face fell, and was replaced with absolute anger.

He turned red, Nd started interrogating me about who the father was. By the Time my parents got home.

Thapelo had tracked down Msizi, and had threatened his life.

I sat at the dinner table with my father screaming at me, and telling me what a disappointment I was. If it wasn't for my mother I'm sure he would've beaten me to my grave.

The following day my mother woke me up first thing in the

morning and told me to get ready.

I wore a dress, and she ,add me wear a doek. My aunt's from my father's side arrived and i was told to show them the way to Msizi's parents home.

We arrived at the the Mbhele residence, and my mother and Aunts explained to them about what had happened. Msizi, was called to come and confirm if he knew me, and he did.

A week later Msizi's family came to my house and asked for my hand in marriage. I wasn't even given an option on what her I agree or not. My father told them how much he wanted including damages. They paid him upfront and a month later I was Mrs Mbhele.

Everything happened so quickly, I never had time to even think about what was happening.

I moved in with Msizi at his apartment in Randburg, and that was the beginning of the end for us.

I snap out of my thoughts and pack a bag for Ayanda. I already know that he will Insist that Ayanda sleep at his place. So I make sure she has everything that she will need.

I drAg myself to my room, and try getting some sleep. I try pushing Msizi out my mind for the night, but unfortunately he is everywhere even In my sleep.

I dream of him. I dream of the things he used to say and do to Me. I dream of the tears I cried when he dragged me on the floor by my hair,. You see when it comes to Msizi. No matter how hard I try to forget. Deep down its all still there. So I tuck it awAy, and hide behind a smile, that fades the minute i close my eyes.

3

I wake up at 7am, and I'm already anxious. I make breakfast for Ayanda, and i hang the washing. I'm trying by all means to keep it together but I'm failing.

I go back inside, and i wake up Ayanda. She gives me a death stare, but i don't care. I need her up and ready by 9am. If not Msizi will have my head and that is the last

thing I need.

She drags her body to the shower, while I mAKE her bed and open the Windows.

By the time it's 8: 30am, she's eaten and is now waiting eagerly for her father to arrive. I clean the kitchen and head upstairs to take shower.

I hear the bell, and i race downstairs as though I'm a mad woman. Ayanda is looking at me as though I'm crazy, but i dont care.

I open for him, and instruct her to go get her bag.

He walks In and i am instantly nauseous. He stares at me and I see disapproval written all over his face

Him: aren't you going to greet me

I want to speak but

again, I am frozen.

Him: you look good.

I look down and pray he doesn't touch me. He moves closer, and lifts my face with his hand Him: Have you no respect anymore? I asked you if you sre going to greet me?

Me: Hi

Him: you looking good.

He puts his hands around me and I try to control my breathing. He starts kissing my neck and that's when I try moving but he's got me in a corner. His hands are tight. There is no where for me to run, and that. That takes me back. Back to a place I hate. A place where I have no say.

Me; Msizi. Please. Stop. Ayanda will be down here any minute now. He doesn't stop. Instead his hands are in my top, he's got my nipples. I try pushing him away, but he presses me harder against the wall.

I hear Ayanda coming, and that's when he whispers in my ear.

Him: did you honestly think that a piece of paper would stop you from being mine? You belong to me Tshidi. and nothing you do will change that.

With those words,he lets go, and goes to meet Ayanda halfway. He takes her bag from her, and she is smiling from ear to ear.

I take a moment and try to compose myself. I can't cry. I won't cry. Not in front of Ayanda.

They come into the kitchen laughing and teasing each other. Msizi, is now in father mode, and when he is like this, I see a shadow of the man that I fell in love with. He looks at Ayanda and all you see is love. She is his weakness, and nothing and no one can break the bond that they have.

You see with Msizi, he may be arrogant, abusive, mean and rude to me. But when it comes to Ayanda, he is an outstanding father. He adores her, and spoils her rotten. If Ayanda were to say she wanted to go to Disney world, he would make it happen asap. If she says she wants anything. Msizi will do it. But when it comes to him attending things, he sometimes lacks in that department, all because of his job. He is a doctor, and with those hours in surgery, its nearly impossible for him to attend matches, but other than that he is an excellent father.

Ayanda runs into me, and gives me a hug, then runs off to fathers car. Leaving alone with him in the kitchen.

Him: I'll have her back tomorrow evening I nod, and he smiles

Him: The sooner you accept things the way they are, the better for all of us. Your mine Tshidi. Only death will change that.

He puts his sunglasses on, and leaves me feeling as naked as I felt the first time he had sex with me when i didnt want to.

People call that rape, but he cAlls it his rights. That night I had left Ayanda at his mother's house in Soweto. She was exactly a month old. I had been staying with my mother, so she could help me. He picked us up and made me leave Ayanda with his mother for the night.

At first I was apprehensive, but he convinced me that he missed me and wanted to spend time with me.

So being the fool that I was, I left Ayanda, and we headed to our townhouse in Randburg.

The minute we arrived he started kissing me. I kissed him back because I had missed him, but the he put his hands up my skirt and i knew that he wanted more, but i couldn't. The Ayanda was only a month old, and i was still bleedin I tried telling him but he was having none of it. He told me he wanted me, and that he had paid for me.

I tried reasoning with him, but he ignored me. He pulled me into the bedroom, I tried pushing him away, but that made things worse. I'm that moment he became the Monster I never knew existed.

He slapped me so hard I fell to the ground. I was in such shock, I didn't cry. Instead I looked him in the eye and tried understanding what was happening. He looked at me and told me to get on my knees. I refused. There was no way I was going to give him a blow job, when he had just hit me.

That only added fuel to the fire. He pulled me onto the bed,

and literally wrapped my clothes off.

I tried. I really did, but he was having none of it. The more I fought him off the more he would kiss, bite and dig his paws into me.

He pulled my panties off, and entered me with no second thought.

My stitches had healed, but i was still raw, so the pain I felt was unbearable. I screamed, and he put his hand over my mouth. He moved inside me with no mercy. He was claiming what was his, and i knew from that day on, that I was never going to be able to claim back my life.

I see Msizi and Ayanda driving out, and i immediately lock the door. I head upstairs to my room and i get into the shower, and scrub myself. I scrub, so hard, but still, I can't get the smell of this man off of me. So I sit. In the shower, defeated. Nothing I do, will ever erase those memories. And be knows that.

I get out the shower, and change into my gym gear. I leave the house and go to the gym. That is the only way I am able to let of steam. By the time I'm done, I feel lighter. I put my fake smile back on, and i am able to move on.

I head back home, and i spend the day finishing off a design of a dress that I had been working on. It's one of my favourite from my collection. I think it will be one of the most sold in the boutique.

That's if everything will go according to plan.

Sunday, I wake up, and start getting ready for church. I spoke to Ayanda before I went to sleep lastnight and as always she was having the time of her life with her father and Vero. My ex best friend.

I get dressed for church, grab my bible, and i am off. I dont reAlly like being late for church. It makes me feel low. Like I don't respect God, so I make it my mission to be on time.

By the time I arrive , my entire family has arrived. My sister's sit with their husband's, while my brother's sit with their wives. My niece's and nephews are at Sunday school, and me. Well I sit with my Parents.

I greet everyone and tak a seat next to my mother. She takes my hand and kisses the back of it. I put my head non her shoulder and for the first time since yesterday, I feel ok.

The service starts, and i am able to finally let go. I pray and i tell God how I feel. I tell him how much I need him. I sing and clap and i know that soon God will answer my prayer. One day Msizi will leave me alone.

After church, I drive to my parents house and we have Sunday lunch as a family. I look at my brother's, Thapelo, Thabang and Thabo , with their wives, and i see such happiness. My sister's Lerato, Naledi, Pontsho, and Puleng, and i see how much they adore their husband's. Where did I go wrong.

I eat and listen mainly to the conversation at hand. My dad is speaking to the guys about the soccer match from the night before. They all, laugh, and i smile. I sometimes wonder if maybe, I had stayed with Msizi. Maybe, just maybe we could've made it work. But then I quickly come back to my senses.

After lunch I leave my family and head back to my house in Craighall. My mom wanted me to stay longer, but Msizi, had already tested me that he would have Ayanda home by 4pm, so I had to get going.

I drive back to Craighall like a maniac. The last thing I want is to have Msizi arrive before me. I'd never hear the end of it.

I arrive, and he arrives just 10 minutes after me. He walks in and Ayanda rushes to her room, to put her bag away.

I see by the smile on her face that she had a wonderful time. He looks at me, and i look away

Him: how was church

Me: fine

Him: look at me when you talk to Me Tshidi

I look up at him, because I know that that voice is the voice he makes when he gets mad. Me: it was fine

Him: I'll pick Ayanda up on Friday. I'm taking her for the school holidays.

Me: Msizi, can we discuss this at all? She has Him: it's not up for discussion.

Ayanda comes down, and he smiles.

Him: baby girl, I'll see you on Friday.

Her: ok daddy

He looks at me and gives me a warning look, and the leaves. Just like that.

I make dinner for Ayanda and she tells me all about her time with her father. I smile and pretend to be excited for her to spend her June holidays with him, but the truth is I will miss my baby. But because I made a promise to myself to never stand in the way of their relationship, I smile and pretend that all is well.

4

Monday morning I get up and get ready for the day. I

wake Aya up and help her get ready. We have breakfast,

and jump in the car. I drop her off at school, and leave to

start my day.

The first thing I do is take my designs to the studio. We're only a few weeks away from the open of my boutique, and I need to make sure that everything is in order. I give Sis May the designs, and look through some of the dresses that have been made already. So far so good. I'm just a step closer to seeing my dream come to life, and that excites me more than ever. I leave

the studio and head to the location that my boutique will be. The construction is almost finished and is looking better than what it was when I last came. I do a walk through with the construction manager, and I'm happy.

Everything is looking up. I leave the site, and go back home to work on more of my designs. I have over 500m² of space, and that needs as many dresses as possible.

When I get home I start tidying up before working. I used to have lady who helped out around the house, but I had to let her go, so its up to me to make sure that my home is clean.

I start with my room, then the kitchen and lastly Ayanda's room. I hang all her new clothes that Msizi bought her, then starts vacuuming. I don't know what made me look, at her shelf, but I find one of her work books. I open it and I see her speech. I read through it and it makes me smile. She really is determined. But then something catches my eye. It's a little note that she made. It's about the Audi R8 that she saw. She writes about how she wishes she was able to have one at her school so she can demonstrate all the things she knows, and has researched about it.

This instantly breaks my heart. She really put a lot of effort into this speech of hers. I think about the card in my ashtray, but I Immediately shake my head. There's no way I am phone a complete stranger to take time out of his schedule, to help me. So instead, I go back downstairs, and start looking for and R8 to hire for a day.

I look and phone every car rental office I can find, but there is nothing available. Most of them don't even have the R8 on

their books, and the ones that do, they are already booked. I sigh frustratingly and think of ways to make this happen, but I am blank.

The only choice I have is to ask Msizi but that is something I'm not willing to do. He would take that as an opportunity to put me down.

I sit for another hour debating with myself about phoning Mr R8, and I finally give in.

I go to the car, and pull out the card from my ash tray, the go back inside. I look at the card for the first time, and read it. Mr R8 real name is Nkosinathi Khumalo. It's says here that he is a partner of some law firm. I shrug a bit when I think about how busy he must be. But being the mother that I am, I put aside my fears, and end up dialling his office line. I have his mobile number on the card, but I feel like a mobile number is too personal.

The receptionist answers, and I ask to speak to Mr Khumalo. She asks me if he is expecting my call, and I say no. Like really, stop asking me a million questions and put me through. I'm already nervous, the last thing I need is her interrogating me.

She puts me through and now I wait for him to answer Him:

Khumalo

He catches me

by surprise. Me:

Ahnm, hi

Him: Hi

(silence) Oh Lord I didn't

think this through Him:

Can I help you

I quickly come back to my senses and answer

Me: yes, sorry about that.

My line isn't great Him: it's

fine. How can I help you?

Me: Ahnm. Yes. You're speaking to Matshidiso. I met you with my daughter Ayanda. At the BP garage on

Jan Smuts

Him: Hi How are you

Me; I'm good. You?

Him; better now that you called

I don't say anything, because I don't know what im
expected to say when a man says that Him; Hows
Ayanda?

Me; She's fine. She's actually the reason I'm calling. I was
wondering if your offer about the cars still
stands

Him: of course it does. When would you like me to bring the car?

Me: Wednesday. I'm not exactly sure about the time. I'll
speak to my daughter's teacher, and will text you the details

Him: I look forward to it.

Me: thank you. But I was wondering if we could work out some
sort of payment for all your help. Maybe I could hire the car
from you at an hourly rate. Just for us to say thank you for
helping her out

He keeps quite for a while, and I wonder if this was a good idea

Him: what would make you think I want to be

reimbursed for an offer that I made? Oh gosh now I

feel embarrassed.

Me: no. I just didn't want you wasting your time, for nothing. I'm sorry. I didn't mean to seem rude. It's just that

I keep quite. There's no way I can tell him what im thinking. that usually men don't do things for free without expecting

something in return

Him; Just that what ?

Me; Nothing.

Him: Matshidiso. I offered to bring the car, because I saw how excited she was to include it in her speech. I wasn't expecting anything in return

I turn instantly red from embarrassment. I don't know why I didn't just shut my mouth

Me: Nkosinathi. I (clears throat) I'm sorry.

Him; Ill wait for your text

He dropped the call, and I was left feeling like a complete pshyco. I mean this man obviously didn't need the money. Sometimes I don't know what is wrong with me.

I go back to cleaning Aya's room. I try to get the conversation I just had out my head, but I can't. Nkosinathi seems like such a firm man. His voice is hard, but has a soft feel to it as well.

I just hope I didn't offend him too much. I giggle to myself and carry on with designing yet another dress.

That evening I tell Ayanda about the car and she is beyond ecstatic. She kisses me and goes off to practice her speech.

I sit in bed, once I've put my hyperactive daughter to bed.

She was so excited for Wednesday that I had to threaten her with cancelling the car if she didn't get into bed.

She obliged and here I am now texting Nkosinathi.

(Me) Sorry I'm texting you so late. I was trying to get Ayanda to bed. She is so excited about Wednesday she didn't want to sleep

(Him) I'm only happy to help. Sorry she gave you a hard time.

(Me) I'm used to it by now. Anyway her speech starts at 10:00am. You can park the car in the school open parking bay and the teacher will come out with the class, so Aya can give her speech

(Him) will do. Will

you be there? (Me)

yep

(Him) I look forward to seeing you again. I blush a bit. What do you say when someone says something like that (Him) I'm serious.

(Me) I don't know what to say to that

(Him) you don't have to say anything. I was just putting it out there

(Me) ok. Well It's out there.

(Him) sleep tight. I'll see you on Wednesday

I smile to myself and drift to sleep. I try escaping Msizi, but as always he is in my dreams.

I spend Tuesday working, I haven't spoken to Nkosinathi since Monday night. I keep trying to understand what he meant by he looks forward to seeing me. My mind tells me something, but I brush it off. I'm not going to even entertain the idea.

We wake up on Wednesday and it is absolutely freezing. We are sitting at -0 and Lord knows I don't want to get out of bed, but what choice do I have

I get in the shower, then go to make breakfast.

Aya is awake and ready. I drop her off at school, then go to the studio to check on the manufacturing of my dresses.

I find everyone busy. I look at the dresses that have been made since Monday and I must say I love them. The detailing, is done to perfection.

I leave the team and go make a few calls to my events planner. She gives me a run through on how far we are, but, I decide its best we meet face to face. Some of the things that she is saying aren't adding up, and that freaks me out. So I tell her to meet me at mug and bean in Parkhurst. This way we can walk to the boutique and see how far construction has come.

I leave the studio and head to Aya's school. I think of texting Nkosinathi but decide against it. He said he'd be there, so I have to trust that he will.

I get to her school, and he is already parked and waiting. I park a

few bays away from him, and head to him.

He gets out the car when he sees me approaching. I don't know why, but I get butterflies In the pit of my stomach

He smiles and for some

reason I smile back He

opens his arms, and I give

him a hug. (Lord he smells

so Damn good)

He lets go and just looks at me. I look away. There's something about his deep eyes, that just makes me blush.

Luckily, I see Ayanda's English teacher coming towards us followed by her class.

Nkosinath reverses the car out the bay, and opens the

doors so that the kids can see it better. Ayanda gives us a

short wave, and starts with her speech.

I smile, throughout it. She tells her speech like only she can.

She has a glow about her, and there in that moment I don't regret making that call to Nkosinathi.

5

After giving her speech, Ayanda gives Nkosinathi a hug, and she excitedly walks back to class with the rest of class mates.

Nkosinathi and i are left alone in an awkward silence. He looks at me and smiles Him: She did well

Me: yah. She really did

We both look ahead. And we fall back into the awkward silence. Until he gives in Him: Would you like to grab a coffee, before you head back to the office?

I look at him, and again, I realize just how good looking he really is. His dark skin, the way carries himself. These deep, brown eyes, his lips. Oh God don't get me going about those cherry lips.

Everything about him, is just so damn sexy. But most of all his aura is what catches me off guard. He just seems so calm. Even when he speaks, his voice alone exudes his calm nature.

He's looking at me expecting an answer, and here I am , busy looking at his lips. I have to snap out of this.

Him: Are you ok?

I clear my throat and look down at my feet embarrassed Me: yes.

I'm fine. I actually have an appointment to get to Him: what time

Me: 11am

Him: You've still got 30min. come.

He's starts walking and I shake my head. This man doesn't even give me a chance to get out of this.

He stands at the outside of my car, and holds the door

open. I walk towards him and he has a smile on his face

Me: is mug&bean ok? My

next appointment is there

Him: perfect. I'll follow you

I get in my car and he walks back to his car. I don't know why But he just seems so in control.

I drive off, and wonder what that the hell im doing. I should've never agreed to have coffee with him. What if he's some serial killer? But then I remember that he is a lawyer. So my conclusion is he is a hot, serial killer, lawyer. That's what my brain is telling me mos.

We get to mug&Bean and the first thing I do is order a hot chocolate, while he opts for a cappuccino Him: so tell me about yourself

Hmmm there it is. That famous sentence, and to this day I don't know how to answer it, without giving away too much

Me: what would you like to know

Him: everything

Me: Well that's impossible, given our time restraint Him;

ohk fine. The basics then

Me: ok, let's see. You already know my name, you know Aya. And that just about sums up my life. I live to be a mother

Him: nice try. Try again (Chuckle)

Me: fine, I'm 29. I'm a designer. I'm from Soweto. Both parents are still alive and I have 7 siblings I look at him and he has a smile across his face

Him: a designer?

Me: yep.

Him; interesting. How about the one topic that you avoided

Me: what topic

Him: Relationship status

I look down and take a sip

of my hot chocolate Me:

Divorced

I feel his eyes burning into me. I can't look at him anymore. I'm ashamed. Like really, what 29 year old has a child and is divorced?

He's probably wondering what the hell is wrong with me, that I couldn't keep Ayanda's father. Most people my age are only getting into marriages. And me I've already exited my marriage.

I think he notices that

I'm uncomfortable Him:

Can I see you again?

Oh Lord help me. This was supposed to be a onetime thing, and now here he is wanting to go out again.

Me: Nkosinathi. I don't

Him: call me Nathi that's what all my friends call me

Me: ok, Nathi. I don't think it's a good idea for us to hang out again Him: and why not?

Oh Lord I wasn't expecting that. What do I say?

Me: it's just

that. I am

(clears

throat)

I look up and see something in his eyes, that I can't seem to place. I want

to explain more, but Samantha arrives.

Nathi is looking at me and not even minding Samantha, who is standing at our table. I see he wants me to continue, but I don't. As always. I'm frozen

He stands up, and pays for our bill. I

want to stop him, but I don't. He

shakes my hand and leaves.

Well, that just about sums up my life. When I saw him earlier he gave me a hug, and now he leaves shaking my hand. God, I swear I'm cursed.

I look at Samantha and plast my fake smile back onto my face. I don't know why I feel so bad. I've said no to so many dates since my divorce. But this time it all seems different.

There's something about this man, that a draws me to him. I know he's good looking, but it's more than that. I don't want to be here, but I'm here.

I sit and go through the opening of Diva Couture. I'm hardly able to concentrate, but I sit up and do what needs to be done.

Samantha takes notes, as no dish out everything I need to happen. By the time I done, it already after lunch.

I pick up Aya from school, we get home, and I make dinner. She eats, baths then goes to bed.

I sit on the couch watching some lame reality show, and reflect on the events of today, and wonder why I mess up everything. Why couldn't I just say yes? Why do I sit and enjoy being lonely. Why can't I be normal? I could really use a drink, but tomorrow is work, so I drag myself to bed.

No use beating myself up over someone I hardly even know. Some people are meant to be in relationships. And some people aren't. I am one of those people. No use fighting it.

I've always looked at my sisters with their husbands and wondered how they did it. How do you choose a guy that is good, that is honest, who won't turn around and beat you? How do you know

he's the one? Because when I first met Msizi, I was certain we were going to be my happily ever after. He was so sweet, and loving. He called me a million times a day, bought me all sorts of things. But in the end he turned out to be my biggest mistake yet.

6



Friday arrives and Ayanda's bags are packed. I know that Msizi will arrive at any moment, and I already feel weak to my stomach.

I look at my baby watching TV and I let out a sigh. I'm honestly going to miss her, but every little girl needs her father, and I refuse to be the one to destroy their relationship.

If I have to carry Msizi's abuse, then so be it. as long as Aya is happy, then I can live with just about anything else.

I haven't heard or spoken to Nathi since Wednesday. I have tried. Really tried to forget him, but something keeps making me think about him. I'm like a school girl with a crush, and to be honest it's starting to annoy me

The doorbell rings, and Ayanda opens for

Msizi. I sit in the lounge waiting. He strides

in, and hugs Ayanda.

Him: Aya, take your bags to the car. I need to talk to your mother about something

I tense up, but give Aya smile. She gives me a kiss and leaves. I'm left alone with him.

Him: so what do you plan on doing for the 3 weeks that she is with me ? Me: I need to finish up a few more designs. So that's just about it

Him: mhmm

I look down at my feet, and

pray that he will leave Him:

I'm taking Aya to Durban. You

should join us. Oh Lord here

we go.

Me: Msizi, it's a bit difficult at the moment. The boutique opens in a few weeks, and i still have a lot to do.

Him; I expect to see you in Durban. Even if it's for a few days. Don't make me drag you there.

Me; Msizi

He comes closer, and I jump off the couch. He gives me that sleazy smile, and I feel myself tense up.

Him; I'm not repeating myself. I'll send you your ticket

With that he walks out.

Sigh.

I don't bother cooking, it's Friday night and there is no use cooking for one. Instead I pull out a bottle of amaretto, I mix it with lime, and I drink my sorrows away. At least if I'm drunk, I won't think about Msizi. Or Mr R8. Instead I can dance, and drink and there will be no one to judge me.

I'm halfway through my bottle, when I decide I need to call, Mr Delivery. I need something nice and greasy to go along with the alcohol that has taken over my system.

I see Mr, and I press
the dial button. Him:
(Matshidiso)

I giggle, and wonder how on earth Mr
Delivery knows me by name Him:

Matshidiso are you there

Me: I look at the screen and as fate would have it,

ive dialled Mr R8 instead of delivery Shit, Shit, SHit

Me: oh gosh. You're not Mr Delivery

Him: no I'm not. Are you ok? I don't know but you sound a bit off

I giggle at what he says. He sounds so serious. Like some Madala from KZN

Me: I'm hungry. And you're not Mr Delivery. So I'm going to go and finish my Amaretto, and cook myself something to eat.

Him: wait. Oh God, have
you been drinking Me :

why do you care?

Him: Matshidiso . Don't cook

anything. I'm on my way Me: on

your way where?

Him: give me your address.

I mumble a few words to him, then hang up. I don't know what I was thinking. But tonight isn't the night to think about it.

Tonight I get to stop pretending. Tonight I get to drink as much as I possibly can and not have to worry about the circumstances.

I go to the kitchen and switch on the gas. Then I move to the fridge to decide what I'm going to cook. I take out wors, lamb chops and some bacon.

I put the meat in the microwave to defrost, while I sit with my bottle of amaretto which I'm now drinking from the bottle,. No use mixing anymore.

I sit and think about how my life would've been different, if

only I had stayed away from that monster. I wake up and

someone is shaking me awake. I open my eyes, and I

immediately close them again.

Him: Matshidiso wake up.

He opens the sliding door, and starts opening the Windows. I'm trying to drift off to sleep but he is shaking me awake again.

Him: Matshidiso wake up.

I open my eyes, and he's staring at me with those dreamy eyes.

I weakly smile at him, but he doesn't smile back. I

twitch my nose and all I smell is gas. Shit. Wtf

Him: are you ok.

Look at me I look

at him

Him: can you stand up

I nod and he takes my hand, and walks me out into the Veranda.

I sit not one of the chairs and start feeling like an absolute

fool. What the hell was I thinking? Nathi, walks into the

house and comes out with a bottle of water in his hand,

and hands it to me, I look at him and all I see is anger.

Nothing more nothing less

Me; Thank you

Him: What were you thinking? You could've killed yourself. I told you not to cook

I look away and immediately start shrinking. I may be drunk, but every word he says is piercing through me. I start getting emotional

I think he notices, because he lets out a sigh and sits next to me. . We sit in silence. I am completely embarrassed. I have no idea what I was thinking drinking so much. Look now I dragged this poor man, out of bed all because of my bullshit.

I look at him and he seems to be deep in thought. I know he has more questions, but he doesn't know if he should ask. After a long moment of silence, I decide to speak up

Me: I'm sorry

Him: don't apologize. I'm just glad you're ok

We sit in

silence again.

God this is

torture

Him: where's Ayanda?

Me: she's with her dad

for the holidays Him: I

see

Me; I'm really sorry. I don't know what I was thinking

Him: I'm glad I got here on time. I don't

know what I would've done if He doesn't

finish his sentence, He just looks at me

I don't know why, or if it's the alcohol, but I start giggling.

Him; What on earth could be so

funny at this specific moment Me; are

you always this serious

He looks at me and I see a ghost of a smile

Him; its not funny. You could've really done some damage

I giggle again.

Him: I like the
sound of that

Me: of what

Him: your giggle. Your voice. Hell, i think i like everything about
you

I look up at him shocked. He looks into my eyes.

He's serious. Like really serious Me: sigh

Him: what's wrong

Me: you

shouldn't like

me. Him: and

why not

Him: because I have way too much baggage. If you know
what's good for you, you will leave and never look back.

I remove my eyes from his, but he

continues staring at me. Him; I'm

not going anywhere

He looks away and we both sit in silence. I want to think about
why he's just said. But for now I'm drunk, and all no want to do
is sleep.

Me: I think I need to get to bed.

Him: the house still reeks of gas. Maybe you should consider
checking into a hotel for the night, or you could sleep at my
place.

I look up at him and he smiles.

Him: don't worry, I won't do anything. I just don't want you sleeping in a house that is full of gas.

I roll my eyes, and try standing up. I immediately sit down when I feel the world spinning. He sees this and makes me sit down

Him; you see what I mean. You can't even walk to the so called bedroom you so desperately want to go to

Me; (yawn) fine. Then I'll sleep out here.

I lean my head on his shoulder, (Don't ask me why. I think it's the alcohol) and I doze off to sleep.

I don't know about you, but there is nothing i hate more than a hangover. You wake up feeling like absolute shit. Yon head is heavy, you lips are dry, and your stomach feels like it's been turned inside out.

I open my eyes and look around, and I notice I'm not in my bed. In hear footsteps coming towards the room and I put the duvet over my head. He walks in to see if I'm awake, then walks back out.

I sit under the duvet and think of ways of escaping. But nothing comes to mind. Instead I have no choice but to embarrass myself even more.

How the hell did I let this happen? How could I be so damn stupid? I hardly know this man, and here I am in what I think is his house.

Lord help me.

I get out of bed, and look at myself in the mirror. I look like a monster. My hair is a mess, my mouth is as dry as the Kalahari Desert and I am still wearing my PJ shorts and a t-shirt from last night.

I shake my head, and wonder what the poor man must be thinking. He's probably got plans for today, and here I am screwing all that up.

I look around, and find my slippers. I go to the bathroom and I rinse my mouth and wash my face. I use my hands to try and straighten my weave. I walk out the bathroom looking a bit less like a zombie.

I'm not sure where I'm going, but I walk around trying to find

my way out of here, or at least find him. Jeeze, this damn house is huge.

I find him sitting in the lounge, with his laptop.

He looks up at me and smiles. Him: you sleep well?

I look at my feet

embarrassed Me:

yes thank you

Him: join me for breakfast

Me: Nkosinathi, I'm so sorry. I have no idea what I was thinking. Him: would you like coffee or juice.

I look at him, and he doesn't even seem to care that I am

standing here in shorts and a T-shirt. Him: I'm going to

wing it and say juice.

He stands up and goes to the bar fridge and hands me an orange juice.

Him: so how are you feeling?

Me: fine. (Clears throat) ahmm, Nathi, do you mind if I use your phone. I'd like to call a cab. To take me home.

I see his face change from being jolly, to being disappointed

Me: it's just that I don't want to bother you any more than I already have. I'm sure you have far better things to do than to babysit me.

He's staring at me, and I can see he's starting to get irritated

Him: do you
always do that?

Me: do what

Him: speak like that
about yourself? Me:
silence

Him: if you want to go Matshidiso, I'll take you home. Stop
feeling bad about calling me. I'm glad you
did.

I look at him and see

that he is serious. Me:

I'm sorry

Him: if you apologize one more time, I
am going to hang myself I smile at him
and he rolls his eyes.

Him: would you like breakfast

I look at myself and then at him. And I'm embarrassed all
over again. Here I am looking like some rag doll. And there he
is, looking like he stepped out of a magazine photoshoot.
He's wearing a golf shirt, with jeans, and a pair of jeans.
Nothing special really, but the way he carries it, is what makes
him sexy,

Me: how about you take me home, so I can freshen up, then I
can take you for breakfast to say thank you

He looks at me like he is considering my offer

Him: I've got another offer. How about you take me to breakfast, and be my date for the SA business awards tonight? I'm sure that will make up for what you put me through last night

I contemplate what he is saying and I feel giddy inside. I want to say no, but at the same time I want to say yes.

Him; pretty please

Me: I guess I could do that.

He smiles a deep smile, and for the first time I see his dimples.

I arrive home to find my sliding door and most of my Windows open.

I don't really worry about it, because I know that the butlers were all locked, but it does feel strange to come back after what happened.

I leave Nathi on the lounge, and I head upstairs to get ready.

I jump in the shower, then get dressed. I look through my closet, and decide to keep things simple. I wear my jeans, with a pair of knee high boots, a polar neck, and a fur jacket on top.

I brush my hair, and put on some make up. By the time I'm done,
I look more like myself.

(Phew)

I walk downstairs and see Nathi standing up with big grin on his
face

Him: that's better. Now you look more
like the Matshidiso I know. Me; please
call me Tshidi. Matshidiso sounds too
long

Him: wells Tshidi shall we go

before I die of hunger? I smile,

and walk to his car

Him: so do you still

dislike my car? I

instantly blush

Me: I don't dislike it. It's just that it's so.

Small and I just don't get it Him: so what
cars do you like?

Me: SUV's and 4x4 the

bigger the better Him: so

you have a thing for big

things in life

I look at him shocked, and burst out laughing. That

comment just seemed so unlike him Me: I am going to

refrain from answering that

He laughs as we sit, and enjoy breakfast. He has a full English breakfast, and I stick to my breakfast fruit platter with yogurt

Him; are you always this healthy

Me: mostly. I like to monitor what I eat.

Him: I don't get that. I mean you look pretty fit to me. Why would you limit yourself?

Me: to make sure I don't gain weight. Plus I'm trying to flush all the horrible toxins that I put in my body out, and the best way to do that is by eating healthy and drinking tons of water

He nods, but I can see that he still doesn't understand the whole eating healthy thing. Typical zulu man ❤️<3

Him: so are you going to tell me about

what happened last night Oh Lord, why

does he have to bring that up?

Me: do you mind if we

don't talk about it Him:

on one condition

Me: what

Him: next time you feel like dawning a bottle of alcohol by yourself. Promise me you'll call me before doing anything stupid.

Me: promise

Him: where's Ayanda?

.....

I enjoy every minute I spend with Nathi. Everything about him makes me giddy. 1 breakfast and 2 coffees later, I am on my way home with the huge grin ever.

It's been so long since I felt this way.

Nathi didn't want me to go, but I had to get some work in before we go to this awards thingy of his.

I work throughout most of my afternoon. For some reason I am able to concentrate more than I normally do.

Him; ** thank you for agreeing
to come with me ** Me; ** 9
**

Him; ** do you have
anything to wear** Me;
** im wearing one of my
designs**

Him; ** you could wear rags, and you'd still look beautiful**
Me; ** 9**

I finish another 2 designs, then go to my studio to pick up a dress.

Sis May assists me with trying on a few dresses, until I settle on one of my favourite designs.

It's a black, backless dress. It's mainly lace, and has a few sequences. I try it on and I must admit it does me favour. It hugs me where I need to be hugged, and let's go where it needs too.

I go back home, and start getting ready. I take shower, then get dressed. I finish of my hair and makeup, and I'm ready to go.

I walk down, when I hear the doorbell. I open and Nkosinathi is staring at me with a huge grin on his face.

I open the door and he walks in. I must say he looks dashing in his tux

I lead him to the kitchen and pour him a glass of wine. He hasn't

said anything, and I'm guessing that means I look good.

He finally comes

back to his senses

Him: you look

amazing

I do a little twirl and smile

Me: thank you. You look rather dashing yourself

Him: we should get going. I don't want us to be late

Me: let me grab my clutch.

I run upstairs, take my clutch which has just my phone, and a few lady essentials, and we're off

I lock up the house and notice a Black Mercedes-Benz GLE SUV Coupe packed outside. I look at him and he smiles.

Him: you said you like big cars

I smile, as I'm jetted off to God knows where

When we get to the venue, we step out and he leads me to the red carpet. Judging by how ease he is its obvious this isn't his first time. Me on the other hand, I'm as nervous as hell.

He feels my reductants and comes to a halt.

Him: relax. I won't leave your side.

I take a deep breath, and

put my hand in his. Me: ok.

Let's go.

He smiles, and we're back on track.

We take a few pictures, and I start to feel less tense. He holds my hand in all of them. He whispers something in my ear and I smile.

We make it off the red carpet, and I am relieved.

Him: not too bad I hope

Me: not at all,

Him: come let me introduce you to some people,

He takes me around the room introducing me to different business personnel. A lot of the ladies ask about my dress, and they don't believe that I designed it.

Most of them ask me for my contacts which I guess is great for business.

The MC, announces that we are about to begin. He takes my hand and leads me to our table.

I sit throughout the ceremony, and for the first time in my life since Msizi, I don't have to fake a smile.

Nathi walks away with an award for most prominent business adventure, in the law department. His acceptance speech is short and masculine, just like him. Until he says something that leaves me speechless

Him: before I walk off, I'd like to thank my beautiful date for agreeing to come with me. We both know I would've never survived the night without you here.

I smile anxiously, as I hear people chuckling and clapping.

He walks off and comes to sit next to me. I give him a look, and he shrugs with a naught smile on his face.

Him: I was just telling the truth, if you had said no to coming, I wouldn't have bothers to come I roll my eyes and smile.

We have dinner, and I chit chat with the ladies at the table, while he is talking to the gents.

The event is over, and we head to the after party. He keeps to his promise and stays close. The only time he leaves is when he goes to the cigar lounge with a potential client, whose wife is asking me for a pictures of some of my other designs.

I show her a few pictures on my phone. She looks impressed, so invite her to my opening. Her name is Rifiloe. Apparently she and her husband have been together for just about 4 years, and I must say her and Siyabonga make a beautiful couple.

She introduces me to some of the ladies, and in no time I have appointments lined up for the next week.

Some want evening gowns, some want me to dress them for specific functions, and others just want to spend their rich husband's money just for the sake of it.

I'm on my second class of bubbly for the night. Nathi is now sitting at the bar with the Siyabonga, while I'm sitting with the Stepford Wives club.

When he finally comes walking towards me,

I see a smile across his face. Him: Ladies, I'm

sorry to interrupt, but I'd like to claim my

date back.

They all smile, while I give them lady hugs, and promise to see some of them during the course of the week.

Rifiloe seems really nice. We've made plans to go to lunch as well. So I guess I've made a friend in her

Him: having fun?

Me: actually, yes. I think I just filled up my diary for the next week.

Him: so this wasn't a complete waste of your time

Me: on the contrary. Tonight is just

what I needed for my brand. Him: I'm

glad. Come, let me take you home.

He takes my hand, and I don't hesitate to put my hand in his. When we step out it's a bit chilly, so he takes off his jacket and puts it over my shoulders to keep me warm. I don't know why, but for some reason, I feel good inside. Like this is

where I need to be. Here with him.

He opens the door for me, and I step in. I sneak a smell of his jacket as he walks around the car, and smells like him. Fresh, subtle, but still masculine.

I arrive home, and he walks in with me. I put on the lights, And make him a cappuccino. One of my sister's bought me this machine for my birthday, but I've never used it.

He finishes his coffee, and

gets ready to leave. I walk

him out, and hand him his

jacket back.

Him: thank you for coming with me tonight. I wouldn't have enjoyed it as much without you there

Me: it was my pleasure. I enjoyed myself

Him: will you come with me

to more of these? I look at

Him and smile.

Me: maybe

Him: well, that's better than a no.

He leans in and gives me a

kiss on the cheek. Him: I'll

speak to you tomorrow

Me: ok

I watch him drive out, and I walk back I to the house feeling optimistic. Maybe. Just maybe, I will have a shot at happiness.

8

I walk back into the house, and lock all the doors. I may have had a good night, but I am exhausted.

I pass Aya's room, in the passage. I open it and think about how much she loved the R8. If it wasn't for her maybe I would've never met Nathi.

I go to my room, and the moment I hear my door slam behind me, I know that he is here. He switches on the light, and I cringe. He is standing by the door, and I don't have a way out.

I dash towards the bathroom, but he is too fast. His hands are around my waist before I even reach the bathroom door.

I try, getting free, but he is holding onto me.

Him: Did you think I wouldn't find out about your little boyfriend? What did I tell you? I told you that a piece of paper doesn't mean a damn thing

Me: Msizi, please, you're hurting me.

Him: I haven't Evan begun.

He lets go and I turn around to look at him. To plead my case, but I know that look. I know once those veins are out, there is no stopping him.

I feel him slap me, and I fall to the floor. I try crawling back up, but he slaps me and I'm back down. I scream, but this doesn't stop him. It only fuels his anger.

He grabs me by the hair, and unlocks the door. He pulls, and I am following him whether like it or not. I try getting his hands to loosen his grip, but he is stronger

Me: Msizi, pleas... I'm begging you. Don't do this.

I know I'm wasting my time, he doesn't hear me.

He pulls me down the stairs, I trip and fall, but he doesn't care, I try again, to get him to loosen his grip on my hair, but he isn't budging

We get to the lounge, and he lets go. I try running, but the sliding door is locked.

He grabs me by the hair again, and I see him put the radio on. Joyous celebration blasts, and he puts it as loud as he possibly can.

I know why, he wants to make sure no one hears us. He wants to make sure he doesn't hear my pleas.

The problem with living in a golf estate is that the houses aren't as close as townhouses.

I try pushing him away, but he slaps me again. I fall to the ground, and feel blood coming from my nose.

He doesn't stop. He punches, and hits me across the floor. I scream, and cry but it's no use. No one can hear me.

I give up trying to beg. The last blow to my abdomen, I lay on the floor and not bother to try crawling up.

He Kicks me, punches, and slaps me in every way possible. He decides he is done, and he leaves me, on the

floor with my face covered in blood. He looks at me and puts off the radio.

Him: let me find you with that man, and I will kill you. Don't try me Tshidi. I will fucking kill you and every member of your family. Just you try me.

I see him walk out, but I don't move. I want to but I don't. I feel my head pounding, I don't move. I don't cry. I sit and think of how stupid I was for thinking happiness was for me. I should've known better. This is my life. Me sitting here in a pool of blood is what my life is about. I'm just grateful, he didn't kill me.

I try getting up after what seems forever. But my body is so painful, I sit back down. I move my hair out my face and try crawling back upstairs. It takes me forever. But I manage to get to my room. I don't dare look in the mirror. I know the sight I'll see will only make me feel worse.

I take a scissors and I cut my dress open. Most of it is ripped anyway.

I tear the rest off of me, I pull down my duvet from my bed... I

don't try washing if the blood. I don't bother, because there is no way I'm going to be able to stand up. So I try sleeping, here on the floor of my bedroom.

I don't know when I fell asleep, but I am woken up

by someone shaking me awake. I look at his

hollow eyes, and I don't move. I just sit there,

covered in blood.

He lifts me up and puts me on the bed.

I can see he is scared but I don't say anything. I can't say anything.

Him: Matshidiso talk to me. Please. What

happened? I need to get you to the hospital. The

moment he says hospital, I shake my head.

Me: don't. I'll be fine

Him: how can you say that? Have you seen yourself? God I don't even know why I'm talk you about this,

I'm calling the an

ambulance Me:

Please. Nathi.

Don't. I'm fine

He gives me a look that tells me

he doesn't understand Me:

please.

He puts his phone back in his Jeans.

Me: can you help me get up? I need to take a shower

He gets up and goes into my ensuing bathroom, and fills the tub. Then come back. He takes a ribbon from my dressing table, and ties my hair up. I'm sitting there watching him take over.

Him: come.

I lift my hand and he helps me up. I try not to flinch from the pain. My whole body feels like it's been run over by a truck.

He sees me flinch and decides to carry me to the bathroom himself. He tries to undo my bra, but I don't let him.

Him: this isn't the time to be modest Tshidi. Just let me help you. I won't hurt you, I promise. Just let me take care of you. Please

I look in his eyes, and all I see is fear. He's scared for me and that breaks me.

He takes off my bra, and throws it in the basket. He doesn't even look at my breasts.

He takes off my panties. I want to protest, but he gives me a look that says don't mess with me. So I don't. He takes them and throws them in the basket,

then He helps me into the bath. I sit and let the warm water take over the pain.

Him: can you move forward a bit?

I don't question him, I move forward, and he uses the shower head to wash my hair. I think about how strange this is, but I don't move. I let his fingers caress my scalp, as he washes through my weave.

We don't say anything to each other, but I am at ease. Once he is happy that I am clean enough, he helps me out the water, and lets me dry myself. I look at him in the mirror as he dries my hair, he is so deep in thought, and I don't think he notices me staring.

He doesn't dry my hair to perfection, but I'm not complaining. He puts a robe over me once I've lotioned my whole body. He helps me, and I don't once feel uncomfortable. Instead I feel safe around him. I am butt naked in front of him and he hasn't touched me inappropriately.

He leaves me and takes off the dirty sheets and duvets that are covered in blood, and replaces them with clean ones.

I don't say anything. I just sit and watch. He has taken complete control and to be honest I am glad. I don't know how I would've manage without him.

Him: come.

He holds out his hand and I take it. He puts me into bed, then stands and looks at me Him: I'm going to make you something to eat. Don't fall asleep, before I'm back

I nod, and wonder why he's still here? Most men would've run. In fact I don't know how he knew about me being hurt. How he got in.

I switch on the TV. I'm not really concentrating. I just can't bear the silence for much longer.

He comes in, and he is followed by
someone I don't know. I look at him
and he looks away

Him: you didn't want to go to the hospital, so I called a friend. He's a doctor. I just want him to make sure you're ok. That you don't have any internal bleeding.

I nod, and he leaves the room. I want him to stay, but I don't say anything. The doctor introduces himself as Doctor Thapedi.

He helps me stand, and he does a thorough exam. He uses a uv light, to make sure there isn't any internal bleeding.

Him: you should be fine. No
bleeding or cracked bones. He
takes out some pills and gives
them to me

Him: for the pain. I don't want you overdosing on these. You can take one every 8 hours for the first 3 days. After that only when you really need them

I nod, and he goes downstairs.

Nathi comes back with greasy breakfast, I look at him to protest, but he doesn't budge
Him: eat.

It's funny how he doesn't say, please, or anything like that. He just tells me and I oblige
He watches me eat.

I lift one of the sausages on my plate, and bring it towards me
Him: that's for you.

I move it closer and he opens his mouth. I smile for the first time.

I eat until I feel I'm going to explode

Me: I can't stomach anymore
Him: that's not even half your plate.

I give him a puppy eye

look and he gives in. Him:

fine.

He takes the plate downstairs, while I take my meds.

He comes back and sits on
the edge of the bed. Him: I
need to know what
happened

I pretend to yawn. Just so he can drop the subject.

Me: can we talk about it later. I would
really, like to get some sleep, Him: ok, I'll
let you rest.

He stands up to leave, but for the first Time I speak up

Me: Don't go... please

He looks at me conflicted.

I don't say anything else. I just don't want him to go. I

don't want to wake up and he's not here. He takes off his
shoes, and sits next to me.

I put my head on his chest, and I am pulled into a deep sleep.

I know that I am skating on thin ice. But I right now the
thought of being alone in this house is not for me.

I know Msizi wasn't lying about making me pay. But for now I
chose to bottle that up, and pretend.

9

I wake up and I find Nathi looking staring at me. I tense up, when
I remember what happened.

He doesn't move, but I don't have the courage to keep my eyes

on his.

Him; are you going to tell me what happened.

I want to say nothing, but I am stuck in a corner. I have no choice I clumsily sit up.

Me; It was my Ex

Him;
why?

Me; he doesn't need a reason.

Him; so he's done this before ?

I look down at my hands

Him; Tshidi. Has he done this before? Me; yes

Him; have you reported this?

Me; no

Him; and why the hell not?.

I look and see him getting angry Me;

its complicated

Him; I'm lost. How is it complicated? That man just beat the hell out of you and you tell me it's not the

first
time.

Me;
(Sigh)

Him; Tshidi. What aren't you telling me?

Me; Just leave it alone Nathi. I can handle this.

I feel him getting more and more tense. I hear his
breathing faster by the second Him; Handle this?

How. By doing nothing about it

Me; it's not as easy as that ok. This man
will kill me if I go to the police. Him; and if
you don't? He's going to do this to you
again Tshidi

Me; Nathi. Even if he does. There's nothing I can do. This man
is known in his industry. No one would believe me if I told
them that the famous Dr Bhele, is in fact a monster. He has
friends in places. He would make my life a living nightmare.

Him; Tshidi. I won't let this shit go on. You can't ask me to sit
here and let this man do as he pleases with you.

Me; Nathi. Please. Don't get involved. It will only make things
worse.

Him; how can things get any worse

He stands up and I know that he is frustrated.

Me; don't you see Nathi. If I lay charges he'll take Ayanda away
from me. He's tried it before, just to
prove a point. I refuse, to
let that happen Him;

Tshidi

Me; No Nathi. You can't just come here and think you can tell

me what to do. I know this man. I've dealt with him for nearly 10 years. If you get involved he will kill me.

I don't know why, but for the first time since last night, I am able to cry

Me; Nathi. Ayanda is my life. She is my everything. If he takes her from me I won't have a reason to live. Don't you get that? He has threatened my entire family if I step out of line. So I do my best to stay in line. I try not to talk back to him. I try not to make him angry. If this is what it takes for me to keep Aya and for my family to be safe, then so be it

Him; do you have any idea how ridiculous you sound? If you think for a second that I am going to sit by and watch this unfold then you have another thing coming.

He grabs his car keys from the dressing table, and leaves. I let out a sigh, and get back into bed.

I don't know why he's mad at me. it's not like I did this shit to myself. I can't do anything about Msizi. I've tried and that turned out to be a complete disaster. I won't risk losing my child. Not ever.

I try falling asleep again, but this conversation with Nathi has be rubbed up the wrong way. I get up and get dressed.

I haven't spoken to Aya since before the awards, so I decide to call her.

Him; what do

you want I

take a deep

breath,

Me; Hi. Can speak to Aya

Him; She's on the beach

Me; Msizi, I

Him; when are you

coming down? Me; I

Him; I'll send you a ticket for next week.

Me; Msizi, I have to wait for the bruises to heal. I can't be on the beach with Aya covered in bruises

Him; Make a plan to cover them.

He ends the call, and I'm left feeling like the fool that I am.

I sit and decide to work on some more designs. I want to speak to Nathi, but the way he left made feel bad. I wanted him to understand.

I need him to try and see where I'm coming from. But at the same time, I wonder how Nathi became such a big part of my life, in less than a week. I swallow my pride and decide to call him.

Him;

mhmm

Me;

Nathi. I

(silence

)

Me; please come back .

Him; Why? You don't want my help.

You've made that ubantintly clear Me; I

know what I said. Nathi. Its just. Its

difficult. I'm scared. What if Him; do you

trust me?

(Silence)

Him; see. How can I help you when you don't trust me

Me; I do

Nathi. Its just

Him; Just

what

Me; I don't know. I'm just. This whole thing scares me.

Him; (sigh)

I turn around and he is standing at the door. I don't know when he came in, but I know im glad he's here

He comes ad sits next to me.

Me; I'm sorry

Him; stop apologising

Me; I just don't know what to do. I've been living like this for so long. its my kind of normal
Him; I can see that. but it doesn't make it right

Me; (sigh)

Him; let me in Tshidi. Let me take care of you. Let me love you
I look up and I see that he is serious

Me; Love Huh

Him; isn't it obvious? I've loved you from the moment you dissed my car

I giggle, at how life has changed in just over a week

Me; so what now?

Him; well, first you have to

agree to be my girlfriend. I smile

at him.

Me; ok

Him; Is
that a yes?

Me; yes

Him; (pew)

Me; Nathi. I'm not used to this. I've never been in a relationship,
like this. I've spent my entire adult life
with Msizi. This scares me

Him; what you had with him wasn't love Tshidi. Love doesn't
hurt. Let me show you that

Me;

Promise

Him; on

my life

Me; ok

Him; good. Now come. Let's go get you fed

I take his hand and we

walk to the kitchen. Me; ill

make you something

Him; no. you sit. Ill cook. Knowing you you'll offer me a salad.

Me; Its healthy

Him; that's rabbit food.

Me; so what do you plan on cooking

Him; mhmm lets see. How

about ipapa ne nkukuTjo

Modimo what have I got

myself into

Me;

sounds

good Him;

good.

He starts cooking and I sit and I just watch him, as he roams around my kitchen

Him; so I've been thinking

Me; Mhmm

Him; you and Aya should move in with me

I look at him, and he looks at me as though

he just didn't just suggest that Him; I'm

serious. That will make things easier

Me; (clears throat) Nathi I don't think that's a good idea

Him; why not

Me; well. If Msizi finds out, he will

surely take Aya away Him; Leave

him to me

Me; what are you

going to do Him;

don't worry

about it Me;

Nathi

Him; Tshidi, I am going to deal with him. But

before I do that I need you safe Me; but

Him; baby

Me; Baby? Already

Him; (chuckles) you said you trust me. So trust me enough, to let me take care of you Me; are you going to me in the loop? With everything?

Him; yes

Me; ok. I change the locks and add some security features. Ill even let you handle the security upgrades Him; ill think about it Me; what's to think about

Him; I need to get a plan in place first.

He gives me a look that tells me to let it go. I look at him and wonder why the hell I always fall for men who are control freaks. I just hope this control freak won't beat me, because I have just put my life in his hands. And that scares me. More than getting beaten by the monster that I already know

10

I've often dreamt about what it means to have a man who loves you. Like I've seen movies, and I've seen couples walking in malls and in love, and I've dreamt about it my whole life, but I never. Not once thought that I would ever fall in love. I know it's soon to say that, and well, I've never said anything to Nathi, but I think I have fallen hard, and to be honest that scares me.

I look at Nathi while we watch TV and wonder where this is going to lead us. I want so badly to be with him. I want him to protect me and be my prince charming. But life has taught me

that life is certainly not a fairy tale. Relationships are really hard work, and well I'm willing to put in the work, but I worry. What if he decides he doesn't want me or that I'm too messed up to be with him?

And I just don't get how he is still single. Like I know we haven't discussed it but a man like him doesn't just fall from the sky.

Him;

Tshidi

Me;

(silence

)Him;

Tshidi

He waves a hand in front of me and I come out of my day dream Him; what are you thinking about?

Me; nothing. Sorry what were you saying?

Him; Talk to me. I can see

some things bothering you Me;

Nathi

Him; You promised to trust me. so tell

me what's on your mind Lord this man

is going to be the death of me

Me; you haven't told me why you're still single

Him; I wasn't aware I was single. I

thought you and I were a couple I give

him a don't try me look and he smiles

Him; I've been single
for a while now Me;
that doesn't answer
my question

Him; its complicated Tshidi. but just know that you wont be
sharing me with anyone

Me; you're not being fair. You asked me to tell you the truth,
you asked me to trust you. Why can't you
do the same?

I see him let out a sigh, I don't move my eyes from him. I

don't care, he has to be honest with me Him; My wife

passed away about 3 years

I look at him shocked. Shit.

Me; I'm sorry, I didn't mean to pry

Him; Its fine. I knew I'd have to tell you sooner or later

Me; do you want to

talk about it? Him;

what do you want

to know? Me; what

happened?

Him; (sigh) she was involved in a car accident. She died on the
spot

Me; I'm sorry.

Him; Its not your fault. It's no one's fault really. Its just life

I don't know what else to say. I just put my head on his
shoulders.

Him; I loved her. And when I lost her I thought it was the end
of my life. So I put everything I had in my job. I made partner. I

signed contracts with powerful clients. I did everything I could do get over her. I thought I wouldn't. I had no feelings. Don't get me wrong, I had a few woman during the 3 years, but none of them meant anything

I take my head off his shoulders. I don't know why, but the thought of him with anyone but me makes me uncomfortable.

Him; Tshidi, I'm a man

I don't answer. I know he is saying that to try and explain, but I hate it. The thought alone makes me want to curl up and die. Yes I'm Pshyco. That's what it's called.

Me; carry on

Him; Then I met you and Aya and for the first time since Thandiwe's passing I felt my heart skipped a beat. You dissed my car, and I knew

then that you were it for me. I smile a

bit when I think about how

embarrassed I was

Me; that's a lot to learn about someone in one night

Him; I'm a simple guy Tshidi. When I love. I love hard. I'll do anything and everything to make you happy. You won't have to ask yourself about where my loyalties lay. It will be my mission to protect you. but with all of this I will Only ask you to do one thing for me

Me; what?

Him; Let me be the man in this relationship. Me; what

does that entail?

Him; Respect. I need to know that no matter what you will respect me. If we disagree we don't walk out

or raise our voices. We talk. Like two adults. No tantrums. I'm not perfect Tshidi. I make mistakes like anyone, but I need my position as your man to be respected. Me; so that's it. Just respect Him; that's number one. But I also need you to trust me. I know trust is gained over a period of time. But if we can't trust each other, then how will we respect each other? I don't ever want to doubt you. I want to know that no matter what I can trust you. That you will always be there. That I won't ever have to question your loyalties.

Me; I hear you

Him; so we're in this? Together?

Me'; I have no idea what the hell I'm committing myself to.

But yes Ill do my best to make you happy I see a smile creep across his face

Him; well, now that that's out the way, you should take your meds and go to bed

Me; are you staying over?

Him; I'm not letting you out my sight until the security systems are done

Me; which will be when?

Him; I need to make a few calls. I'll let you know Me; ok.

Well I'm going to bed

Him; I'll be up now

Me; ok

I head upstairs and think about everything that he has just said.

It's amazing, how comfortable I am with Nathi. How I could just commit without hesitating. One thing I know is that he is a Zulu man to the fullest. I just hope I can be what he needs, because knowing myself I am a naturally rebellious. I don't do to well with Authority. Well except when I'm being beaten. I stand in front of the mirror and look at myself. My face is bruised, and so is the rest of my body.

I'll just have to use tons of make up to make sure that I cover them up to the best of my ability.

I drift off to sleep without Nathi. I think the pills have something to do with that. I know he said he had a few calls to make, so I didn't want to disturb him

I wake up on Monday morning and Nathi is already downstairs making breakfast. I can smell the bacon all the way up here. I just hope he is cooking for he there is no way I am eating grease 2 days in a row. Never

I get up and make the bed, then go and take a shower. I need to go to the hair dresser and remove this damn weave before I go to my appointment with Rifiloe

I walk down to find Mr pouring the orange juice

Me; Morning

Him; MaMoloi, you're up?

Me; yep.

Him; sit I made breakfast

Me; Looks (clears

throat) nice. Lord

help me

Him; You need to eat if you're going to be working.

Me; so what do you have planned for today?

Him; I'm at the high court till Midday, then I've got lunch with a client, then I'm back at the office for a partners meeting

Me;

sounds

busy

Him; nothing I can't handle. What about you?

Me; first I need to go to the salon. Then I'm meeting with Rifiloe for lunch

Him; Rifiloe?

Me; yes, I met her at the awards. Her husband is that guys you went to have a cigar with. What's his name

again?

Him;

Siyabong

a

Me; yes. That's the one

Him; where are you going for lunch

Me; some place in Bryanston. She sent me the coordinates.

Then I need to go past the studio to approve some of the dresses, and I'm done

Him; ok..... I've hired a body guard for you

I look up at him

choking on my food

Me; sorry. What?

Him; drink some juice

Me; I'm fine (cough).

Him; It's only for now. Once I've sorted This Msizi guy. We can get back to normal

Me; But Nathi, a body guard? That doesn't make sense. Its not like Msizi is going to attack me in public
Him; I'm not taking any chances.

I look at him defeated. I don't like this one bit, but it's not like I have much of a choice. I said I would trust him.

Me; fine

Him; The security team will be coming, to install a new alarm system, and cameras
Me; huh

Him; just the

basics
Me; Is

that

necessary

Him; yes.

Very

Me; you haven't exactly told me what your plan is

Him; for now security features. Once that's done ill know how to deal with Msizi, all that's important

now is that you are safe

I look at my watch and I know I

am going to be late
Me; let me

wash these, and get going

Him; ill

handle it

Me; you

sure

Him; Yep. Come. Let me introduce you to your bodyguard

I walk out and I'm introduced to a man who is probably 3 times my size. I look at Nathi and the beast in front of me.

Nathi gives me an
encouraging smile
Him; Its for a little
while
Me; fine

Him; I've also installed a tracker on your car. Just for extreme
purposes

Breathe Tshidi. Breath. I look at my watch and I'm honestly too
late to even bother arguing.

He gives me a kiss on the cheek, and I get in my car. I know he
said he needs me to trust him, but all of this is just too much.
Now he has a tracker on my car. How am I supposed to go on
with my daily things if I've the rock following me everywhere,
and gadgets all over my house and car? For some reason I feel
that this is only the beginning. There is obviously way more to
this man that meets the eye. That I know for certain.

11

I arrive at the salon, and I decide to do my nails and my toes at
the same time. If I'm going to have a man around me 24/7 I
should at least look presentable. So I opt for a 20inch Brazilian
weave and simple French on both nails and toes.

By the time I walk out, I feel like a new person. I may still be
bruised, but my heart is at least at a better place.

I leave the salon with Mr Rock following, and head to
Bryanston. I must admit Mr Rock isn't so bad. He keeps his
distance and isn't all in my face. I think it gives me a sense of
comfort to know that he is around. Just in case Msizi decides
to do something stupid.

I arrive in Bryanston and find the restaurant empty. Except for Rifiloe who is sitting at a table that's at the very back.

She stands when she sees me approaching. I give a hug, and we sit

Her; I'm so glad you agreed to lunch. I needed to get out the house.

Me; you and I both

Her; what's got you going crazy?

Me; it's a long story. Anyway how have you been?

I change the subject almost immediately, because well, I don't know her that well, and I can't be sharing Nathi's craziness with a complete stranger. Especially if he's doing business with her husband

Her; I've been well. Just obsessing over some of the designs you showed me
Me; I'm glad to hear that.

Her; I'm starving. Shall we order?

Me; sure

I order a salad and a glass of still water. That's all I can stomach since Nathi is on a mission to make me fat

Her; so how's Nathi? I haven't seen him out in a while, since the night of the awards
Me; He's fine.

Her; so are you guys officially a couple?
Me;

yes. Officially for a bout
a few hours

Her; That's nice. I know Siya had said he was single for a while

Me; yah. We met last week. And well officially

started "dating" from last night Her; wow,

that's really new

Me; it is, but for some reason I feel

like I've known him forever. Her; that's

all good, until he starts driving you

insane

I see her giggle.

Her; You know when Siya and first met, he was never home. He

travelled a lot, but now that he's home

all the time, it drives me even more crazy

Me; (chuckles) Yah men are

special humans shame Her; I

see he got you a bodyguard

Me; yah. Long story

Her; you don't even need to tell me. I know. I've lived it

Me; how do you deal with it

Her; I threw tantrums, we fought, nearly divorced twice, but

in the end I just let him do as he pleases. No use fighting him.

Why do you think the restaurant is empty?

Me; No No ways

Her; Yah, he booked the whole restaurant for our lunch. He says

it's for my own good. I don't even

bother fighting it anymore

Me; I just think this is all just really new to me. Nathi and I

haven't even been together for 24hours, and already I have a

bodyguard, He's upgrading my security system, and has a

flipping tracker on my car Her; can I give you some advice?

Me; please.

Her; Siyabonga, Nkosinathi, Lehlohonolo all these men in power are crazy. All of them. But they love us. They will do anything to keep us happy. Sometimes they screw up, but it's up to us to be the bigger person. Nkosinathi has introduced you to his world. He is a powerful business man, that title comes with enemies, and those enemies know that we are the weakness. So for them it's a matter of keeping us safe. You know all the ladies you met at the after party?

Me; Yah

Her; we are all connected through our partners. All of us. We all live this life. It's not easy, it's not always fun, but we help each other through it.

Me; so you're the crazy husbands wives club

Her; (chuckles)

something like that

Me; this is crazy

Her; give it time. Soon you won't even notice

Me; how did you meet the ladies

Her; Well, it's a long story, but when Siya took up his latest Job, I met Dourine, who is Luzuko's wife. Then she introduced me to Busisiwe who is Mthunzi's wife and I introduced them to Boniswa. She is

Lehlohonolo's wife. Together we make sure that we support each other. Because believe me once things go crazy, all we'll have is each other

Me; when things go crazy? How?

Her; is something you are going to have to discuss with Nathi, it's not as hectic as it sounds. Just trust

him. Everything else will

work itself out. Me;

thanks. I guess

Her; My pleasure. Now enough about these men. I need a favour from you
Me; anything
Her; I need you to help me get my grove back. I'm finally getting back into the business world. I need an entire new wardrobe. All my old stuff is boring
Me; I can do that. What's the time line?
Her; I start on the 1st of august
Me; mhmhm that's a bit tight. But I'll make it happen. Maybe come around to the studio tomorrow so I can do some measurements.
Then I can start sketching
Her;
you are the best

I must admit I enjoyed my lunch with Rifiloe. There are some things that she said that make me nervous, but I've decided ill discuss them with Nathi. But at least I know that I am not alone in this.

I spend the rest of my day working at the studio. I became so busy, I didn't even have time to talk to Nathi, and to be honest I missed him. We were in such a bubble this whole time, and now being separated from him for a whole day seems weird.

I finish my day and decide to go home to cook dinner for my Muntuza. I'm so used to it just being me and Aya. She usually eats whatever I make, but Mr Khumalo on the other hand is the complete opposite, so decide to call him to find out he wants to eat

Him; MaMoloi

Me; are you honestly going to call me by my clan name?
Him; most def.

Me; ok, well in that case Khumalo.

What do you want for dinner? Him; are you up to cooking? You should be resting

Me; Nathi, I'm fine. I haven't needed my pills for pain the whole day. I can manage dinner

Him; are you sure?

Me; 100%

Him; in that case I'll eat anything. As long as it's not rabbit food

Me; chuckles

Him; I'm serious. I know you were thinking of some greens and things like that. Me; Ok. I'll see what I can do

Him; thanks baby. I need to go, I'm actually in meeting Me;

Nathi, you should've told me.

Him; You call I answer. Doesn't matter where I am. Me; Thank

you

Him; I'll see you later

I end the call feel like a teenage girl all over again. Nathi may be overly protective, but day by day I keep falling in love and well even though he is hectic with this whole security thing, but I guess I just need to be trust him.

I get home and start preparing dinner. I decide to make pap with beef stew and I make chakalaka on the side and a Greek salad for me.

Once I'm done, I go upstairs to take a shower. I look at my bruises and I'm thankful that they are starting to fade. I hope by

the end of the week I will have my body back.

Nathi arrives just as I come out the shower. I'm wrapped in just a towel, and for some reason I feel a bit self-conscious

Him: your kitchen smells amazing

Me: I'll dish up for you as soon as I get dressed

He's standing in front of me and has a

mischievous look in his eyes. Him: do you

know what I just realised?

Me: what?

Him: That I've

never kissed you?!

blush

Me: well, who's to blame?

Him: certainly not you

Me: what are you waiting for then?

He gently pulls me closer and his lips are on mine. I don't know

what it is, but my body is doing things I didn't know we're

possible. I feel like something is waking up inside me. his lips

are warm and sweet and I know that it's going to take a miracle

for me to stop myself from jumping his bones

He pulls away, leaving me wanting more. Much more

Him: you better get dressed

before this goes any further Me:

(giggles)

Him: I'll be downstairs

if you need me Me: ok

He heads downstairs, and I have to take a moment to gather

myself. In fact I thinking need to go to church tomorrow. I know

it's only midweek, but Lord knows I need forgiveness for the

things I want that man to do to me.

I stand up and get dressed in my PJ's and a gown that's thick

enough to stand between me and the temptation downstairs.

I walk down and find Nathi on his laptop.

I dish up for us both. Me minus the pap. Then I take the food through to the dining room. Me: babe your dinner is ready

Him: coming

He puts his laptop to the side, and comes to join me

Me: do you want me to bring you something to wash your hands? Him: no babe, I'll wash them in the sink

Phew, for a minute I thought he would want me to kneel, when giving him his food. You never now with this one

He goes to wash his hands and comes back. We sit

down and he starts digging into his food Me; (clears throat)

He looks up at me questionably

Me: we need to say Grace

Him: grace?

Me: yes what if you

choke on that food Him:

but babe

Me: just close your eyes. I'll pray

He does as told and smiles

when I say Amen Him: can

I eat now

Me: yes.

He jumps in with a

grin on his face Me:

what are you smiling

about?

Him: you and my mom are

going to get along Me: and

how do you know that

Him: She's a church girl. Like you

Me: well, in that case we are

definitely going to get along Him:

so how was lunch with Rifiloe?

Me:

interesti

ng Him:

do tell

Me: well, she said a lot of things that made sense.

But some things weren't quite clear Him: what

things?

Me: she went on about how powerful you are and how I need to accept the security thing, because you have a lot of enemies,

and they'll look at me as your weakness. Something like that
Him: She's right you know. I've put away a lot of not so nice people in my career.

Me: I feel like you're speaking in riddles. Rifiloe said you and her husband are connected, she made it sound like there is more to you. I don't know maybe I'm being paranoid

Him: so your whole lunch was to talk about us

Me; don't flatter yourself. I just feel that there is more to you and I was hoping you would clear out what I was thinking

Him: I've known Siyabonga for a while. We worked in the same institution, but he left for a while and now he's back. Well sort of back, and now we are going to be working closely together Me: institution?

I thought you were a partner in a law firm

Him: why do I feel like I'm

being interrogated? Me:

because you are also talking

in riddles Him: baby

Me: Khumalo

Him: you're not going to leave this alone are you?

Me: no. You said I must trust you. I need to know exactly who you are. I can't be comfortable knowing that a piece of the puzzle is missing

Him: ok. Ok can we have dinner

first, before we discuss this Me : eat up

He smiles, and shakes his head. I don't know how and why, but for some reason, I feel I can talk to him without fearing that he will stand up and slap me. For once I can be be, and that alone makes me sure that I can stand with him through just about anything.

Me: I'm going to wash these. Then we can talk

Him: No. you cooked. I'll wash

Me: ok

He stands up and goes to wash the dishes, while I sit and watch some TV. Once he's done he sits next to me.

Him: so what do you

want to know? Me:

first, I need to get

comfortable

I move his hands, and lay back on his thighs. This way I can be comfortable and still look in his eye

Me: before you start. I don't want you to feel like I'm interrogating you. It's just that I want to know what I'm getting myself into. I want to be able to trust you without a doubt, and for me to do that, I would need you to tell me everything. I don't want any surprises along the way

Him: ok. But I need you to promise on your life that what I'm about to tell you will stay between us. I cannot stress enough, how confidential this is.

Me: I promise

Him: ok. I met Siyabong about 13 years ago. We both went to the same varsity. He was in business, I was in law. After getting our qualifications, I started working for a law firm, while he went off and did some police training.

A year or so later I went home to KZN and he was there as well. We hung out and somehow we started talking about work. He told me he needed recruits for a new government Ops team.

At first I thought he was joking, but then I found out he was serious. He wanted the team to not just be agents, but we would have to be professionals with careers.

It took some convincing and I joined.

I'm looking at this man, and I think that any minute he is going to tell me he is joking, but no such luck he is serious.

Him: so after my training was complete. My mission was to start a law firm. I had to practice law, and make a successful business out of it. Which I did. But I was also an agent. I didn't go into the field. But I make sure that the people that the team capture, never see the light of day again.

He's looking at me in the eye, and to be honest I am at a loss for words. This all just seems so farfetched, and yet it makes sense.

Me: so that's why you were able to get the security features on the house done so quickly? Him: yes

Me: am I going to have to bail you out of jail any time soon?

He gives me a cocky smile.

Him: baby, jail is for criminals. I am not a criminal. I put criminals away
Me: Are Aya and I ever going to be in danger

He gives me a confusing look

Him: Tshidi, I would kill anyone and everyone who ever considered hurting you or Aya.
Me: don't say things like that.

Him; I'm serious. I know I said I would lighten up on security once this thing with your ex is sorted, but after my meeting today I'm not so sure

Me; why? What's happened?

Him; I can't get into the details. But something big is going to happen and I need to know that you are in

Despite the shock of what he has just told me. I know for a fact that there is no way I could let him go.

I've already become way too attached

Me; I've already told you that I'm in. It's just a shock to find out what you do

Him; There is more. But that is for another day.

Me; as long as there are no secrets between us. I'm good

Him; but I need you to know that there are things about my Job that I won't be able to share with you. Some of them involve other agents and it wouldn't be fair for me to share that information with you
Me; I think I can live with that

Him; thank you

Me; one more thing. This little wives club that's going on. Do I have to be a part of that?
Him; why do you ask?

Me; well, I'm not exactly married to you. And I just feel weird if I'm going to be around them

Him; (chuckles)

Me; don't laugh

Him; then I guess we better hurry up and get married so you can join the club Me; not funny

Him; ok. In all seriousness. I would like you to get to know the ladies. With what was discussed today at the meeting. Me and the guys are going to be working closely together. Which means you will be spending a lot of time with their wives

Me; oh God

Him; It won't be too bad. Just get to know them. Please. For me Me; I'll try.

But incise you haven't noticed I'm a loner.

Him; I know that, but I think its time you start getting out more.

Me; speaking of getting out. I'm going to church tomorrow night. Are you going to join me? Him; church?

Me; yes Nathi. I said Church Him; what time?

Me; 6pm

Him; Sorry babe. But I've got a meeting with the guys at 5pm, which will probably run over Me; no problem.

But I can't exactly take Mr Rock with me

Him; huh. Mr Rock?

Me; the body guard

Him; His name is tools. And yes even at church he goes with you Me; what kind

of a name is tools?

Him; long story.

Me; but Nathi, I can't take him to church. What if my parents are there? How am I going to explain his presence?

Him; Just tell them that you boyfriend insists on it after what your ex did

Me; they don't know about what Msizi did

Him; and why not

Me; because it's not something I talk about. Not even to my family

Him; why

Me; long story.

Him; we will need to talk about that sooner or later

Me; yes. I know, but for now I would much rather have you kissing me Him; is that so

Me; mhmm

Him; before that we need to speak about something else Me; what

Him; sex

I take my hands

cover my eyes.

Him; (chuckles)

Oh Lord this is the one conversation I don't want to discuss. Not now or ever

He takes my hands off my face

Him; don't

do that.

Me; ok. I'm

listening

He is smiling and it's annoying me. He knows I am uncomfortable, and now instead of talking he is laughing with those stupid dimples.

Me; if you don't say what you want to

say, I'm going to go to bed This crazy

thing doesn't say anything. He just

keeps laughing

Me; Nathi I swear.

Him; ok, ok. I'm sorry

Me; what is so funny

Him; you are cute when you get blush. You should see how red your face is

Me; Nathi

Him; Ok. Ok. I just want to know when it's going to happen

Me; what

Him; baby I'm a man. And I am dying here

Lord this is awkward

Me; well we might have a slight problem with regards to that Him; what problem?

Me; well, I gave my life to God about 2 years ago. And I vowed to be celibate till I am married I cover my face again. I just want this conversation to end already. Its s damn awkward

Him; are you serious

I don't answer. I just nod, because I honestly don't know what to say. It's the truth

Him; oh God help me.

Me; I'm sorry

Him; don't be I just. Well I. I don't know what to say

Me; is this going to be a deal breaker

He takes my hands off my eyes and smiles. This time a warm smile.

Him; why would you think that? I mean. It's not going to be easy to behave. But I love you and I respect your vow

I look at him and I feel relieved that at least he understands where I'm coming from. I know for a fact that most men would be running for the hills. But here he is looking at me like I'm a rare diamond, even after I just dropped a bomb on him. It's in this moment that I know that this is the man that I've been waiting for. Maybe a happily ever after is in my destiny after all.

12

Geez this damn phone

Me; Nathi. Answer

your phone Him;

Mhmm

Me; your phone. Answer it

He totally ignores it, and instead moves me closer to him and cuddles me.

Just when I'm falling asleep this flipping phone goes off again. I mean who on this earth calls someone at 3am.

Me; Nathi, I'm going to kill you and your phone

Him; Iphendule and tell whoever

it is to leave me alone I just sigh,

and I end up answering

Me; Nathi's phone hell Hello

Him; Hi Mam. It's Nails. Can I speak to Nkosinathi?

Me; I'm sorry but he isn't taking any calls at the moment. Him; Mam. Its rather urgent. Please you have to wake him

I shake Nathi gently awake

Me; Nathi. Its nails 'he says its urgent

Nathi sits up as though he has just remembered something. He takes the phone from me and stand up

Him; mhmm when? mhmm ok ? you know what to do?

He doesn't say goodbye. He just ends the call there and there.
He comes back to bed and cuddles me

Me; is
everything
ok Him;
mhmm
sleep

I can sense he is a bit tense, but I am way too tired to even ask.
If he wants to speak, he knows where to find me

Nothing in this world beats waking up in the arms of the man that you love. Honestly it just makes you as a woman feel so secure, until I feel something pricking me from behind. I see him smile, and I know that is my cue to get the hell out of this bed.

I take a shower, and change into my gym wear. I make sure to get dressed in the closet, because the last thing I need is to have Nathi looking at me like I'm a piece of meat.

I dash down stairs while he is in the shower to make myself a smoothie and make him his greasy breakfast

He comes down just as

I finished. Him; You

Madam, ran away

from me.

He says this as he kisses me on the on the neck from the back .
Lord help me

Him; I need you to
do me a favour Me;

Mhmm

Him; I need you to
stay home today Me;

mhmm, why

Him; because I need to sort out something today, and I need to
make sure you are ok

Gosh, I want to tell him to stop so I can question him. But
having his lips on my neck feels too good. He turns me around
and kisses my lips. I give in, I can't help it. I put my arms
around his neck. He picks me up and takes me to the couch
He sits and I am in his lap. I feel his hands move from my back
to my bum. Then out of nowhere I hear someone clear his
throat.

I look up and I find Tools at the door. I look at Nathi and he
looks irritated, while me on the other hand, I am just plain
embarrassed.

Tools disappears, and I get off of Nathi

Him; I'm sorry about that

Me; I think it's a good thing

he came when he did Him;

Speak for yourself.

He gets up and goes to tools, and I am left on the couch
feeling defeated. How the hell are we going to stay celibate
while he stays here? I know that Tools interrupting us was

God's way of helping me out. But if Nathi continues staying here, I cant guarantee that I will be able to stick to this.

He comes back and sits next to me.

Him; I'm sorry. I know I said I would respect your commitment to
Celibacy. I should've never let it get
that far

Me; Its not your fault. I should know better

Him; So I'm forgiven?

I give him a kiss on the cheek and he smiles

Me; yes. You're forgiven

Him; thanks

Me; so tell me why I need

to stay in doors? Him;

Your ex is back in town

The minute he says that I feel

shivers go down my spine Me;

when did he get back

Him; this

morning

Me;

(silence)

Him; I need your

permission to handle him

Me; what does handle

him mean

Him; I'll just have a word with him. Man to Man.

Me; Nathi, I

Him; trust me. All I am going to do is talk.

Me; and if that doesn't work

Him; Then I serve him with a protection order

Me; I don't think that that is going to work. He will

Him; It will work. I promise

Me; can you give me a chance to get Aya back first? I can't risk him using her as leverage
Him; I'll have her home by tonight

Me; Nathi. Don't you think you need to let me talk to him first?
Him; I don't want you talking to him. I will handle everything. Just promise me you will stay home.

Me; fine

Him; I'll see you tonight

Me; ok. Keep me updated

He stands to up to leave, but then I remember that I'm supposed to go to church

Me; before you go, I need to go church tonight. I didn't get to go on Sunday. I really would like to go today

Him; Ok. Here. My car is bullet proof. I'll take yours

Me; ok

I take his keys from him and he gives me a kiss on the cheek
Him; I love you

Me; I love you too

I see him smile, and I know it's because it's my first time saying it to him.

Him; do

you really

Me; yes

Him; You've just made my day.

Now I don't want to go Me; then

don't

Him; I have to. I've got tons of

things that I need to handle Me; so

I'll see you tonight

Him; ill come by and drop Aya off, then I'll go back to my place.

Give you time with Aya.

Me; ok

I know what he saying is making sense, but I am going to miss him. I've gotten so used to having him here.

He gives another kiss, and he's off into the world while I sit here. So much for my going to the gym Since I can't leave, I decide to do some cleaning. And to do the washing.

Once done, I call the studio and inform them of Rifiloe's appointment for measurements.

I may not be able to leave the house, but that won't stop me from making my coins. Once I've spoken to sis May, I start working on some of final designs for the opening of my boutique.

At times I get so drawn into my work that I don't even realise how much time has passed. And for the second time today tools is here and I didn't even realise.

I blush at how embarresed I am

Him; sorry mam. I didn't mean to scare you

Me; its fine tools. What

can I do for you? Him;
Mam. I have to get you
out of here Me; why.

Whats going on

Him; I'm sorry. I'm just
following orders Me;
who's orders.

Him; No time to explain. Please can I
ask you to come with me? Me; ok.

I pack my sketch pad and pencils and my phone. And get in the
car.

I try calling Nathi, but he doesn't answer. I am honestly very
uncomfortable at the moment.

I take out Nathi's keys to drive, but tools decided he is driving. I
hand the keys over, and sit at the back.

Me; tools, I have been trying to call Nathi. He isn't answering. Do
you know if he's ok

Him; He's fine mam. Just sorting something out. He has asked
me to take you to his house.

Me; ok

We arrive at a house, which I'm guessing is Nathi's house. From
the moment the door is opened I am

whisked inside. All I see is men with guns, and to

be honest that scares me shitless. I get inside, and

tools tells me to make myself comfortable, and

leaves.

I stand in this flipping huge house, and I don't know what to do. I

know Nathi is wealthy, but this. This is crazy.

I try calling again, but he doesn't answer. Instead he sends me an sms saying " I'll see you in a couple of hours. I'm sorry about what happened. Ill explain when I get to my place. Make yourself at home""

I read his message, and decide to let him be. I'm sure he has a perfectly good explanation as to what is happening. I said I would trust him, but for some reason I feel fidgety, like something bad is about to happen. I know this is the time for me to pray. So I go in search for a bedroom. I need some sort of privacy. The ground floor where I am doesn't have a bedroom, so I go up one floor and go into the very first bedroom I find. I shut the door behind me and for the every first time since being taken from my house, I let out a sigh

Me; lord. I come into your presence, I am in need of you. I am in need of your spirit. I don't know what is going on. I don't know what satan has in store for me, but I can feel that he is around. Please protect me. Protect Aya and protect Nathi. I know you brought Nathi into my life for a reason. Please help me to trust him. Help me to be humble. I am scared. None of this makes sense. But I trust you. I know that despite everything, you are a faithful God. You are merciful, you are faithful. Lord show yourself in my situation. Open the flood gates of heaven with you spirit and prepare me for what's to come. I put it all in your hands. Let your will be done. In the name of the Father, The Son and the Holy Spirit. In Jesus name. Amen

I let out a sigh, and I wipe away a tear. All I need now is to go downstairs and wait for Nathi. I get downstairs and Nathi walks in. He is sweating. His eyes a bloodshot red.

He doesn't say anything. He walks to the cabinet and takes out a bottle of scotch. He pours it neat into

the glass and knocks it back.

I want to ask him what's happening, but I don't know if that's a good idea. I've never dealt with him like this. Then I remember we've only been dating for a week.

I take a deep breath and walk over to him, and put my hands around him from the back

He doesn't move, and neither do I. we just stand in this horrible silence. But I don't know what to do. I don't know if I should give him space.

Me; Nathi.

Whats going on

Him; (silence)

Me; Nathi

He turns around
and looks at me I lift
my hand up to his
face.

Me; talk

to me

Him; I

lost him

Me; huh

Him; Msizi. I met with him and we spoke. He left and we lost him. My team was to make sure they don't lose him. But lost him

Me; ok. I'm sure we

will find him Him;

There's more

Me; what

Him; when I realised that we lost him. I got my guys in Durban to get Aya. I was going to fly there and bring her home. But she wasn't there

I take my phone from my pocket. I need to call Msizi.

His phone rings, but he doesn't answer. I try Aya's phone, but it goes straight to voicemail. Now this is when I start to panic.

This is my child we are talking about

I dial Msizi again and he answers.

Him; what do you want

Me; Msizi. Hi. Can I speak to Aya

Him; (laughing) you think I am going to let you speak to my daughter after what you did. Me; Msizi. Please.

I just want to be sure that she is ok

Him; she's fine. You know I would never let anything hurt her. But you on the other hand will never set your eyes on her again.

Me; Msizi, please. I'm sorry. Ill do anything, please don't take her from me. I'm begging you

Him; I warned you. I told you to stay away from that Fucker, but no you didn't listen. So now I am coming after you. I am going to make you pay for what he did today.

The line goes dead.

I try calling back but the number has been disconnected

I start feeling wheezy. I sit down. I need to keep telling myself to breath.

Nathi holds me, but I don't want him to. I want him as far away from me as possible.

Me; I need to go

Him; Tshidi. I know this looks bad. But I promise you. I will find her. Me; Nathi.

Please. I need to go.

Him; Tshidi. I am going to fix this. I will bring her home. I just

need you to trust me.

I stand up. I'm really getting annoyed. Infact I am pissed to the highest level

Me; Nathi. Listen to me and listen carefully. This is my child. That monster will make sure I never see her again. I have to go. I need to find him, even if it means he kills me. I don't care. It's a chance I am willing to take

He stands up and takes my hands in his. Him;

Tshidi. look at me I want to look up, but I don't. I have tears strolling down my face. He makes me look at him

Him; I need you to trust me. I am going to find her. I will make sure of that. I just need you to stay calm.

I don't answer him. I just sit huddled up on the couch. Even if I wanted to leave, Nathi would stop me. so what choice do I have? He has made me dependant on him. i just pray to God that I didn't make a mistake, because if he doesn't find her, I know for a fact that that is going to destroy me.

13

We sit in complete silence, as I wonder where my child is and what she is doing. I know Msizi won't hurt her, but I know he will do everything and anything to keep her away from me and that scares me because I have no idea what he will tell her when she asks about where I am. The last thing I want is for her to think that abandoned her for a man.

Nathi hasn't left my side. At first I didn't want him to even touch me, but after crying my lungs out, he held me, and kept assuring me that he had everything under control. Which I didn't understand at all since he was here with me and not looking for her

I hear a sms come through to his phone. I look at him

Him: baby. I need to ask you something

Me: I'm listening

Him: look at me

I look up and I see only a 5th of
the man I fell in love with
Him: I'm
going to ask you this once

Me: ok

Him: I am going to find Aya. But I need to know
what extent I need to take to find her
Me: Nathi.

Just ask me what you need to ask me

Him: I want to know if I can kill him. If it comes to that, I

need to know that you won't hate me for it
I look up at him

shocked

Him: you wanted me to get to the point

I don't answer. I know the answer to that question is yes. But what kind of Christian would I be if I ordered him to kill my ex. But at the same time, I want my child.

Me: can't you lock him up or something

Him: he isn't exactly the kind of guy you just lock up. He has connections Tshidi.

Me: Nathi. I don't care. All I want now is my child back. That's it. Do everything in your power to bring her home

Him: ok

He looks at me with something in his eye. I don't know what it is, but I know that nothing is going to stop him from bringing Aya home.

Him: come. You need to eat

Me: I don't think I can stomach anything right now

Him: baby

His phone rings

Him: Nails. Where. Hmmm ok. Meet out in 5

I'm looking at him as he talks to nails, and I pray

to God that this is good news. He wraps up his

call, and looks at me

Him: come

He leads me upstairs to what I believe is the main bedroom. He opens the closet and shows me where the safe is

Him: I'm going away. I'm not sure how long I'm going to be away for, but I know it won't be too long.

Me: where are you going? Him:

Durban

Me: have you found her

Him: yes. But it's complicated Me: how.

Him: no time to explain. But I'm going to bring her home. I promise I nod at him

Him: there's money in here in case you need anything. Please don't use your card. And I need you to stay in the house. If you need something, the guards will get it.

Me: I've got to go.

Him: eat something. I'll call you.

With that he gives me a kiss and leaves. I stand in the room with a closet full of money, and I ask myself what I got myself into by being with this man.

I close the safe, and flop back on the bed. At least I know that

he is making good on his promise. That alone I have to be grateful for.

I'm hungry. I haven't eaten since morning, and now it's after 7pm.

I head downstairs and make myself a sandwich. While trying to watch TV. Nathi must've landed but he hasn't called.

I reach for my phone, and instead of dialling Nathi, I open up my bible app. I need comfort and I know that the only way I'm going to get it, is by reading the word.

I wake up and find myself still on the couch. I check my phone and I have no messages, or missed calls from Nathi.

I look at the time and somehow slept through the night. I try calling him, but he doesn't answer.

I noticed a missed call from an unknown number, so I call it back in case he tried calling from a number I don't know.

The phone rings and the monster answers

Him: I hope for your sake you know what you what you gave started. You may think that you have won, but rest assured, I am going to make you pay for this. When you least expect it Tshidi. I will kill you

He hangs up, and despite his threat, i smile. I know if he's threatening me, it's because Nathi has Aya.

I smile. And send him a message simply saying thank you.

Now that I know that Aya is safe, I head upstairs and for the first time, I admire his house. It's very well put together. Nicely furnished. From the kitchen, all the way to the bedrooms. Everything is where it needs to be. Nothing is out of place. I realise then that this is the house that he spent with his wife.

All of a sudden I start feeling like I shouldn't be here. I feel like I'm intruding. This is where he made love to her. Where they shared memories. Where she cooked and took care of him. And here I am now in the same house. I know I'm insecure. Hell I am probably going to want to kill any woman who even looks his way. I love him. And the thought that he had another woman who was good enough for him to marry.

Makes me feel like I am
competing with a ghost. Lord
help

No use thinking about it. I put the thought aside, and get in the shower. I have no choice but to use his products. Which smell way better on him than they do on me.

I come out the shower with a towel wrapped around me. My bruises are gone. I look at myself in the mirror, and wonder what this man sees in me. I'm not exactly Beyoncé. I am your average size 32 girl. Only problem is my butt. I don't do squats, I am just gifted, but that gift also comes with stretch marks. Not to mention the ones on my lower abdomen, which were gifted upon me during my pregnancy.

Nathi deserves a perfect girl. A girl that has a perfect body, that doesn't have stretch marks everywhere. I just don't understand what he sees in me.

I use his lotion, then grab one of his robes. While I put my clothes in the washing machine. I don't even have clean underwear, and that isn't cool. Not one bit. I'm busy thinking about what I'm going to make for breakfast, when I hear the kitchen door open.

Nathi walks in with Aya in his arms. She's sleeping so peacefully, I look up at him and I see that he is exhausted.

I don't realise that I'm crying, until he says
Him: sshhhh, she's home. She's safe. We just gave her something to sleep I nod as I wipe away my tears.

Him: I'm going to put her to bed.

He walks up, and I follow. He puts

Aya down so delicately. Him; come.

We need to let her rest.

I don't want to move. I don't want her out of my sight, but he's right. It's best I let her rest

I slip my hand into his as we walk to his room. He has kept his promise. He bought my baby back, and now it's my turn to take care of him.

I close the door behind us. He takes off his shirt. I want to look away, but I can't. I hadn't really realised

just how ripped he was

Him; I am starting to feel like a piece of meat

I didn't realise I was staring

Him; like what you see?

I don't say anything. I just nod

Him; well you can't have this. Not till I've put a ring on it

He gives me a cocky smile. I roll my eyes and walk closer to him

Me; thank you

Him; do you

trust me now

Me; sigh. I'm

getting there

Him; well, that's better

than yesterday

Me; you talk too much. Kiss me

Him; mhmm I'm tempted. But right now you are in my robe, and I am pretty sure you have nothing

underneath it. If I come any closer, I might not be able to stop myself from taking it off

Me; there's not much to see. I'm not exactly Halley Berry

Him; you forget that I have seen you. I've seen you bruised. I have bathed you. and even then I loved you.

Me; I know. I just don't get why. I've bought you nothing but problems.

Him; we are not going to discuss this. I love you. I love the way you smile. I love how you look at me with

those puppy eyes. I love the stretch marks on your stomach.

Those are proof of Aya's life.

At this point he is standing right in front of

me. Our faces are inches apart Him; ohh and
I love this

He spans my butt. And I wince a bit.

Him; but do you know what I love
more than everything? Me; what

Him; You. Not your body. But you. Your core. That is what I am
in love with

His lips are on mine, before I can even catch my breath. I
literally feel like I have fireworks are going off in my stomach.

He pulls away just as things get tense

Him; now go away I need to take a cold shower

I look at his pants and blush. Lord help me. I have no idea how I
am going to be able to keep this up.

Me; I'll go make you something to eat.

I walk down the stairs excitedly. My baby is back. My Man loves
me, what more do I need in life.

I'm only halfway down the stairs, when I see her. Sitting in the
lounge

She looks up, and I see the bruise around her eye

Me: What are you doing here?

Her: Tshidi. I'm sorry. I know that you hate me. And I know I was stupid but please. I can't go back to him. He'll kill me.

Please

I turn around and go back the bedroom. Nathi is just coming out the shower. He has a towel wrapped around his waist

Him; what?

Me; what is she doing here?

Him; oh she said she wants to talk to you

Me; and you didn't think to ask if I want to see her

Him; I just thought

Me: take her back. Take her back to

where ever you found her Him: Tshidi

Me: Is this why you didn't answer you phone?

You were talking to that tramp Him: whoow,

wait a minute. Why would you insinuate

something like that? Me: Nathi. I want her out.

Either she leaves or I do

I look at him, and I see that he is getting pissed. But right now I don't care. He had no right. No right at all to bring her here. I don't want to see her. Not now, not ever. She betrayed me in the worst way possible

Him: Tshidi, I haven't slept. I am exhausted. I didn't bring her here to here to upset you. She asked to see you. I thought you could talk and then she would be on her way.

Me: I don't care. I want that witch out of here

He leaves me and goes to the closet to get dressed. Then he's

downstairs. I don't follow. I'm angry. Hell
im pissed. Just the thought of her alone with
him makes me want to go crazy. He comes
back and finds me pacing the room

Him: she's gone

I walk out, and go to Aya's room, I sit and watch Aya, asleep.
She looks so peaceful, innocent. I sometimes wish I was the
same. That I didn't just live through the hell that I had gone
through for the past 24 hours.

Nathi walks in and he's holding his brief case

Him: I'll see you later.

I walk out with him but make sure not to close the door, because
I know that Aya hates having the door closed when she sleeps

Me: Nathi. Wait.

Him: I'm going to be late. We'll talk later.

He comes closer and gives me kiss. Then he's gone

I stand in the passage feeling like a complete idiot. I have no idea why I let my insecurities get the better of me. I'm pretty sure he was trying to be helpful, and instead of hearing him out, I freaked out. Why can't I just be normal? Now he must think I'm a psycho. Which I know I am, but he's not supposed to know that till he's in too deep.

14

Aya has been asleep for hours, I've spent my day in the kitchen. This is the only way I will be able to keep myself from calling and bothering Nathi, and anyway, I doubt he would want to hear from me. Not after the way I spoke to him.

I hear Aya calling for me from one of the rooms upstairs. I stop buttering the cupcakes. Me; Rise and shine pumpkin
Her; Mommy where are we

Me; I don't even get a kiss?

Her; I missed you

Me; I missed you too. Now come

here and kiss your mother She

jumps on me and I pick her up

Me; why don't you take a bath. I've made cupcakes

Her; ok

I run a bath for her, then go back downstairs to grab my phone. I need to get clothes for her. Me; baby
Him; Hi

Me; can you talk?

Him; I wouldn't have answered if I couldn't talk

Me; what time will you

be home? (God, I
sound like a stupid
housewife)

Him; at
around 6pm

Me; ok

Him; I miss you

Me; then

come home

Him; I might

just

Me; I'm sorry about earlier. I shouldn't
have spoken to you like that Him; yes,
shouldn't have.

Me; are you on
your way Him;

chuckles

Me; hurry

Him; ok. I'll see you in an hour

Me; good. I'll make sure lunch is ready

Him; no

greens

Me; no

greens

The whole point of me calling him was to discuss the lack of clothes. But I end up apologizing. But at least he is on his way home. That's I care about. All I need now is to make sure he enjoys lunch. Aya comes down and she is wearing the clothes she had on when she arrived.

Me; come sit. I've made you a hot dog
Her; I thought I was having cupcakes
Me; eat first, then you can have dessert
Her; fine.

She sits on the kitchen counter, while I put together the pasta. I just hope Nathi won't protest to eating pasta.

Her; so mommy. When are we going home?
Me; no clue

Her; huh

Me; I have some builders doing some stuff to the house. So Uncle Nathi said we could stay with him
Her; Uncle Nathi?

Me; yes. Ahm the guy with the R8

Aya gives me that look and I change the subject
Me; so how was Durban

Her; mommy. Is he your boyfriend

Me; AYA. What do you know about boyfriends? He's my special

friend

Her; Daddy has

aunty Vee Me;

yes I know

Her; and you have

Uncle Nathi Me;

(sigh) Yes something

like that Her;

(giggles)

Me; you young lady should know nothing about things like this

Her; mommy I'm 8 years old

Me; exactly

Her; can I have a cupcake now

Me; yes. But only one. I don't want you running

around here with a sugar rush Her; can I watch

TV

Me; yes.

Nathi arrives just as I

finish making lunch Him;

Hey baby

Me; Hey

Him; I could get

used to this Me;

used to what

Him; seeing you in my kitchen cooking, while Aya watches TV.

It's perfect. Just the way it should be

Me; don't even think of it. I am a lot of things. A housewife isn't one of them

Him; I know that. Come kiss me

I stand on my tiptoes. And give him a kiss.

Her; eewww
mommy Me;
close your
eyes

Nathi kisses me some more. Aya has
her hands around her eyes Her;
mommy are you finished
Me; (chuckles)

yes. We are She

gives Nathi a

look

Her; where's your car
Him; Outside

Her; can I
ride in it

Him; yes

Her; ok Come

Me; wait a minute. Uncle

Nathi needs to eat first She

goes back to the lounge.

Him; what's for lunch

Me; Pasta

Him;

sounds

good Me;

sit. Ill dish

up

Him; so is this how you make
up for shouting at me Me; is it
working?

Him; maybe

Me; well what else would I need to do

Him; don't ask me that

Me; in that case. Next subject

Him; what's up

Me; when can I move
back to my house Him;
never

I look up at him, and I see
that he is serious Me;
Nathi. I won't be
cohabitating with you
Him; then agree to marry
me

He's looking at me dead in the eye.

Me; this isn't the time to be joking. I need clothes. I need
products

Him; make a list. I'll get it done

Me;

Nathi

Him;

Marry

me

Me; Nathi. Listen to me

Him; I'm being serious

Me; you can't be. We've been dating for a week Nathi

Him; so
Me; what do you
mean so Him; I
love you. You
love me

Me; that's a
Barney song
Him; who's
Barney

Breath.

Me; forget Barney
Him; so will you
marry me Me;
oh God
Him; Baby

come here I

sit on his lap

Him; I love you. And I love coming home to you. I don't want
you to leave. Change anything you want to change. But I just
want you to make this a home

Me; mhmm

Him; is that a yes

Me; can we meet with
my pastor first Him; if
you want us to

Me; Ill set up the
appointment Him;

is that a yes

Me; it's a maybe

Him; I can live with that

Me; so what happens
with the clothes Him; ill

take you shopping

Me; don't you want to rest first? You haven't slept for 2 straight nights

Him; no. im good

Me; ok. Ill go get Aya ready. Have a cupcake

I get Aya ready, and we go shopping. I don't really know what the use is for us to buy new clothes, when we have a house full of clothes, but since I am trying to make up for shouting at him. I figured I'd let this one go.

Aya on the other hand was having the time of her life. She kept walking into store after store, till I put my foot down. Nathi wasn't exactly happy about that but I don't care. He will not spoil my child.

By the time we got home it was time for me to make dinner. Aya went upstairs to try on all her new stuff, while Nathi and I cooked in the kitchen

Him; so now that we are both calm. Do you want to talk about what happened earlier today? Me; (sigh) I'm sorry Nathi. It's just that when I saw Vee, everything that that monster did to me. Him; Baby she's also been hurt

Me; why are you standing up for her Nathi? She betrayed me. She was my best friend. She knew how things were, and she made them worse. I would be beaten because I couldn't do the things she does. I would get beaten for not being more like her. She stood there while he kicked me like a dog. She didn't stop him. Not once. Instead she just sat there, and walked out with him when he was done.

Him; baby, I'm not saying be her friend. But when my guys found her she was shaken. She begged them

to take her. She said he would kill her if she gave Aya to us.
Me; Nathi. I just wish you had spoken to me about it before
bringing her here

Him; I'm sorry. I just thought it would be a good idea for you guys to talk

Me; can we just forget about her. I want nothing to do with her. I just want to move on with my life Him; noted

Me; the pastor came back. He says he can see us tomorrow morning Him; what time

Me; first thing. 9am

Him; ok, ill phone my PA and get her to shuffle my diary around Me; mhmm

you have a PA

Him; yes. Nandi. She's been with me for years

Me; mhmm

He looks up at me and gives me an inquisitive look Him;

spit it out

Me; no

nothing

Him;

MaMoloi.

Me; is she

pretty

Him; yes.

She is

Gosh I can kill him right now. He was supposed to say no

Him; baby. If I wanted to be with Nandi, I

would've dated her years ago. Me; ok

moving on

Him; I kind of like that you're jealous

Me; Me jealous? Never

Him; ok. But just so you know. its

written all over your face I take one
of the cupcakes and smudge it all
over his face

Me; well that's what's all over your face
Him; oh no you didn't

He picks up a the whip cream from the fridge , and I try
running but he gets hold of my hand and pulls me to him.

Him; and where do you think you are going

Me; Nath. Don't you dare?

Him; you started. Now I have icing all over my face

Me; baby, I'm sorry, just got my hair done. Don't

I'm too late he sprays whipped cream all over my hair.

Aya walks in and looks at both of us as though we're crazy

Her; mommy what
are you doing Me;

its his fault

Him; you
started this

Me; I did no
such thing

Aya is laughing and shaking her head at us. Nathi picks her up and she tries to wiggle her way out of his hold but he's too strong. Sprays the whip cream all over her.

When she finally escapes his hold she decides to retaliate with eggs, but by then we are both running out the kitchen. She comes after us, but he is able to grab the eggs from her by tickling her.

Me; ok. Ok enough

They're both on the floor laughing their hearts out. I pick Aya upstairs to clean her up. I don't bother wiping her down. I just run the bath for her and lay out her P'J's

Me; I'll call you when it's time for dinner

Her; can I watch

TV I my room? Me;

yes.

She has a huge smile

on her face Her;

mommy I really like

uncle Nathi

Me; I'm glad. Now get cleaned up

I leave her and go to Nathi's room. I need a shower ASAP. I am covered in cream, icing and eggs

I find him in the bathroom trying to wipe off the contents of our food fight

I open the shower. I have no choice. My weave is covered in whipped cream.

Him; can I

join you Me;

nice try

buddy Him;
was worth a
try

Me; and I hope you don't just want to get married because you want to get some

Him; (chuckles) no I want to marry you because you drive me crazy, then make me happy, that stuff food all over me.

Me; good.

I strip out my clothes and get in the shower. No use hiding from him anymore

I see him standing with his mouth open. I make sure I close the shower door behind me. I know it's

cruel, but I just couldn't help it. The way he looks at me, it makes me feel more confident. Like despite my flaws he still finds me attractive. And that can make any woman more confident about herself.

I stand under the hot water, and think about when last I was this happy. Nathi has brought out a side to me that I never knew existed. I look forward to when we can be together. I look forward to having him make me feel like a woman. I haven't really been a fan of sex. Because of what Msizi did I never enjoyed sex with him. Never. It was always about him. He would do what he wanted and then tell me to clean myself up when he was done. But with Nathi, I know that it will be tender. That he will be everything I've heard people talking about.

15

Waking up next to Nathi's pricking machine isn't new anymore. I don't even bother addressing it. Because

lastnight I suggested that we maybe sleep in separate bedrooms, he literally dragged me to bed.

One thing I really love about Nathi is the fact that despite him being sexually deprived he still does his best to respect my wishes, but I'm starting to feel bad. He's a man after all.

Him: I hope your not planning to kill me

Me: never. But I am thinking of what our honeymoon will be like

Him: mhmm now you're talking. How about a give you smallanyana preview

I don't even answer, he's already got his lips on mine. He pulls me closer, and next thing I'm on top of him.

I stop kissing him, and take a moment to look into his eyes. Him:

You are going to be the death of me

Me: just a little longer,
then I'll be all yours Him:

Is that a yes to my
proposal?

Me: yes. But technically you didn't propose

Him: baby, im a Zulu man. Getting on one knee with a ring and roses isnt me. My official proposal , will be a letter to your family

Me: what am I going to do with you

Him: you are going to make
me a happy man. Me: I

intend to

Him: one more kiss?

I leaned down and kiss him, like Its my last day alive.

I could feel him groaning from the kiss, and that made me want nothing more than to Give him the one thing that I can't

give him.

Her: Nkosinathi.

Nkosinathi Him:

shit

Me: who

is that

Him: my

mother

You should have seen me jump off Him. I wanted to get out of bed but his mother was already at our door. So what else do I do. Me Tshidi I cover myself with duvet and pray she doesn't notice that there is another body in the bed.

Nkosinathi, on the other hand is just sitting there chilled

like I wasn't on top of him a second ago Nkosinathi

She opens the door

Him: sawbona ma

Her: I've been screaming your

name all over this house. Him:

sorry ma, I was in the middle of

something

Gosh, I could kill him. He should be standing up and leading her downstairs. Instead he is busy talking nonsense

Out of nowhere he pulls the duvet from me.

Shit, if I could die I would. I'm sure I am

red with embarrassment. Him; ma, this

is Matshidiso. Tshidi this is my mother.

Makhumalo

I don't move. I am frozen and well, so is she. He gives me a nudge and i snap out of my moment

Me:

Sawbona

maHer: Hi

As if things couldn't get

worse, his father walks in. Oh

God help me.

His father looks at the scene in front of him,

and i see a smile on his face. Thank fully he

pulls his wife away, and closes the door

behind them.

The ,minute the door closes I punch

Nathi on his abdomen Him: Jeez,

babe what was that f

I get out of bed and he holds onto my waist, pulling me back to bed

Me: Nathi let go

Him: give me a kiss first

Me: you don't deserve it. Now let go, I need to get decent
Him: just one kiss

I give him a baby kiss, and run to the shower before he can stop me. I take a quick shower, and then get dressed.

Nathi is not in the room, so I'm guessing he's with his parents.

I don't know what to do. How am I going to face his parents? I don't have a choice though. I can't just sit here and hide. Plus Aya will be up in any minute.

I say a little prayer and walk down. I look in Aya's room and she is fast asleep. Then I head downstairs. I find Nathi and his parents in the lounge.

He smiles when

he sees me. Me:

dumelang

Baholo

They both greet me back.

Me: I'll go make some tea.

I stand up and go to the kitchen and start making tea. It's a good thing I made cupcakes yesterday. I put everything on the tray and take it to his parents.

His mother is the first to pour her tea,
followed by his father. I'm about to
walk away but he signals for me to sit
next to him Him: baba. This is
Matshidiso Moloji. Tshidi, this is my
dad.

Bab Khumalo

Him: how are you

Me: I'm good baba. You?

Him: I'm good. Nkosinathi tells me he wants to marry you.

Me: ahm, yes. We discussed it yesterday, but we didn't settle
on anything yet. We were going to meet with my Pastor first

Him: so you go to church

Me: Yes baba

Him: that's a

good thing. I

see his mother

smile

Her; Nkosinathi. What I fail to understand is why you have
this woman living with you. You know it's wrong. In front of
the eyes of God. You are living in adultery. You know that's
not how we do things

Him: Ma. I know. And you know I would never bring a woman
to my house if I didn't intend on marrying her. It's just that due

to some unforeseen circumstances I moved her in.

Her: you could've had her

come live with us Him: Ma

, she's been here for 2

days

Her: you need to hurry up and get married. Vat n set is

something I will never allow. Never She looks at me

and smiles. I nod, and look down

Her: so what time are you

meeting with the pastor Me: at

9 o'clock ma

She looks at her watch

Her: Nkosinathi, go get ready. Tshidi, take a walk with me

I look up at Nathi and he gives me a nod. We stand and she leads me into the garden.

I must admit I am not looking forward to this one bit. What on earth am I going to say to his mother. Plus she is so beautiful and well put together. She intimidates you just by her smile.

We sit on a bench that is in the garden,

next to one of the fountains. Her: So

Tshidi. Nathi tells me that you are a

designer

Me: yes Ma. I have a boutique

opening up in 2 weeks time Her:

that's exciting

Me: it is. It's always been my dream

Her: I'm glad for you. Now tell me about Nkosinathi and you.

How long have you known each other

Oh Lord

Me: for 2 weeks

She looks at me shocked

Her: and already you

want to get married Me:

yes Ma

Her: wow. I don't know what to say

I know that if I don't speak up for myself now. She might never look at me the same.

Me: Ma. I know that 2 weeks isn't exactly a long time. In fact I think it's absurd. But I know that in the 2 weeks that I have known him, not a day has gone by where I didn't think of him. He has made me so happy, that I know that he is my future.

Her: what about your daughter.

What does she think Me: she loves him just as much as I do.

Her: do your parents know that you're here Me:

no Ma. My father would kill me

Her: we better get you two married in no time. I don't want to start of this marriage on the wrong note I just nod,

Her: Matshidiso I won't lie and say that this sudden marriage thing doesn't scare me. It does. I really hope that you both know what you are getting yourself into. But on the other hand I've noticed a huge change in past 2 weeks, it's as though you've brought light into his world.

I smile. Little does she know that he saved me

Her: you know when I first saw you, you reminded me of his wife. Your blushing. Your smile. I see why he wants to marry you. You are so much like her. It's beautiful really. At least I know he is in good hands

I don't know if Nathi's mother is being sincere or not anymore. But I know the fact that I look like his dead wife isn't something that sits well with me. Not one bit.

I don't ever, want to be her replacement. What if he hasn't gotten over her. What if the only reason he wants to be with me is because I look like her.

Her: come. Let's go find that Fiance of yours. We don't want to keep the pastor waiting.

Nathi and i leave for our appointment. His parents insist in taking Aya out for the day to get to know her. I wasn't exactly comfortable, but Aya was way too excited for me to say no to her.

Him: which car do
you want to use Me:
we can use mine

Him: it's not
bullet proof

Me: then your
Benz

He opens the door for me, and we leave.

I put the address in the GPS, and link his Bluetooth to my phone, so I can listen to music. I put on Sfiso ncwane, and sit back,

We drive in silence, except for the music. I don't know what to think anymore. I don't know if i can be ok with the fact that I feel like he is trying to replace me with his dead wife.

I look out the window and to be honest I'm emotional. What if he doesn't love. What if he hasn't gotten over her. What if he thinks of her when he's with me. What if this is all a mistake. I don't even know him that well.

(Sigh)

Him: Tshidi. What's wrong?

You seem a bit off Me: I'm fine

I don't move my eyes from the window. I know if I look at him I'm going to get emotional Him: baby. Talk to me. What's wrong

(Silence)

Him: You know there's nothing i hate more than immaturity. If something is bothering you, then tell me, so I can fix it. Instead of sulking. If I've done something wrong, how will I fix it if you don't talk to me?

Those words cut through me.

What do i say or do? Him:

Tshidi

Me: Nathi

Him: I'm
talking to you

Me: Nathi,
leave it alone

Him: leave
what alone

Lord help me.

Him: is it the fact that my parents came over unannounced
I don't answer him because the truth is that I'm scared of what
his answers will be.

Him: yaz Tshidi, I'm not good at begging. If you don't want to
be here then don't. I'm asking you for the last time. What is
going on.

I'm saved by his phone ringing. He
answers it immediately

Him: Ghost
G: dude, where
are you Him: on
my way

somewhere

G: I need you to come to my place. I've called
the guys they're all on the way

Him: code?
G: red

Him: shit. On my way

The guy on the other end drops the call. Nathi does an illegal u-turn. He doesn't bother to ask me how I feel. I guess, the meeting with the pastor isn't going to happen. So I call my Pastor and cancel. Luckily he is understanding. I don't bother asking him to schedule another meeting, because I have no idea where Nathi and I stand right now.

We drive into a posh neighbourhood. We haven't said anything to each other since the phone rang. We arrive at a gate of a Gatsby looking mansion. The guards immediately open.

He parks in the driveway Him:

come

Me: maybe I should

wait in the car Him: I

might be a while

Me: I can call a cab

Him: Tshidi, just get out the car. Rifiloe is here. You can hang with her.

I can see in his face that he is getting irritated, so I just do what he tells me to do. It's not like I didn't want to come in. I just didn't want to be in the way. Plus how was I supposed to know that this is Rifiloe's house?

We walk in and Rifiloe is waiting

for us on the veranda Nathi

briefly greets her, then vanishes.

Me: I'm so sorry for coming to your home unannounced.

Her: don't be silly. You're always welcome. Come, let me show you around.

She shows me through her home, and i must say its beautiful. It's huge, but still has a homely feel.

She shows me everywhere except the basement, because apparently that's where the guys are meeting Her: I was about to start cooking something for the guys. These meetings of theirs can take forever.

Me: can I help

Her: of course, but first tell me what has you and Nathi looking so down. Me: is it that obvious

Her: only because

I know him Me:

sigh. Where so I start

Her: let's start with a glass of wine.

She opens a bottle of wine, and pours us both a full glass.

Me: so his parents rock up this morning. We were still in bed.

But thankfully we were both still dressed. After I get decent, his mother asks me to take a walk with her.

So we go to the garden, and well we talk about a few things.

You know the normal things, how Nathi and i met, blah blah blah, but then out of know where she drops a bomb about how I look so much like his dead wife.

Her: Damn

Me: that's only the begging. She then goes on to say how I smile like her, after that I totally zoned out.

Her: what did Nathi say

Me: I haven't said anything to him

Her: so he doesn't know what you're mad about

Me: no. I just don't know how to digest what his mother said Rifiloe. What if he's only with me because I remind him of her. How do I know he loves me? I'm just conflicted about this whole thing

Her: but friend, if you don't talk to him about it how will you know? Yes. Maybe you look like her, but that doesn't mean he's only with you because of that

Me: I don't know Rifiloe. On top of that he wants to marry me. I just worry that he wants everything to be done quickly because I remind him of her. But what if a few years he decides I'm not good enough because I'm not her

Her: you can't jump to conclusions Tshidi. Tell him every thing you've just told me. Hear him out before making up your mind about this. I learned this the tough way. Siya and I have been through everything imaginable.

Me: really?

Her: yes. He isn't perfect Tshidi. And well neither am I. But one thing we both know for certain is the love we have for each other. That's the only thing that's gotten me through his cheating, and through his disrespect, and him hitting me. All I had was to hang onto the fact that he loves me. And that I love him. Everything else, we had to work through

Me: that's a lot to go through

Her: that's not even the half of it. He is going to hurt you Tshidi.

It's inevitable. He might not come home some nights. He might get so mad, that you want to run but the love you have for each other is what will get you through.

Me: i hope so

Her: come. Let's cook for these crazy men.

I stand up and help her cook. I meet Boniswa and we kick it off instantly. . I don't know if its what Rifiloe said, or if its the wine, but i start feeling better. Maybe she's right. But a lot of what she says scares me. I guess I am just going to have to jump in and hope for the best

16

Rifiloe is honestly a life saver. Somehow I've managed to kind of see things from someone else's prospective, and that helps I guess in a way.

Boni: so gal
guess what

Fifi: what

Boni: Linda has decided that she
wants her child back Fifi: noo

Boni: yep. But you know your ex mos.

He says over his dead body Fifi: and
what do you say

Boni: I say over my dead body

Rifiloe looks at me and

sees that am lost Her:

oh, ahmm I used to date

Hlokes They both burst

out laughing

Boni: Yah, she

hit it first Oh

my gosh these

two

Fifi: oh and we share a baby mama

that we both despise Me: are you

guys s erious

Fifi: yes, like

for real, Me:

that's hectic

Fifi: stick around with us love. You will

concur flipping mountains I smile at as

they both continue to make me laugh

Boni: so gal can I

ask a question Me:

sure

Boni: I've never seen Nathi with a woman before. You're like the first. And I'm just curious ne. Like how good is he in between the sheets? Because he is honestly Finley built and i just wonder you know

I blush instantly.is this the kind of question one asks Mara?

Fifi: you don't have To answer this one. It's

obvious the wines gotten to her head Fifi smacks

Boni with the dishcloth playfully

Boni: No maan Fifi, I'm just asking. I just miss those days where you know make love for the first time, and you feel like your world is complete. You know the new love kind of thing

Fifi: you and Hlokes have been married for 2 yeas, it's not like you were married a decade ago

Boni:I know, but Tshidi is at the funniest stage of life. Where they get to experiment with each others body. Where she finds her limits. And nawe you can see Nathi is a Damn beast. She's probably the happiest woman on the planet

They both look at me and I give them an awkward smile Me: well.

We haven't exactly done anything

Fifi: I'm lost

Me: as in we haven't. You know

Boni: oh my gosh, you two haven't

gotten down and dirty yet I nod

Boni: girl what are you waiting for

Me: well, I had said I want to stay

celibate till we were married The look

in both their eyes say it all.

Boni: that's very nice. I jumped Hlokes

the minute he shellad me We all, burst

out laughing

Fifi: Well, Siya and I waited like i think 2 weeks.

Me: I don't know anymore. I kind of feel like we are already married. We may have not had the wedding, but i feel like in our hearts we're married. Committed to each other

Fifi: then give the poor man what belongs to him.

No wonder he looks so grumpy We all burst out

laughing

Boni: but maybe you should make it special. You know Me: special how

Boni: as in put on something sexy. Have some candles lit, and you know. Make it a night to remember Me: I don't know what you're talking about

They both give me look

Fifi: lets finish cooking, so I can take you shopping

Boni: yep. I second that, we need to get you to our level of

craziness

We finish cooking, and help Rifiloe carry down the food and drinks to the basement. The plan is to feed them and bribe them into letting us go shopping.

She knocks and opens the door.

Her: we , made you all lunch. Knowing yall we figured you might be here for decades

I see Siya smile. He honestly loves her. You don't even need to ask. It's written all over his face.

I do my best not make eye contact with Nathi, but i kind of give in. He gives me a wink and i smile. We lay the food down in the connecting room.

We decided that we should let them dish up for themselves. Makes things easier. Once we're done i want to get out of here. It's so Damn awkward. Like I've never seen so many hot good looking men in one room.

The guys don't even wait for us to finish setting up. The're already dishing up. Nathi takes my hand and leads me out the room.

Oh God.

He opens a room which looks

like another office. He locks
the door behind us

Him: I've missed you

Me: Nathi, I was in the other room

Him: I know. But I don't like the tension there is between us

Me: I know. I don't like it either. I'm sorry

Him: tell me what's got you so upset

Me: don't you want to talk about it when we get home

Him: no. I want to know now. It's been bugging me all morning. I can't even concentrate on what I'm doing in there

Now I feel bad. I don't want my man not being able to work because of my stupid worries.

Me: it's just something about what your mother said

Him: what did she say

Me: she basically said that the reason you're marrying

me is because I look like your wife Nathi gives me a look.

I don't know what it is. But I feel it in the pit of my

stomach

Him: and you believe that?

Me: I don't know what to believe Nathi

Him: Tshidi. I didn't pick you out of a bunch of women and say this is the one. The way we met wasn't orchestrated. I met you at one of my many gas stations. Yes you have some features that look like my ex but that's not what made me fall for you. I didn't choose to fall for you Tshidi. I just did. Especially since you didn't like my car. That sealed it for me

I smile at him

Him: Tshidi. If something bothers you, you tell me. No

sulking, we are way too grown for that baby. Me; I know. I

just don't know what got into me

Him: so

we're good?

Me: yes.

We're good.

Him: give me

a kiss

I moved closer, and for the first time since this meeting

with his mom, I feel ok. Like we are ok. He steps back

Him: you've

been drinking

Me: oh. Yeah.

Ahhmm yes

Him: come feed me. Now that

we're good, I feel famished I take

his hand and we go out to join

everyone else.

Mthunzi: Damn dude that was quick. You were like 3 minutes

The guys all burst out laughing. I'm

red with embarrassment Him: Razor,

behave.

He introduces me to all the guys. Boni winks at me when I meet her man. You can tell just how much she loves him

Fifi: so now that you all have food.

We are going shopping
The room

immediately goes silent

Siya: where

Hlokes: can't

it wait Nathi:

not

happening

All three of us ladies look at our partners. Nathi is giving me a look that I can't hold. I end up looking down.

Hlokes puts his plate down clearly irritated. But Rifiloe and Ghost are basically having an unspoken conversation with their eyes

Mthunzi and the other guys don't say

anything. They just keep quite Finally

after what feels like a decade. Siya speaks

up

Him: Right now isn't

exactly a good time. Fifi:

baby. We'll be fine

Him: Rifiloe

He gives her that look that says stand down,

and she does so immediately
Her: in that
case I hope you all die from the poison in
your food

They all giggle and carry on eating.

We walk out and leave them. I don't know how I feel about this
need for control that they have. But right now I'm too
emotionally tired to even bother addressing it. It's just one of
those things that I think I am going to have to live with.

We get to the kitchen and i see

how irritated Boni is
Boni: I

hate it when they do that

Fifi: I know. I just think they want to feel like they flipping own
us

They both look at me and I shrug. Hell I'm used to being told

what to do. No use trying to change it
Fifi: come let's go

She grabs her bag

Her: Tshidi, where

are your car keys
I fish

them out my bag

Her: your driving

I look them both like they are insane. Did Rifiloe not see the way
her husband looked at her

Her: come on. Let's go

I jump off my chair and we walk to the car.

I jump in the drivers seat, Rifiloe sits

infront and Boni at the back. Boni: drive

I reverse, and somehow the

security guard opens the gate.

We're off the property before

anyone can notice

Me: where

to ladies

Fifi: Mall of

Africa.

I oblige. I must say that even though I know Nathi is going to be pissed. I'm glad I'm not in this alone.

We're not even on the highway when a call from Nathi comes in. This stupid Bluetooth thing connects him immediately

Him: Tshidi what the fuck

are you playing at. Me:

bbbbabby. I

Fifi: Nathi. Bye

Him: Rifiloe. Don't you dare

She drops the call and takes my phone and switched it off. She does the same with hers and Boni does the same

We all burst out

laughing. Boni:

Hlokes is going to

kill me.

So should I need a place to stay. i hope you bitchesb have my back

Fifi: he will be fine. It will

teach them a lesson Me:

how long before they catch

up to us

Fifi: they're probably

on their way Me:

shit

We arrive at Mall of Africa and i am whisked away to the first lingerie shop we find. Her: what colours do you like?

Me: I dont know.

Maybe black Her:

good choice.

They pick about 8 pairs of different lingerie. Some of which I don't see the point since it does t cover much. But none the less I take them all.

I take out my card to pay but Rifiloe insists on paying. So I let her Boni: ok.

Now we need to get you some toys.

Come

Me: toys

Her: yes. Some magic silver balls

Don't ask. I don't know

We get to a adult shop. I am so embarrassed right now it's not even funny.

Boni buys me some silver balls, apparently I put them in my nuna, and they help tighten me. Then she insists on me buying handcuffs, body chocolate, and even a whip

Lord help me. All I want is to get out of this shop. I can't deal.

After the adult shop, I am made to buy heels that go with the lingerie.

I see Nathi, Siya and Hlokes Approaching. I look at the girls nervously as we Sip on yet another glass of wine.

We're sitting at one of Rifiloe's favourite restaurant

Me: gosh, guys

they look pissed

Fifi: ignore them

Boni waves at the waiter and tells him to bring another bottle.

I don't know why I am so nervous. It's not like Nathi would hit me. But I am still shitting myself.

I gulp down my glass of wine. If I'm facing Nathi, I'm going to need liquid courage

I take the bottle and pour another glass, but Nathi takes it

out my hand before I can even drink it Him: let's go

I look at Rifiloe, and she shakes her head. So I sit

Nathi looks at me and I see his veins coming out of his neck. He even has a bit of sweat on his forehead.

Now I am all for empowering women's movement group that we have formed. But this beast that stands in front of me with eyes as red as hell's fire is my man, and right now he is not to be messed with.

I look at Siya and Hlokes and well they are just as pissed. The restaurant has been cleared. It's only us in here

I look at my man and give him a warm smile. He doesn't smile back. Drunk or not, it's time to go. Me: ladies. It's been fun.

Boni bursts out laughing

Fifi: see you tomorrow dear. Oh and don't forget to bring Aya with. Me: cool.

I stand up and I've my partners in crime hugs. I give Nathi my shopping.

And we are off.

He walks me to the car in complete silence. I open the boot and put everything inside. Then climb into the front.

I know Nathi is mad. He is not even talking to me. He just drives out in complete silence.

I want to say something, but truth be told, I'm a bit tipsy and I'm not sure if its a good idea to piss him off more

We arrive home and he goes to his office. I take all the things we bought and i put them in the closet.

I wish no knew what to do. I want to speak to him and explain but i don't know what to do. So since Bonigot me into this she needs to get me out of it

Her: hey gal

Me: I need help. He is so mad. I don't know what to do

Her: I knocked Hlokes out with make up sex. That's

the only thing that shuts him up On my God this

woman is crazy

Me: that's not exactly an option for me

Her: give him a taste of what he's missing. Without going all the way Me

how is that even possible

Her: figure it out. But end result must be him releasing his load. The poor man is walking around with too much load man

I actually don't know why I phoned this crazy woman

Her: gotta run. I'm , up for round 2. Hlokes isn't letting go that easily

She ends the call and now I am more confused

than I was before I called her. I decide to rather let him be. Maybe he just needs time To himself.

I take a quick shower, then get dressed in Jean shorts and a t-shirt. Maybe if he sees my legs he will forget about his mood. This whole sexy thing isn't for me. I make woman look sexy in evening gowns and clothes and that's it.

After more than 3 hours of him being locked in that office of his. I decide to go and see if we can discuss this. otherwise I might just have to give him some.

I knock on the door, and dont wait for him to respond. He looks up at me when I come in. I smile but he doesn't return my smile

Me: Khumalo. I'm sorry

He doesn't say anything. His eyes just burn into me Me:

baby. Please. I

He's up before I can even finish my sentance. I take a step back, but he has me by my waist. He pulls me towards him and makes me face him.

I feel his lips on mine. Be's not soft, or hard. He just knows not to push me too hard.

He lifts me up an I wrap my legs around his waist. I can feel his erection coming from his Jeans, and that alone makes me want

him.

He gently puts me on the table, then steps away leaving me wanting for more

Him: don't ever pull that shit that you pulled again. If I could I would be fucking you back to your senses. I don't know what the hell got into you.

Me: I'm sorry

Him: and for God's sake cover your legs. I can't be experienced to behave when you look like this I smile. I guess my plan kind of worked

Him: I need a cold shower

Me: need some help

releasing yourself? He

looks at me as though I've

lost my mind

I walk passed him and he follows me. We get to our room and we close the door. I make sure I lock it, the last thing I need is his mother walking in on us.

I strip, and go run the shower for us. He doesn't move from where he is standing. So I go over to him and start undressing him. I get to his pants and he holds my hand

Him: what are you doing

Me: making sure you get the relief you need without us going all the way
Him: are you sure about this

Me: no. But I'm in the moment. And i want to see you

I look at him and he seems to get the bullshit that's coming out my mouth. He lets go of my hand and i continue.

Once he's completely naked I stand and admire the work of God. This man is absolute perfection. from his head down to his feet. Its obviouse that he takes working out seriously , because he is an absolut beast. I take my hand and run it over his chest counting his 8 pack. His dark chocolate skin is smooth. I run it further down and get hold of his joy stick. I hear him take a deep breath when I touch it. He doesn't move him eyes from mine. We are connected. We're one. And nothing is going to come between us.

We step into the shower, and before I know it im pressed on the shower door. his lips are on mine. His kisses aren't slow and sultry, but instead they are fast and hungry. They reflect the passion rooted between us. I hold his P***s in my hand and start moving.

His kisses gett deeper, his fingers press into my skin, and before I know it he is growling as he releases himself in my hand.

Mission accomplished

He comes back to earth and looks at me with more hunger than I've ever seen Him: you are going to be the death of me

Me: I love you too

We both stay in the shower for a while longer. I know what we did isn't exactly holy, and well I'm not perfect, but i do know that I love him and i see my forever with him.

I'm just going to Have to pray for forgiveness from God, for yet another sin that I have committed. Hopefully soon we will be married and we won't have to worry about all of this.

17

After playing some more in the shower, we both got out and i went to dish up for him. At least he wasn't Moody anymore.

Him: so the letter to your parents was sent today
Me: how did you know where they stay

Him: I have my ways

Me: ok. I don't know what to say

Him: the sooner we can discuss Lobola the sooner we can get married.
Me: baby. Do we have to do all that

Him: what do you mean

Me: as in do we have to do the whole lobola thing? It's not like I am worth much. I'm divorced and i have a child

Nathi gives me that look of annoyance

Him: Tshidi. You are worth more. You know that

Me: I was just saying. Plus knowing my dad he will probably beg You to take me after the shame I put him through

Him: I'm not discussing this with you. I intend to do things the right way. Plain and simple

Me: I wasn't trying to make you angry. It's just that I know my dad, and i just feel like he is going to embarrass me

Him: I'll handle him. You just worry about planning a wedding
Me: that's another thing I don't look forward to

Him: why not

Me: I just wish we could elope. Makes things easier for everyone

Him: Siya and Rifiloe got married without informing his family.

Let's just say I drafted divorce papers for them At least twice

Me; that's hectic

Him: exactly why I want us

to do things right
Me: ok.

Him: where are you going tomorrow? I heard

Boniswa saying she'll see you tomorrow
Me: we're going to her house. It's her daughter's 3rd birthday party

Him: it's beautiful how she loves

Owami like her own
Me: it is

Him: what time do you

need to be there
Me:

around 11am

Him: don't even think of pulling off the stupid stunt you pulled today. I swear Tshidi.

Me: I won't. I promise

Him: since I'm calm now. Please explain what the heck got into you. Especially the fact that you were driving the get away car?

Me: (chuckles) it seemed like a good idea at the time. And oh just by the way we were going to buy things for you

Him:

for me?

Me: yes

Him: what exactly

did you buy Me:

you'll see

Him: should I

be excited Me:

maybe

Him: well make sure it

doesn't happen again Me:

yes sir

Aya and her beloved newly acquired grandparents arrived just as we were finishing dinner.

I offered to dish up for them, but apparently they had gotten pizza before leaving gold reef. So instead I went to the spare bedroom to make sure it was in order for them, then I took Aya and went to give her a bath.

She kept telling me how exciting her day was, and how mkhulu went on rides with her. I calmed her down put her to bed.

By the time I was done with Aya, Mkhulu and gogo were off to bed.

It felt weird to sleep in the same bed as Nathi with his parents in the room next door, but i didn't have much of a choice.

I fell into Nathi's arms, and drifted off to a warm sleep. No bad dreams. No fear. For the first time I was free, and nothing is better than being free of that monster.

Me: Nathi Damn it stop picking me

Him: baby nature is nature. I can't do anything about it

Me: let go so i can go make
breakfast for your parents
Him:
make sure it's greasy

Me:ok. Now

let go Him:

give me a kiss

first Me: Nathi

man

Him: ok let me join you in the shower for
some more of what I had lastnight
Me: that
was supposed to be a one time thing

Him: but baby, how long are you going to torture
me like this. Look at how hard I am
Me: I look down
and indeed he is as hard as a steel pipe

I was about to agree to having him join me in the shower,
when I heard a small knock on our door. Me: there goes
your idea.

He smiles and goes back to bed, while I open for Aya,

Her: mommy, are you still sleeping? I'm hungry

Me: Aya, there's cereal in the kitchen, you know

how to make your own breakfast Her: but mom,

I don't want cereal. I want pancakes, and bacon

Me: well you're just going to have to wait. I'm

not making pancakes today Her: but m

I give her the don't try me look and

she stops her sentence. Nathi: Aya,

come. I'll make you pancakes.

Me: Nathi

He gives me the don't try me

look, and I let it be. Mxm If he

wants to play favourites I'll let

him.

I'm going to take a shower.

He quickly freshens up, and down he goes with Aya, to make pancakes

I find the kitchen in an absolute mess. Nathi and Aya have flour everywhere. It's obvious his attempt at making pancakes wasn't working, not on bit.

Him: ok, so this is an absolute flop

Me: next time don't offer to do

things you don't know how Him:

Aya, come we'll go buy pancakes

They both get in the car and leave,
while I'm left with cleaning up. I quickly
clean up, then make breakfast for his
parents.

Luckily Aya and Nathi are back just as
his parents come down. Aya has
pancakes with bacon, while everyone
digs in.

Nathi's parents leave soon after breakfast. Apparently they
came just to check on Nathi, and now that they know he is ok,
they want to go back.

Me: Aya, go take a bath. We' re
going to a birthday party She runs
up and leaves me and Nathi alone

Me: you too Mr pancakes,

He smiles and leaves me with a kiss on the cheek.

I finish clearing up the kitchen, then head upstairs to change. I
was wearing a skirt to respect his parents, but now that they are
gone I need to be in something more comfortable.

I first check on Aya, and make sure she looks ok, then I change
into my shorts and a top. It's a pool party after all.

When Nathi comes out the shower he looks at me with a

disapproving look

Me: and that look

Him: Baby. Please tell me you aren't planning on wearing those shorts to the party

Me: what's wrong with my shorts? It's a pool party after all

Him: yah, but still, those legs are mine and mine only. I

don't want all those men drooling over you

Me: all those men are married

Him: still.

Me: but Nathi

Him: ha a baby. You're about to be Makhumalo. There's no way I'm letting anyone see you like that

Me: Nathi

Him: change Tshidi. Now

I roll my eyes and decide to just do as he says. I replace my shorts with ripped jeans. Once we're ready we leave and head over to Boni's house.

Her and Hlokes live in a beautiful country estate. There are only 10 properties in the entire estate, and apparently Hlokes owns at least 5 of them.

Nathi opens the door for Aya and they walk off leaving me behind. Mxm

By the time I get inside Nathi has disappeared to the man cave, and Aya is changing into her swim suit. I give Boni and Fifi a hug. I see Dourine and Busisiwe again, and i GoGoover and greet them.

Boni takes all the ladies and we head to the dining room. At

least there are nannies watching the kids so we mummies can relax, and as expected there is tons of wine.

We all grab our glasses and we pour.

Dourine: so I hear you ladies were up to no good yesterday. Fifi: mx, you know how controlling they can be

Boni: so Tshidi, did

my advice work? I

blush, and just nod

my head

They all look at me

Her: see. I always tell you ladies. If he's pissed, make sure he cums, and you'll be good They all burst out

laughing

Busisiwe: so ladies

I need help Boni:

help with.

Busi: I think Mthunzi is

having an affair Damn

Fifi: how do you know

Busi: he's suddenly very secretive. His phone has a password and he stays out till the wee hours of the morning, and his excuse is that he is working. But I don't believe him

Dourine: bloody idiots these men have no shame. We put up with their shit and this is the thanks we

get

Fifi: we need to find out who she is

Busi: I found her picture.

He name is MbaliShe

shows us the picture.

Boni: find out more. We'll

teach her a lesson Fifi:

Tshidi. Not a word of this

to Nathi.

I nod.

Dourine: what are we going to do

Fifi: we'll send her a warning. I'f she persists we'll

teach her a lesson she'll never forget Boni: I'll be the

first to slap that bitch. Nxa, she has no shame

Fifi raises her glass,

Her: here's to sorting out bitches who think they can come between us and our men.

They all raise their glasses. I on the other hand am shocked.

What the he'll have I gotten myself into Boni: so Tshidi, have you guys set a date for the wedding

Me: no, not yet. He sent a letter to

my family yesterday Boni: can I

plan your bachelorettes party?

Me: i don't want to Impose

Her: oh please. It would be my honour

busi: just let her. She is the kinkisst motherfucker

alive. She will make sure its bomb Me: ok I guess

Fifi: don't look so worried. There won't be any strippers
Me: please. I'm sure Nathi would bury me alive
Dourine: or we could have female strippers

We all look at her

Her: what. It's sexy. Don't act like y'all, never watch lesbian porn
Fifi: watching it on a screen and live is 2 different things

Busi; why don't we let Tshidi decide ?

It's her party anyway
They all look at me

Me: well, I've never watched porn before so I don't exactly know what to expect should I say yes or no
They all think I'm joking.

Boni bursts out laughing

Boni: are you serious

Me: yes. It's just not something I've done

Dourine: I'm going to have fun corrupting you

Boni: ladies lets take this to the cinema. I can't dzeal

They all stand up and we head to this so called cinema. Boni brings popcorn and chocolates. I just take the popcorn.

She stands at the front.

Boni: ladies, I think it's only fair to start our corrupting Tshidi operation now. We cannot let this go on. Never. So first up Tshidi. Here is a look of what lesbian sex looks like

She presses a few things on the remote and

boom, I see two blonde girls kissing. I look

around and it seems I'm the only one who is

uncomfortable.

The girls on the tv do things I don't think ii could ever do

to a woman. Not even if you paid me After that 10

minute clip, she skips to what she calls every man's

dream.

I cover my eyes with the popcorn box when I see this woman going down on a man. The way she sucks on his thing makes me want to puke.

Dourine takes the popcorn boxx from me, and says pay attention. Like we are in some English class. Boni: so ladies, what else should we teach Tshidi
Busi: show her what a lapdance is.

Boni says ok, but she switches on the lights, and puts off the screen and i hear Rihanna bursting through the speakers.

She takes my hand and makes me sit on

a chair in front of everyone. Her: this

stays here. Between us

I nod, because I don't know what she is talking about.

Next thing I know Boni is coming towards me, while unbuttoning her shirt. It all sinks in. This Motherfucker is about to give a lapdnace. And to make things worse, the ladies are cheering her on by throwing money at her

Lord help me

She gets to my chair and gives me a baby

kiss. I nearly fall out my chair Fifi, is

dancing along while Dourine and Busi keep

throwing money

I swear if Nathi was to walk in he

would fucking throttle all of us. I gulp

down my wine, and Dourine runs to

come fill my glass.

By now Boni is only in her underwear. She tAkes off her bra, and Lord knows I want to look away but i can't. She seriously has perfect boobs.

She wiggled them in my face and i

flick one of her nipples. She

flinched a bit, then starts twerking.

Busi gives me money and makes me put it in Boni's thong.

I try to keep a straight face, but truth be told, we are all drunk, and all decency has gone out the door. Dourine starts dancing with a basically naked Boni and i am able to get off my chair.

I look around at these crazy bitches and i must say I like everyone of them.

Once the song wraps up, Boni puts on her clothes and we are all killing ourselves with laughter. Dourine picks up a bottle of wine and gives it to me. The rest of the ladies also have a bottle

Her: a toast to the new lady in the group. This here are your sister's, we will annoy you. We will laugh with you, we will cry with you, but most importantly we will always and i mean always have your back. Cheers bitches

We all click our bottles together and drink from them. Boni looks at her watch

Boni: Ladies. It's lunch time. Please gather yourselves. Put on your lipstick and meet me outside. She winks and leaves us

Fifi, helps me fix my weave, while Dourine helps Busi.

When we all look presentable again, and like the perfect wives, we walk out and head to where lunch is being served.

The guys come to join us, and we all sit and enjoy lunch.

Nathi gives me a kiss when he sees me Him: you having a good time?

Me: I'm good babe

Him; what have you been up to

Me; nothing much. Just been chatting with the

ladies. Oh and we watched a cute movie Him: sounds nice

I nod and i see Dourine wink at me

Lunch is served, and we all dig in. The kids are all in one of the inside pools. Apparently they have already eaten

The conversation at the table is flowing. I've cut down on the wine, because I was way too tipsy after the strip show that Boni bestowed upon me. And the last thing I want tips to be a sloppy drunk in front of Nathi's friends

I see Hlokes stand up. It looks like someone is at the gate.

When he comes back he isn't alone. Instead there is a voluptuous beautiful woman with him.

I see Fifi's face harden immediately. Siya puts down his fork. And Dourine holds onto Boni's hand so she doesn't stand up

I look at Nathi and you can just

tell he is also irritated Her: isn't

this cosy.

No one says anything

Her;

Hi Fifi

Fifi:

Linda

Her;

Siya

Him:

Linda

She looks around the table, and her eyes meet mine

Her: hehe hai cha we Nathi. How you gonna do this Mara. This poor girl is a replica of Thandiwe. Shame yaz. I feel for you nana. No woman wants to be a replacement. Ask Rifiloe. She knows all about being my replacement .

She looks at Boni, and wena, you barren bitch. Despite what you think. I will have my daughter back. You just wait and see

From no where there was absolute havoc. Boni basically flew towards this Linda chick. Siya is holding Rifiloe back, while Luzoko grabs Dourine. But Mthunzi isn't as fast. Busi is already up.

I don't know what, where or why, but next thing I'm on my feet. I want to fucking kill this bitch for talking to me and Boni like that.

don't blame me. It's the wine.

Nathi comes to his senses and grabs onto me just as I'm about to lay my first slap. But even though he stops me, Busi and Boni at her In seconds.

Siya throws Rifiloe at Nathi, who is now holding onto both of us. We're both screaming our lungs out swearing at this bitch.

Hlokes is busy pushing her toward the house. While

Luzuko and Mthunzi hold onto their wives. Nxa

When this Linda bitch is inside, we all stand in silence.

Then us ladies burst out in laughter. Nathi let's go of

Rifiloe, and he looks at me with a disapproving look.

I don't care though. That bitch had it coming.

Rifiloe fixes my collar, while I help her tie up her hair.

I know it's ghetto and for some it's crazy, but for the first time I feel what it feels like to have a sisterhood.

Busi comes and gives me a hug, while Dourine is getting a talking to from Luzuko.

We ladies all sit down, and continue eating, while the guys just stand and look at each other shaking their heads.

They all eventually sit down. Rifiloe hands me a bottle of wine to refill my glass, but Nathi takes it and puts it back on the table, and hands me a bottle of water instead.

Siya: Ladies you can't go around assaulting people

Dourine: but you heard how that

tramp spoke to Boni and TshidiLuzuko

looks at Dourine, and she keeps quite

Fifi: you should've spoken up Siya and you Nathi, and maybe,
just maybe we wouldn't have had to jump the skank

Busi: what is she doing here anyway

I look over at Boni and I see that she is still boiling.

Nathi: but violence, ladies.like really,

what if she lays charges We all look

at him with the really look

Busi: I guess it's a good thing

you're an advocate We all

laugh

He pinches my nose. And kisses me

Him: I had no clue that you my sweet
dove, could ever be this ratchet Me: I'm
from DK. Ratchedness is in my DNA

He smiles, and i know that I am forgiven.

Luckily Linda just came to drop off some cheap present for her
daughter, then she left. Hlokes took Boni aside to calm her
down. While we all continued as though nothing happened.

By the time we leave its way past Aya's bedtime. WHen

we get home I dont bother bathing her. She spent most of her day in an inside pool.

Nathi drags me off to bed. We dont bother to shower. We both sleep in our underwear. Tomorrow is yet another day.

18

Sunday mornings always start early for me. No matter what shit I've been up to the whole week, Sundays are reserved for church. It's the one place I have been able to go to where I can be free, where I can lay everything in Gods hand. So for me Sunday is one of the most vital days.

So I leave Nathi in bed, and take a quick shower. I want to cook the normal Sunday 7 colours that ever black person grew up eating.

By the time Nathi wakes up I'm halfway through my cooking. Him;
you're up early

Me; I wanted to make sure lunch was ready before we leave for church Him; we?

Me; yes. We, as in you, myself and Aya

Him; babe, I've got a meeting today.

Me; Its fine, you go to your meeting and

Aya and I will go to church Him; what

time will you be back from Church

Me; I usually have Sunday lunch with my parents after the sermon which ends at 12. So I should be back by around 4pm

Him; mhm

Me; what time does your meeting end?

Him; at around midday. After that I need to go through some files for court tomorrow

Me; so I'll see you at around 4pm

Him; your security detail comes with you

Me; that's fine. As long as they keep their distance.

Him; Are you taking the

Benz or the R8 Me;

Benz

Him; cool

Me; are you going to give me a kiss good morning

Him; No. you're leaving me for the whole day. You don't deserve a kiss

I look up and I can see that he is kind of sulking. I want to roll my eyes, but I don't dare.

Me; baby, ill be back mos

Him; I know, I just so used to having you around, and now I have to go the whole day without you Me; uzoba strong

Him; Mxm

Me; sit down and have breakfast. Sulking doesn't suit you. Not one bit

He comes around the kitchen and puts his arms

around my waist, while kissing my neck Him; are you

going to pray for me?

Me; what wife wouldn't pray for their Husband

Him;

Wife

huh Me;

yes.

Him; In that case then this wife should give her husband what's due to him.

I feel his hand run up my dress. And I

give him a playful smack Him; Yaz

Tshidi, the day I get hold of you.

Me; Nathi. Behave

Him; I'm just saying.

I smack him playfully

with the dishcloth Him;

join me for breakfast

I put the stove on low, because now Mr

teddy Bear wants attention. I sit next to

him and we just enjoy breakfast

together.

Him; has your Dad said anything to

you about the letter Me; no not

yet? I'm sure I'll hear from him

today at Church Him; are you going

to be ok on your own

Me; baby, I've done this for most of my life. I'll be fine

Him; call me if

you need me

Me; I will

Aya wakes up and before you know it we are ready to leave. Nathi is still in Bed. He went back after breakfast. I give him a kiss goodbye.

Him; turn around let

me see you first Me;

Nathi I'm going to be

late

Him; That dress looks good on you

I smile. This man is just everything

Me; thank you baby.

Now can I go? Him;

go.

I give him one more kiss, then Aya and I are off. I drive out and as usual there's one car in front of me and one at the back with me in the middle.

I said to Nathi we need to be discreet, but this is not discreet, but because I don't have time to fight, I drive behind tools, while another 3 guards drive in the BMW behind

We arrive at church just as the service is about to begin. As always the Moloji family is sitting at our designated seating. I greet everyone with one of my fake smiles, then sit next to my mother, since I am single. The rest of my siblings sit behind us

with their spouses. Aya and the rest of the kids are in Sunday school.

The very first prayer, I empty my heart out to God. My fears, my troubles, my weaknesses, everything that makes me unholy I give it to him.

Once done the rest of the service proceeds. Since today is communion the service takes a bit longer than expected, but in honesty I don't notice. I enjoy the singing and the worshipping, so an extra 30 min is nothing.

After the sermon I fetch Aya from Sunday school, and drive with the rest of my family to my family home in DK.

When I arrive most of my siblings have already arrived. I notice a few church members there as well. I park outside. Tools and the other guards park me in.

Once inside, I notice that this isn't your average lunch. The pastor's wife is also here. I roll my eyes because I know that this means I won't be home at the time that I told Nathi. I make note at the back of my mind to send Nathi and sms.

My brothers wives are all in the kitchen helping set up, my sisters are laying the tables. I'm not in the mood for any manual labour, so I hunt down my mother so I can figure out whats going on I find both my parents in their bedroom. I knock and walk in since the door is already open

Me; Ma. Whats going on?

Her; oh, we're just a having some people from church over

Me; ok. Ill leave you to get ready

Her; Matshidiso, before you go. Your father needs to talk to you

She leaves the room and closes the door behind her. I

sit on the bed while my father stands Him; I received

this on Friday

He throws the letter at me. I don't bother reading it

because I already know what it is Him; explain

yourself

Me; Ntate. This is a letter

from ba Ha Khumalo Him;

what is it doing at my house

Me; I'm not sure what you mean Ntate

Him; what does the bible say about

getting married after divorce Me; but

ntate

Him; not a word. This will not happen. You left your husband.

You cannot get married again. You know this, I don't know why

I have to even discuss this with you. The only family I will

recognise as your Husbands family is the Bhele family. So tell

this Khumalo boy to stay far from my house. Are we clear Me;

yes ntate

Him; now wipe those tears

I do as told and walk out with him.

We get downstairs and everything is prepared. The Pastor is

here as well. He says grace and everyone takes their seat.

I only dish up the salads and nothing else. In fact I don't have the
appetite.

I stand up to leave, but my mother takes my hand makes me sit.
I know she means well, but now I'm not
in the right frame of mind to deal with my family.

My father decides that this is the perfect time to discuss the
letter. He explains to the pastor how he
wants nothing to do with the Khumalos's.

I am honestly used to this. My father could tell the whole
world about how much of a failure I am if he could.

Now usually I just sit and pretend to ignore
him, but today I have had it I take my hand
out of my mothers and stand up

Him;

Matshidiso sit

down ME;

Ntate. I am

leaving. Him; I

said sit

Me; why? So you can continue to

embarrass me in front of you people I look

at my family and all of them looked

shocked

Me; since im the black sheep I

might as well leave Him; I said

Me; I won't. I have sat here a million times with you telling me
what an embarrassment I am. Well let

me just give you a highlight of why I left that toxic thing that you call a marriage. I left because I was

being abused Ntate. That man used to treat me like a dog. I spent my marriage being kicked and being raped. By the very man that you basically sold me off to.

My mother and everyone looks at me shocked

Me; so yes. I stayed for years and do you know why? Because I was protecting all of you. He threatened to kill you if I ever left or told anyone. So I stayed. I miscarried 3 times Ntate. All in the name of protecting this pathetic excuse of a family.

I look at my siblings

Me; you all sit here and judge me along with your spouses and yet none of you have ever asked me why I left my marriage. Thabo, Lerato all of you don't even know where I live. Ive been living with a man for 3 weeks and none of you know because none of you care.

Me; yes mother, you precious little girl is living with a man. And guess what I haven't been struck by lightning from God. Oh and Ntate let me make something clear. To you and in fact all of you. I am done. I am done with every single one of you.

I take my bag and leave with my daughter. I drive back home and do my best not to breakdown in front of my child. Luckily Aya is too busy on the iPad to even notice.

When we arrive home, I dish up for Aya. I let her eat in front of the TV so I can go to my room and let out what I've been feeling for the past 10 years.

I sit in the shower and I finally let go. I have never cried this much. Not even when I was being beaten by that monster.

I cry till I have no more tears to cry. I step out the shower, get dressed in my PJ's and go check on Aya

who has now fallen asleep in front of the TV. I put a blanket over her, and think dish up lunch.

I call Nathi and let him know that I'm home. He can sense I'm not ok, and next thing I know he is walking in the door

I hadn't noticed that he had dropped the phone. I've been sitting here for nearly 30 minutes and I hadn't noticed.

Him; Tshidi, what happened.

Now that he is here I feel like crying even more. He takes me upstairs and lays on the bed with my head on his chest.

This is why I love Nathi so much. I don't have to explain anything. He doesn't force it out. He just lets me cry and right now me in his arms is all I want. I'll face the

consequences of my actions at another time 19

My grandmother always used to say to me. Matshdiso when things get tough. Your knees are your weapon.

When things were tough she would sing Ke nale ModisaKe na le modisa Ke tla be ke hloka'ng? so as I wake up from my sleep, I decide I am not going to give other people power over my happiness.

I love Nathi. He loves me. I am going to be with him and nothing anyone says is going to change that. my family will just have to deal

I look around and Nathi is not in bed. The windows in our room are closed, and so are the curtains.

I go to the bathroom to freshen up, then head downstairs. I look down from the staircase, and my heart melts. Aya is fast asleep in Nathi's arms. She has her head on his chest. I find my phone and take a picture.

I don't know what I did right in life for God to give me such a man, but I am never letting go.

I take Aya from him, and he wakes up. I smile, and I take Aya to her room. He follows behind with his sleepy. I tuck Aya in, then go join Nathi

Him; how are
you feeling Me;
much better

Him; come here

He opens his arms to me, and I willing go to him

Him; I don't like
seeing you cry. Me;

I'm sorry

Him; look

at me I

look up

at him

Him; no more crying. You've cried too much. I only ever want to see you with a smile on your face

I nod

Him; do you want to talk
about what happened? Me;
no
Him; ok
Me; aren't you going to ask me what I want
Him; what do
you want Me;
you
Him; baby you
already have me Me;
not fully. I want to be
with you
Nathi gives me a
concerned look
Him; but I thought
Me; forget
what I said.
Him; But
Tshidi

I step back and untie my robe. I don't move my eyes from his.
The robe drops to the floor, I take off my PJ's and stand in front
of him butt Naked.

Nathi stands there not sure what to do. I know he is fighting a
struggle within himself, but I don't care. I'm done waiting
I move closer to him, and start unbuckling his jeans. I feel him
make a sound at the back of his throat, when I free him from
his boxers
All that's left now is his T-Shirt, but I can't take that off because
he's too tall
Him; are you sure about this

Me; yes

I see a glow in his eyes that I've never seen before

He brings me closer, and puts his lips on mine. I feel his hunger for me from his kiss, and that alone is enough to make me go crazy.

He lifts me up and I wrap my legs around him. He makes me lie down face down.

I don't know when he took his T-Shirt off, but when he starts kissing my neck from the back, it's gone. He traces kisses from the back of my neck, all the way down to my num. He does this so slowly and gently.

He turns me around and repeats what he did with my back, only this time in the front. From my neck all the way down to my fountain.

I expect him to stop, but instead he uses his hands to open my legs. I know what he wants to do, because I saw this on the video that Boni showed me, but I'm not too sure about it. I've never had that done to me before.

I close my legs and he
looks up at me Me; ive
never done that
before

He smiles and opens

my legs wider Him;

trust me ?

I nod

He goes down and Oh Lord I nearly died. Feeling his tongue on me was like having ice cream on a hot summer day.

He starts slowly, then goes faster and faster. I want to stop him because I don't know what the hell is happening to my body.

He moves back, but I push him back. I feel my body getting tighter, I try to hold on to whatever the hell is trying to push me over the head, but I can't. I let go and let this feeling take over

When I start to feel normal, I see Nathi smiling at me

Me; what the hell did
you do to me Him; its
my pleasure

He comes on the bed and starts kissing me. He smells like me and somehow that just turns me on even more. I feel the tip of him entering me. I flinch a bit and he stills

Him; are
you ok I
nod

Him; stop tightening
your body. Let go I look
at him

Him; ill be gentle. I promise
I close my eyes and let my body loose. He goes in slowly, I open my eyes and look at him He pushes the rest of him let out a small sound from the back of his throat.

Him; you ready

I nod, and he starts to move slowly. Like he has all the time in the world

I feel it again, that dam feeling. I dig my nails into him, and he starts to move. This time we both go over the edge together, calling each other's name

When we both come back around, he gives me a kiss, and pulls out. We don't say anything to each other. We're both caught up in the afterglow of something that I didn't know existed.

He pulls me closer and I see him smile at me

Him; So you're officially MaKhumalo

Me; what does that mean. We're not married

Him; not on paper. But now we're one. Our souls are entwined, and there is no way I am letting you go. You're mine for good.

I doze off to sleep in his arms, and no, I don't feel guilty. You heard what Nathi said. I am Makhumalo and a piece of paper makes no

difference anymore. 20

I wake up and Nathi isn't in bed. I can hear him talking to someone. I think he's on the phone

I look at my phone and I see its 2am. Who could he be talking to at this hour?

I put my robe in and I find him in one of the spare bedrooms. He's still on the phone so he doesn't hear me walk in. I put on the light and he turns around with his eyes wide.

I mouth "sorry" to him.

I can see that he is more than startled. He drops the call without even saying bye to whoever he was talking to

Him; I'm sorry. I didn't mean to wake you
Me; I woke up and you weren't in bed
Him; I had to deal with something

I can tell by his tone that this is my cue to leave. I want to ask him what's wrong, but I don't. If he needs to talk, he knows where to find me.

I check on Aya, then head back to our room. I pick up our clothes from the floor and put them in the washing basket. I'm out of Pyjamas, since most of my stuff is in my old house, so I put on clean underwear, and put on one of his t-shirts.

He walks in just as I finish putting on his T-shirt. I can just tell that he isn't alright. Whatever has him bothered is written all over his face

We stand there looking at each other. I want to know what to do when he's like this, but I don't know. He just seems like he is on another planet, and I haven't been around him long enough to know what to do

Me; baby...

What's wrong?

He doesn't

answer.

I stand again not knowing if maybe

something is wrong with me. Me;

Nathi?

Silence

Now he is honestly starting to scare me. What the hell is wrong with him?

Me; Nathi. You're scaring me.

He snaps out of whatever world he is in

Him; there's a video

Me; a video?

Him; a video of you and your ex

Me; Nathi. Just tell me what you're going on about

I see him

shrug. Me;

show it to

me

Him; I don't think that's a good idea

I try calm down my

breathing but I fail. Me;

what happens in this

video

Him; Tshidi. I'm sorting it out. By morning the video won't exist

I know Nathi is trying to protect me. But he is making me angry.

If there is a video of me I deserve to see it

Me; Nathi I want to see the video

He gives me that don't you stat look, which I usually back

down from, but this time I won't back down. This is my life

we're talking about

He sees that I'm not backing down, so he gives me his phone

I press play, and instantly wish I hadn't seen it

I see myself begging. Begging Msizi to stop. But he doesn't. He's

on top of me. He bangs into me like I'm nothing. I see myself trying to push him off, but that only turns him on more.

I can't watch anymore, because I know how that story ends. I know it ends with him splashing his semen all over my face, and then him beating me up for not enjoying it

I give Nathi his phone, and run to the bathroom embarrassed. I lock the door and get in the shower. I don't take off Nathi's shirt or my underwear. I feel dirty. Like I am nothing. I want to wash off the shame, but nothing helps.

Nathi's banging the door telling me to open but I don't. I shut him out completely.

I'm on the floor of the shower and the water is now cold. Nathi is sitting on the toilet stool.

I didn't hear or see him come in. He doesn't move. He just sits and lets me get out whatever I needed to get out. All he wanted was for me to know that he was there

He sees me stand, and he does the same. My weave, his shirt everything is sopping wet.

He opens the shower door, and switches off the water. He opens his arms and I don't hesitate.

Him; you're going to get sick. Let's get you out of this.

I take off his T-shirt and my underwear, and he hands me one of his big fluffy robes.

I'm sitting on the bed with him trying my hair again. This reminds me of the day he found me beaten on the floor. This man must be so tired of

having to take care of me. Once I'm dry

and worm, he sides in bed with my head

on his chest Me; I want you to kill him.

Nathi tenses

Him; Tshidi

Me; I don't care where he is hiding. You find him and you kill him Him; what about Aya? That's her father

Me; she's better off without a father than with one that is capable of raping her mother and filming it.

Plus Aya has me and you. She'll be fine Him;

I'll make sure it's done

Me; make sure it's slow and painful. Show him the video when you kill him. I want that to be the last thing he sees before he dies

Him; Tshidi. I don't want you speaking about things like these. Let me handle this

I nod and fall off to sleep. I don't care about Msizi anymore. He dug his own grave. How could he send Nathi an email with such a video? Nxa

I wake up on Monday with Nathi in the shower. Its Aya's last week on holiday and a week before the grand opening of Diva Couture. I have appointments lined up all week. Aya is going to holiday school for the week.

I decide to quickly join Nathi in the shower. I need to be at the Boutique in an hour. He smiles when he see me

Me; why didn't you wake me

Him; I figured you needed sleep after last night. How are you feeling? Me; I'm fine.

You said you were going to deal with it. So

I am fine Him; good.

Me; pass me my shower gel Him;

magic word

Me; please baby

Him; I think you need to get a bit dirtier before you get clean

I smile, and he presses me against the shower door. 20 minutes later we are out the shower getting ready for the week ahead

Him; which tie.

Blue or Black ?

Me; blue

He tosses the black one on the bed.

I run to Aya's room and run her bath, she gets in. I lay out her clothes and rush downstairs to make breakfast.

I make him and Aya bacon, eggs and sausage,
and a spinach smoothie for myself They both
come down and eat. Nathi looks at my smoothie
and makes a face

Me; don't even start

Him; it looks disgusting

Me; just eat your food and
stop worrying about me Him;

hows your day like today

Me; hectic

Him; and you Aya

Her; mommy making me go to this silly holiday school. But I
don't want to go there

Him; do you want to go to the office with me instead

I see Aya's face light up. It's funny how they make decisions
about stuff and I don't even know about it

Him; go fetch

your bag She

runs up the

stairs

Me; do you have any idea how much I paid for that holiday
school

Him; I don't know or care. She doesn't want to go. I hate seeing
her unhappy

Me; Nathi you are spoiling her

Him; isn't that what fathers do

That sentence left me speechless. I was never ready

He gives me a grin and puts his plate in the sink. I

roll my eyes and wash the dishes Him; the maid

comes in today. Is there anything specific that you

want her to do

Me; I didn't realize you had a maid

Him; baby. Being a

bachelor isn't easy Me;

just her normal routine

will be fine Him; good

Aya comes down, and they

both kiss me goodbye Him;

Merc or R8

I don't even know why he asks, he knows I don't like his Audi

Him; no giving the

security team problems

Me; yes daddy

He looks at Aya who

is at the door Him;

Aya eyes closed

She puts her hand over her eyes

He comes closer and gives me a kiss that

leaves me weak at the knees. Him; ill make

you call me daddy tonight.

I giggle and he walks out

Lord this man is everything

I take my bag and head out once I'm done washing the dishes. I know Ausy Alice comes in today, but I still want to leave the place clean.

I spend most of my day in and out the studio. The boutique is finished and look amazing. All we need now is to get the gowns transported there. I don't bother even having lunch. I'm too busy sorting out Rifiloe's designs. I promised her id send them to her by the end of today. So I am under immense pressure.

Mam Mavis and her team a have been working long hours to make sure that the gowns are all perfect.

I've only had to ask them to redo 2 dresses out of the 150. I think that ratio is quite good.

I finish off Rifiloe's range, and I email it to her. She calls me exactly 5 minutes afterwards

Her; I loooove them

Me; I'm glad

Her; so how long

before I have them

Me; give me a week

Her; perfect

Me; did you receive my invite to the opening of the boutique

Her; yes. I RSVP'd and so did all the other ladies

Me; perfect

Her; I was actually calling because we wanted to ask you if you have any cocktail dresses for us to wear

Oh lord

Her; you know. casue we want to wear Diva Couture dresses
Me; will you guys be able to come for fittings
tomorrow. I'll make a dress for all of you Her;
perfect. Now for the other reason I'm calling
Lord there's more

Her; we found
the bitch Me;
the bitch?

Her; yes, the one Mthunzi's
having an affair with Me; oh,
that bitch

Her; yes. Her. We're meeting tomorrow to decide what to do
with her

Me; ok but Rifiloe when you say deal with her you mean?

Her; I mean if we should poison her, or expose her or make
her disappear. We'll decide tomorrow Me; ok I guess

Her; chin up girl. We'd do the same for you

Me; I know. But I've got to run. You ladies come over tomorrow
at 11; 00, then we can do lunch and
discuss

the bitch

Her;
sharp

I wrap up the conversation, and shake my head. I don't know
what the heck these woman plan on doing, but I know I will
definitely be a part of it.

I leave the Studio and head home. I haven't had a chance to speak to either Aya or Nathi today, but luckily I see his car in the drive way so I know their home. I park the car, and walk in to find rose petals and candles everywhere. There's a sign on the fridge that says follow the candles. I smile and do as told. The candles lead me outside to the veranda, where I find Nathi on one knee with a ring in his hand. He doesn't say anything. Instead Aya says to

Her; Mommy, Uncle Nathi wants you to marry him,

I smile at her and wipe away a tear from my eye. I nod, because I am too shocked to speak.

I puts the most beautiful ring on my finger, and stands to give me a hug. He wipes away tears from my eyes.

Him; I love you.

I put my head on his chest. He smells good

He opens his arms and Aya joins us.. I am complete. What else in the world can a woman ask for? We break the hug and Aya shows me a white gold bracelet that Nathi bought him. It has small little diamonds on it. But what catches me off guard is the message engraved in it that reads "daddy's little girl"

I think about Nathi's timing and how perfect it is. I've never thought even for a minute that I could be so happy. I thought after watching the video he would probably want to slow down, but instead here I am with a beautiful platinum 5 carat square cut diamond ring on my finger. Then people say God

doesn't exist. I am living proof and that for me is enough

21

After having dinner and putting Aya to bed, nathi and I spent hours making love. I kept thinking we were done, but he would wake me up and somehow my body would respond.

By 3am I was done. 4 rounds is no child's play, plus have a jam packed day ahead of me. If Nathi wantes more he would have to sort himself out.

I lay in his arms and now I can't seem to fall asleep. I just keep on looking at this rock on finger.

Him; do

you like it

Me; love it

Him; I designed it myself

Me; it's perfect

Him; I'm glad you like it

Me; baby you could've given me a ring from a lucky packet and I would've still loved it.

Him; which is why I love you Tshidi. You aren't fazed by all of this. You dissed my car like it was some lucky packet toy. I knew then that for you money isn't important.

Me; So I'm going to officially become Mrs Khumalo

Him; the sooner the better. I want you to get rid of that horrid Surname that belongs to your ex

Me; yah, me too. But I don't know about soon. I mean we still need to do so much first

Him; like

Me; well, I need to decide what I'm going to do with my house for one Him; property is always a good investment. I would suggest you keep it Me; oh

Him; Baby, say what's on your mind

Me; well, it's just that I was hoping I could sell the house, and we could use some of the money to deposit a new house

Him; so you don't want to live here

Me; It's just that, this was your home with

Thandiwe. I want us to have our own home Him; Ok.

As long as you find the house, I won't have time to do it

Me; price

range?

Him; Non

existent

Me; Nathi, don't ever say that to a woman. It's a dangerous phrase. Worse than dropping a bomb Him; (chuckles) I'm

serious. As long as you love it. You can have it

Me; oh ok

Waking up with a rock on my finger makes me nervous. What if I lose it?

Nathi and Aya have already left for work. I'm sitting in the bedroom, finishing off designs for the ladies cocktails dresses. Luckily enough I finish them just in time to meet with them at my studio.

When I arrive the ladies are already waiting for me. I greet them and we get to doing measurements and picking material. Once done I hand everything over to Ausy Mavis, and we leave for lunch.

As always the restaurant is empty. I don't bother asking anymore because I know the answer.

Fifi; so ladies. We need to decide what we are going to do with this bitch Busi; I say we

kill her

Boni; where's the fun in that

Dourine; I say we poison her

I look at these crazy motherfuckers

Me; or we just tell her to back off. No need for extreme things Dourine;

where does she usually meet with

Mthunzi

Busi; at the southern sun

hotel in sandton Fifi;

what time?

Busi; at around midday. In fact I'm pretty sure they are together as we speak

Fifi; come;

She takes out a few R100 notes and leaves them on the table Me; where

are you going

Her; we are going to the southern sun hotel baby

I look at them and I don't stand

They all turn and look at

Me; guys but is this a good idea mara?

Fifi; Tshidi, if you were in Busi's shoes what would you do

Me; kill

the bitch

Her;

exactly

I stand up and off we go to sandton. We arrive at the hotel and the plan is to find a room opposite theirs, where we can wait for them to finish.

We have tipped one of the cleaners with hefty money to try stopping the bitch. We told her to tell her that she left something behind. That way we can pounce on her

On cue, Mthunzi leaves with his mistress. A few minutes later she is walking back into the room with the cleaner.

Fifi walks out our room and we all follow. We close the door and this looks at us shocked

We all look at her as though we want to eat her alive. I sometimes don't understand men. How do you cheat with a woman that's not even a fraction of what your wife looks like?

Busi; I am going to give you this one warning. Stay the fuck away from my husband Her; what. Wait.

Who are you guys?

Fifi; we are about to become

your worst nightmare. Boni steps

forward and without warning

she slaps her.

I hold onto Boni because I can see that we are all going to end

up in jail if this continues.

The girl sits on the bed and starts crying. We turn around and leave her there . As we walk out the passage, Mthunzi comes out the lift

Shit Shit Shit

He looks at us shocked

Him; what are you guys doing here?

We all stand there in silence. This wasn't part of the plan. Not at all

Him: Busi, I'm

talking to you

She doesn't

answer

Me; we got lost. We're looking for the restaurant. But apparently it's on the other side of the building

Him; Nkosinathi booked a restaurant

in Rosebank no in Sandton Shit

His stupid skank comes walking out

the room. She is still crying He looks at

her then at us and I see him turn Red

with anger. Him; all of you get in your

cars and drive home.

He talks Busi's hand, but she lets go and holds onto mine. Ok I wasn't expecting that, and neither was he

Him; Busisiwe, lets go

Her; I'm not going anywhere with you. Take your stupid whore and leave me alone

Him; Busi

Her; no Mthunzi. Take her. Take her and be with her. I'm done with you. After everything I've done. This is the thanks I get

I see Mthunzi change
from anger to fear. Him;

Baby

She pulls me and I have no choice but to follow, and so do the rest of the girls

Her; Tshidi, can I stay at your place for the night? I just need to figure out what to do
Me; you can stay as long as you want. Come

We all get in our cars and drive to my place. I open wine and we all sit and indulge.

Busi looks heart broken. She hasn't stopped crying since we left the hotel. Things didn't quite turn out the way we planned. But I'm just glad that we are here and she doesn't have to be alone

Nathi arrives and I already know that he is pissed. Aya walks up to her room after greeting everyone. He looks at all of us and shakes his head.

Him; Tshidi a word

I put down my wine, and go
meet him in our room. Me; hey
baby

Him; don't hey baby me.

What the hell Tshidi Me;

baby it's not what it seems

Him; Tshidi, I won't have you in some sorority shit. The point of you making friends with these ladies was

not for you to bully people. Did you for a second think

about the consequences of your actions Me; my actions?

Nathi Mthunzi was cheating on her. You should be shouting

at him and not at me Him; explain one thing to me Tshidi.

Just one. What the hell does that have to do with you?

I look at him shocked

Me; Nathi she's my friend

Him; I won't have my wife associated with things like this. Do you have any idea what that does for my

reputa

tion?

Me;

Nathi

He walks out and I am left feeling confused. He should be

shouting at Mthunzi, not at me mxm I go back downstairs

and find all the husbands there

Shit

I sit next to Fifi and we all continue in silence

Siya; so I hear you all went on

some ghetto trip today Fifi; Siya

Him; shut up

I look at him shocked. I Nathi is mad but I fucking dare him to tell me to shut up. ill fucking kill him

Luzuko; what you did today wasn't right. You ladies can't go around beating people

Me; people? She was sleeping with Luzuko

Nathi; and again I ask you why that's any of your business

Dourine; Busi is our friend. If she hurts we all hurt Hlokes; so is she married to Luzuko or To Mthunzi
Me; does it matter?

Boni; what I don't understand is how you think this is right. Is it because you're all doing the same thing

I hear the room immediately get silent. Everyone is looking at their spouse.

Siya; Ok. Can we all just agree not to have this happen again. We're in the middle of something huge, business wise. We cannot have you ladies doing things like this.

Busi; that's all you all care about. Business. The fucking force. I have begged you Mthunzi to make time for us. And you kept telling me about this stupid business deal and yet you have time for that tramp

Me; yah, I don't get what you saw in her. She isn't even good looking

Nathi gives me a look

The girls burst out laughing

Busi; Tshidi, can you show me to my room? Me; sure

Busi; Nathi you might as well start drafting divorce papers for

your friend. I'm done fighting

We all look at her.

She takes my hand and I show her to her room. I want to sit with her but she tells me she wants space, so I let her be.

When I come back down, everyone is getting ready to leave.

Mthunzi hangs around and even tries to

speak to Busi but she's having none of it. He has no choice but to let her be.

Nathi walks him out. And comes back while I'm making dinner.

He totally ignores me, and I just continue

with what I'm doing. Once I'm done cooking I take Aya's food

up to her room. I watch her eat and she tells me all about her

day at Nathi's office. She falls asleep in my arms, and I give

her a kiss goodnight.

I walk passed the room that Busi is staying in and I can hear soft

cries. I decide to leave her alone. I know

all about needing space. So instead I

go down to Nathi's office. I don't

knock, I just walk in

Him; not now

Is he honestly dismissing me?

I don't move

Him; Tshidi I said not now

I don't move

Him; Tshidi I swear to God if you don't leave now I am going to

Me; what? Nathi what are you going to do

He stands up and I know I shouldn't've asked him that question

Him; pick a

door WTF is

talking

about Door

one or Two

Me; Nathi

Him; pick a

damn door

ME; ok. One

Him; take off

your clothes

Me; what

Him; Now

I don't dare

I can see the bulge in his pants getting bigger. He stands in front of me and basically rips my shirt dress down the middle

Fuck

Me; baby, that was my favourite dress

I look in his eyes and see nothing but lust.

Him; you've been a naughty girl

Me; Nathi

He undoes my Bra in one swift move

Shit why am I turned

on right now Him;
turn around

I don't even ask why. I just turn around. Next thing I feel a
throbbing pain on my left butt cheek Shit

I try turn around but before I know there's another one on my
right..

Fuck

Before I can compose myself he puts a finger in
me and starts massaging my C**T I swear I nearly
faint

Him; do you like that

I nod, because I don't know what else
to do. I am dripping wet. (Don't ask
why. I also don't know why)

he stops and I flinch. I
want him back there Me;
Nathi

I don't even finish and I feel another slap on my butt

Dammit

I can't say that its painful, I know what its like to be beaten and well this isn't that. This is a mixture of pain and pleasure and somehow its making me more and more crazy

I wait and think he will enter me but he doesn't. So I turn around and look at him and find him back at his

desk

WTF

Me; Nathi you

cant be serious

Silence

Baby please

Him;

please

what Me; I

need you

Him;

(chuckles)

I move closer to him but he doesn't even look at me. His eyes are on his laptop.

Me; Nathi

Him; tell me what you want

Me; I want you to

make live to me Him;

that's not happening
today Me; and why
the hell not
Him; I don't want to make love to you Tshidi.

I want to fuck you brainless Ok I wasn't

expecting that

Me; then why don't you
Him; you don't know what you're saying Tshidi

I know that I don't take matters into my own hands I am never getting the release that I so desperately need. So I close his laptop and put it on the floor. I slide all the papers on his desk to the floor, then pull his chair back.

If he won't give me what I want, then I'll take it.

He doesn't move. I unzip his jeans and try free his P***s but he is sitting and won't move

I look at him and I see him smile. He lifts his bum and I am able to pull down his briefs and jeans at the same time

Him; I'm naked, what now

Me; now I take whats mine

Him; Tshidi, if you do this I won't be responsible for what I do

I sit on his lap, and slowly put him inside me. I lower myself till he is totally in.

I feel him growl and start to move. I've never done this but the sounds coming from him make me think that I am doing the right thing.

I move faster and faster, till he stands with me still on him.

He puts me down gently and makes me lean on the table as he

takes me from behind.

The chemistry of him banging into me and him spanking me at the same time, sends me into the most intense orgasm of my life. He soon follows and we both take a moment to come back to earth

Him; you are
fucking crazy

Me; its my
pleasure

He spans me one more time, then pulls out
I put my clothes on and leave him in his office. I know he is still going to give me a massive lecture. But for now we're cool and that's all that matters

22

Him: Tshidi wake up.

We've got to go Me:

mhmm ?

Him: Tshidi vuka maan

Me: Nathi I swear I'll flipping kill you

Him: Baby. Come one we

have to get going Me:

going? Going where Nathi

(yawn) Him: we need to

go to Siya's house

I look at my watch and notice that it's on 5am

Me: why the hell would I need to be at Rifiloe's house at this hour?

Him: I'll explain when we get there. Get up

I look up at this crazy man in front of me and I see that he's fully dressed and smells like shower gel and cologne

I cover my head with the duvet. He's crazy if he thinks I'm going to someone's house at this hour. He kept me up all night and now he wants us to visit. Never

Him: Tshidi

Me: ha ana Nathi maan. If you want to go to their house, then go. I want to sleep

He doesn't bother responding. Instead he pulls the duvet off me and throws it on the floor Him: get up.

Now

I get up annoyed. Like really, why the heck?

Him: you have 5 minutes to shower and get dressed

I make the bed, then jump in the shower. I'm not even in there for 2 minutes, and already he is opening the shower door telling me to come out.

Nxa,

I finish up, and get dressed.

Him: Busi and Aya are already up and ready. Meet me downstairs.

He winks at me playfully and leaves.

I'm dressed in minutes. I don't bother to even do my makeup. I just brush my hair and tie it up, I don't even get to make breakfast. Mxm

I don't get to ask Nathi about why we are going to Rifiloe's house so damn early because he's been on the damn phi e the e tire ride there.

We are the last to arrive at Rifiloe house and we are shown to The dining room, where breakfast is being served.

Aya goes to the other children, while we all sit and wait for answers. I'm glad I'm not the only one who is annoyed. All of us ladies are asking each other what's going on.

Busi sits next to me, and doesn't even acknowledge Mthunzi The guys come into the dining room and all of them sit next to their spouse. Except for Siya, he remains standing.

I look up at Nathi and he just smiles

I roll my eyes at him because I'm supposed to be sleeping, not having an awkward breakfast this early

Siya: Hi everyone. Firstly ladies let me apologise, for dragging you out of bed so early. We didn't have much of a choice. We didn't plan on going public with this yet, but due to unforeseen circumstances we have to act quickly

We all look at each other wondering what the hell he is talking about

Siya: so as you ladies know, that a few years ago I quit the force. The reason was because I wanted to spend time with

my family. We had completed the Lesotho deal and that was my cue to retire.

Hlokes took over and for about a year I returned to my business. Even though I was now a normal citizen I kept tabs on the merging of S.A. and Lesotho and well as you know things didn't go great and that bothered me. Funds weren't being handled right. The rand dropped the lowest and well our country is pretty much going down So the guys and got together and we were trying to find ways to make things easier, since we were the ones that made the Lesotho deal happen.

I for one was nearly killed. Hlokes and Boni nearly divorced, Rifiloe nearly killed me when she found out about me actually being alive. We all just went through so much for that deal, and then to have money hungry politicians take advantage of the situation made us sick to our stomach.

So after meeting for hours and trying to find solutions, we decided that we would need to put an end to the corruption, and the only way how is to get into politics.

I look at Nathi, and I see that this isn't a joke. These guys are dead serious

Siya: we're starting a political party that only consists of the 5 of us currently. As elections approach we want to make sure we win. We've always fought for this country in the shadows. We would go into dangerous places in the name of our country, while the president builds himself mansion after mansion. While ministers steal from the very people that we were trying to keep safe.

We all lost so much. Rifiloe lost her parents, Nathi lost his wife, Hlokes, and well Hlokes lost Rifiloe. But

we won't get into that.

We all burst out laughing

Siya: I'm sure you all get what I'm trying to say.

We have had to make sacrifices so that the people of this country could sleep at night. And yet we have ministers who don't do what's right. Ministers who feed off the poor, and that, that is something that needs to come to an end. And who better than us to put a stop to all this?

We have the resources. We're all successful on our own. We don't want government's money. Instead we want to make sure that things change. Not just for S.A. but for Lesotho as well. We want to make the integration easier.

It was our vision from the begging, I just don't know why I thought our government could handle it.

We look at each other in complete shock. I know this sounds right, but what the hell. No one says anything.

We're all still in disbelief

Nathi stands up

Him: so this is the structure of how everything is going to work. The end goal is to have Siya become president. He has been in the force for so long, that it only makes sense to have him lead the very county he fought for. Including its very secrets.

We had asked Hlokes to be vice president but he declined. Hlokes will be in charge of the health care department. He has a passion for medicine and that's where he wants to focus.

Mthunzi will be our finance minister. As you all know he is

our go to for all things numbers. He knows the country's books/ financial state better than anyone. So who else would we trust but him

Luzoko will be in charge of the force. Military, police and everything else that has to do with the safety of this country

And lastly I would become vice president. I'd handle the daily running of pretty much everything put together. Under Siya's orders

The guys look at us expecting us to say something. But nothing we are all trying to process what they just said.

After a long silence, I hear

Boni clear her throat Her: is

it April?

We all look at her

Her: because this shit has to be an April's fool's joke. Or

maybe, maybe we are being punked No one responds.

Dourine: and you guys didn't think to discuss this with us first

Luzuko: we're discussing it now aren't we?

Busi: no. You guys are telling us. You're not asking our opinions. You're telling us what you've already concluded. As always there is no consideration of anybody else but yourselves

Mthunzi: no baby it's not like that.

She gives him a look, and he doesn't even finish his sentence

Rifiloe: you know what I fail to understand is how you guys can be so selfish. You all know what we went through when you were in the force. And now again you want to mess with fucking government. Siya you promised. You promised you wouldn't go into something that would take you away from us

Siya: Rifiloe

Fifi: do you have any idea how difficult it's going to be for your children? They are going to go back to not seeing their father's. We are going to hardly see you guys.

Dourine: how about you start saving your families first? Before playing superheroes to the county?

The guys all look at each other. I Don't really have much to say about the matter. Honestly I just met Nathi. I can't go telling him what to do with his career.

Siya: ladies. I know this is overwhelming. But we don't have time to debate this. The press conference is at 1pm today, and we expect all of you there by our sides. We are going to need you now more than ever.

Rifiloe: I need a drink. I can't deal with this shit. Honestly Siya. She gets up and leaves the room. Siya follows her.

Boni is straight up ignoring Hlokes, dourine and Luzuko are giving each other stares of death, while Busi and Mthunzi sit awkwardly.

I take Nathi's hand in mine. I don't know what the hell this

entails, but I can't really be mad at him. If he wants to do this then as his woman I need to support him.

Rifiloe and Siya come back after what feels like a decade.

Siya; Ladies. I know that this all seems like a lot, and I won't lie. It's a lot. Yes, we won't always have time for you, but what are we without you? This isn't about being power hungry. Or wanting to take over, it's about our children.

What kind of life will they have if we have to move them to other countries, just so they can have a good education?

I want to be able to raise my child here in South Africa, but with the rate in which things are going that's not going to happen.

Now at least we have the option of moving overseas should things not work out. But what about our families? What about our ancestors, who do we leave our aunts and uncles with?

Siya; the press conference is at 1pm. As I said earlier, we expect all of you there. You won't have to say anything. But you need to be there.

Well, im guessing by the silence in the room, we all get the picture. This isn't up for discussion.

With that we all leave. Aya and Olwetho insists on Aya staying and playing with Olwetho for the day, and somehow Mthunzi convinces Busi to come home with him.

So it's just me and my muntu in the car.

Him; so how do you feel about this whole thing Me; I don't actually know. It all just seems surreal Him; You up for the challenge

Me; what challenge? This isn't about me. It's about you Him; yes. But there's more to that. The moment this announcement is made, the media will go into a frenzy. They will go through our lives with a fine comb.

Me; how far are you with Msizi?

Him; don't worry yourself about that. I've handled it Me; handled as in....

Him; leave it alone Tshidi. It's been handled

Me; is this what you want? This political

career. Is this your dream? He looks at

me and I see him weighing his answer

Him; yes

Me; then I will support you. Just promise me it won't drive a wedge between us. Through everything promise me we will still be us

He takes my hand into his and

kisses the back of it Him; I

promise

I look at him and smile. I won't let him see my fears. I know for a fact that this new venture of his isn't child's play. I just hope that we are strong enough to handle the hurdles that are about to be thrown at us.

23

The moment we walk through the doors, I see cameras clicking. Nathi joins the guys on the podium, and I sit with the ladies. To outsiders we look like the perfect wives. We are immaculately dressed. Hair makeup, Nails on point. But we know that in only a few minutes our lives are about to change.

No one sees Busi's red eyes from crying about Mthunzi's affair. No one sees my fears because I have plastered a fake smile on my face. No one sees anything. To them we are living the dream. If only they knew

I see the noise quieten down and Nathi starts with the press release. My heart starts to race against itself.

He explains everything in detail. From the plan, to the name of the party, to financing all the way to the motto. To be honest I was bored out of my mind. This politics what what is not for me, but as Nathi said, I have to smile and hope for the best. Exactly an hour later, Nathi is done. I think we are about to leave. But then a question and answer session begins.

Lord help me

The questions from the reporters go back and forth. They ask they answer. I hardly pay attention though, until one reporter asks about what we thought “wives” thought about all this

Immediately the focus shifts from them to us. The next thing, I see reporters gives Rifiloe a microphone.

She looks at us. I smile and nod at her. You can see that she isn’t interested in all this and that worries me. What If she decides to tell the truth?

Her; (clears throat) Well, as you can imagine, it’s not every day your husband comes home and tells you that he plans on becoming president. At first I was apprehensive. In fact I think we all were

She looks at us and I see her eyes get glossy. She takes a deep breath

Her; but when you love someone like we love our husbands, it’s your duty as a wife to support them. I think I speak for all of us ladies when I say that we are standing by them and we know that they will not just make us proud, but South Africa as a whole.

She gives the microphone back, and we all let out the breath that we were all holding. Luckily Nathi jumps in and everyone turns their attention back them

Phew

We're led out of the press room, and already there are reporters standing by our cars. Tools moves them aside, but it takes us forever to get out the parking lot.

Ok, this isn't exactly great

Nathi undoes his suit jacket, and looks out the window frustrated,

Me; it's going to be fine

Him; I know but I just worry. This has opened the door to our entire life. You and Aya, are going to be monitored left right and centre. I just wish it doesn't mess her up in the long run.

I put my head on his shoulder

Me; we will be ok. As long as we have

each other, we will be fine He looks

down and kisses the top of my head.

Him; let's get married

Me; Nathi we are engaged. That means we are getting married

Him; no as in now. Let's go get married

I look up at him and I see him smile

Him; I want you as Mrs Khumalo before sundown

Me; Nathi..... I.....

Him; please baby. I just need this. I want
to know that you are mine Mel But I am
Him; yes, but you still have his surname

I look up and I see fear in his eyes.

Me; Nathi what's wrong

Him; nothing

Me; baby. I can see there's more to this. Tell me

Him; I just don't want to lose

you because of all this Me;

Nathi. You think I'm going to

leave you

Him; Tshidi, why would you stay, when you just saw how difficult
it us just to leave a parking lot. Things

have changed baby. I just want to know that you will stay. That
you won't leave

So this is how he feels

Me; and the only way for you to believe that I'm in this for
the rest of my life is by me marrying you today

Him; yes

I roll my eyes

Me; what am I going

to do with you Him; is

that a yes

Me; yes. If that means you will

stop moping around He kisses

my hand

He taps tools on the shoulder, and I see us make a U-Turn. We

head to Home Affairs in Randburg. Luckily he knows people there, so an hour later I am Mrs Khumalo.

Lord only knows what I have let myself into. All I know is I love him, and I want to be with him.

We head home as Husband and wife. I spent the day with him instead of going to the studio... he switched off his phone and I switched off mine. Our afternoon is all about us. We made love over and over. I didn't even bother getting dressed. I spent the day naked in his arms. I don't know why, but I can feel that this isn't going to last long. Soon he will be a person belonging to the people. So for now I take it all, I take all of him.

The moment my life changed. That moment was the moment Nathi announced this political party of theirs. Since then I have spent the week followed by press, and my security details. Aya is back at school and for some reason she couldn't be even bothered by all the extra attention. She has made friends with her security detail. That alone makes it easier for me to deal with all this.

We've had to organise with her school that the security team pick her up from the school parking lot, because of all the pictures that are being taken. We try keeping her away from the limelight as much as possible.

About a week ago there was photo of her and Nathi in the papers, and he flipping lost it. He even threatened to sue the newspaper for having his daughter on the front page. I had to calm him down

because he was on the verge of killing tools and his team. He even fired them, but I was having none of it. Aya and I were fond of the team.

I have found a house that we moved into. Let me rephrase that, Rifiloe saw that the house next to her's was up for sale. I saw it and liked it, and we bought it.

It's a bit too big for us since it's just the three of us, but Nathi insisted that we take it. He says it's because I like it, but I know it's because he can just walk over to Siya, should they need to discuss anything.

My Boutique opening was a success. I've had to double up staff due to the demand. The ladies looked great in their dresses and the guys looked dapper in their suits.

Everything has been going well. The guys have literally taken over the political game, just as they predicated. Only problem is time. There is not even close to being enough. Nathi sometimes works throughout the night. He's been overseas 9 times in the last 3 months.

I've done my best to be the perfect wife. I haven't even bothered to ask him about the wedding, because I can see that that is the last thing on his mind at the moment.

I haven't seen or heard from my family, since that horrible day I told them I was done. None of them reached out and I haven't bothered to either. I think it's best left alone. My family is Aya and Nathi, and that's all that matters.

Today like any other day, I wake up and Nathi isn't in bed. I

know he came home last night because his suit from yesterday is on the couch in our room.

I take a shower, and head downstairs to make breakfast for Aya. She and Olwetho have become the best of friends in the past months. So much so that Olwetho insisted on changing schools.

Mam Alice has become our fulltime help. She is honestly a God sent. There was no way I was going to be able to manage with the size of this house. Its nearly double Nathi's old one.

Aya leaves, and I am left start my designs. I'm starting to really miss having Nathi home. We haven't had dinner together for over a week. So I decide to take lunch over to their offices. Maybe I can get 15 minutes from him. Even if it is just to eat.

I pack a picnic basket with some of his favourite foods and decide to dress up. He normally sees me in shorts and pj's because of the times that he comes home, maybe it's time I make an effort. I put on my sexy black lingerie, and wear a short dress over it with my black heels to match.

I've only been to their offices in parktown once. It's a building Mthunzi insisted on buying for their party. Each of the guys work from here and also somehow manage to run their businesses on the side.

I park at my designated parking, and head to my husband's side of the building.

I walk through reception and head straight to his office. When I get to his floor his PA is out front. Her name is Dominique. I'm not sure how I feel about her. But that's a subject for another day

She looks up when she sees me coming and she kind of smiles

Her: Mrs Khumalo. Hello

Me: Hi Dominique.

How are you Her:

busy as ever

Me: well. That's a good thing. Is my husband in?

Her: I'm sorry mam I didn't realize

you had an appointment see why I

say I'm not fond of her. Nxa

Me: is he in

yes or no.

Her: yes

mam he is

Me: Hold his calls for the next hour, and

make sure we aren't interrupted She gives a

weird look, but then quickly returns to her

fake smile

Her: yes of course mam

I leave her there and walk to Nathi's office. He's on the phone when I walk in. I see he is surprised to see me.

I wink at him and he continues with his call.

I spread the contents of my basket on his side table.

Then I make sure that I lock the door, because I don't want someone walking in. While I'm getting my groove on.

I can tell he is going to be a while on the phone and somehow I get an idea.

I stand in front of him and start unbuttoning my dress. One button at a time. At first he doesn't realize what I'm doing, but when my bra starts showing, I see his eyes turn crazy with lust. I don't stop. I unbutton the rest of my dress and put it on his table.

I take a step towards him and I see him flinch. He gives me a look that's, meant to scare me, but I don't stop, knows he doesn't scare me.

I want to sit on him and take what I want, but decide to give him a bit of a show. I take off my bra and throw it at him.

He catches it and smiles his nervous smile

He takes my bra and smells it. All the while trying to carry out his conversation on his phone

I take his free hand and place it on my left breast. He squeezes it gently and I let out a sound at the back of my throat,

I stop his hand a bit, and move it lower and lower till it gets to my p***y. He moves his fingers and plays with my c**t

I try hard not to make a sound, but the feeling of his fingers circling my honeypot takes me to another world. But then he suddenly stops, and I'm left wanting more

I open my eyes and see he has on one of his mischievous smile. As he carries on talking to potential investor

I don't let him win though, because we'll, I'm supposed to be in charge

So I do the first thing that comes to mind. I get on my knees, he tries to move back when he realises what I'm about to do, but I've already got him in my hand.

He is hard and smooth.

In the 4 months that we've been together, I have never had an opportunity to do this. Boni told me about how important it is so here I am on my knees.

He shakes his head and gives me a warning look, but I don't pay attention. Instead I lick the very tip of his manhood.

He teases up immediately

I lick him again, but this time all the way down his manhood and back. He keeps trying to move, but I continue. I start sucking and he goes crazy. He can't move because well if he does, I'm going to bite him.

So he has no choice but to tell his so called investor that he will call him back.

He holds me by my hair, while he moans as I pleasure him. I don't know why, but I feel as powerful, hearing him moaning and groaning in my mouth. I know he is close, so I put him more inside. Thankfully I don't gag. I feel him at the back of my throat, he releases calling my name. I swallow every last drop of him, then stand up and get dressed. I can tell he wants more but I'm not giving it to him. He leans in and stops my hand from buttoning up my dress.

Him; I want more

Me; if you do, then you will be home tonight and I might just

give you what you want

Him; baby you can't leave me hanging

Me; hanging. You just came mos

Him; yes, but you know that is never enough. I need to feel me

Me; in that case I'll see you tonight. 8pm sharp

I step back and he lets

go reluctantly. Him;

what about lunch

Me; I'm full. Enjoy.

I make sure I'm decent, first. I don't want to just walk out
looking like I've just been fucked. When I haven't

Me; are you going to walk me out

He fixes his pants, and walks towards me. I turn around to

unlock the door but he stops my hand His mouth is on the

back of my ear. He breathes into my ear

Him; I love you

I breathe in as I feel my

body get Goosebumps Me; I

love you more

He lets go of my hand and I unlock the door. I turn around and give him a kiss just to annoy Dominique.

Me; I'll see you later

I turn to leave and he spans me. I blush as he walks me out the building.

Him; Give Aya a kiss from me. I'll be home by 8
Me; ok
Him; Tshidi

before you go. I

look up at him

Him; thank you. For being you. I know I haven't had time to concentrate on us. Hell, we didn't even have a honeymoon, but not once have I heard you complain. I'll make it up to you. I promise

I smile and give him a kiss as I leave.

To be honest it's not easy not having Nathi home. I love him and I miss him, but I don't want to be a burden on him. He is a man that is dedicated to his job, and I will have to be the wife by his side. It's not easy, but hey nothing in life is easy.

24

I leave Nathi's offices and pass by the boutique, I'm glad to see that it's still buzzing. It's that time of year again where high school girls are looking for dresses for their matric dance. I do what needs to be done, then head out to see the ladies for a drink at Dourine's house.

The girls are already there, so just

park and let myself in. Boni; Mara
Tshidi, why are you forever late
Me; askies maan ladies, I had to
go past the boutique Boni; I
forget you have a job
Me; (chuckles)
Dourine; tell us how married life is treating you

I blush

Me; we're good.

Boni; Tshidi, give us

some details Me;

details on

Busi; we want to know about

(clears throat) your sex life Me; I

need a glass of wine first

Rifiloe rushes to my aid

and I gulp down Boni;

well

Me; well its good.

Really good Busi;

good as in

Me; as in I can't get enough

Fifi; well at least you

are getting some. We

all look at her

Dourine; what do you mean

Fifi; I haven't seen Siya in forever.

Boni; but Sistas, cant you wait up for him maybe

Fifi; no. sometimes I feel like he

might be having an affair Me; I

doubt it. That man loves you to

bits

Fifi; then how do you explain the long nights?

Busi; Rifiloe. They're all busy. Mthunzi has been flipping bound to that office of his.

Me; do you know how stupid we all sound? So what our men work. Let them work. Are we honestly going to mope around because of them working?

Fifi; but Tshidi

Me; but what? Does Siya not provide for you? Does he not do everything in his power to make sure that you have everything you need?

Boni; yes Tshidi but

Me; and wena Boni Hlokes didn't take the Vice presidency position because he wanted to be home with you and Owami. Is that not proof that he loves you

We all sit here and complain. But this is who we are married to. These men are working on their dreams. They have empires that they have built for us. But what are we doing?

We ladies, we are drinking wine in the middle of the day. We shop, and eat and take care of babies as if we have nothing better to do.

Me; Fifi, what happened to the job that you were supposed to start at over a month ago? Siya didn't let

you take it

And me. I'm supposed to open another Boutique but Nathi thinks it's a bad idea due to time restraints.

So instead of us moaning, how about we stand up for ourselves. Start businesses, keep ourselves busy. I'm tired of being the so called future second lady of SA. Did you see what SA news called us? They called us the housewives. Imagine us as housewives. Fifi you have a Bcom, you were a CFO of a company. And you Boni? You a qualified social worker why can't we do something for ourselves?

They all look at me and seem to be thinking about what I said.

Buis; that's true

Boni; so you think that the busier we are the less we will notice that they aren't around

Me; yes. Basically

Dourine; maybe you're right

Fifi; maybe

Me; Fifi, you are about to be first Lady of this country. Do stuff that first ladies do Fifi; like giving back

Me; yes,.

Boni; maybe you could open some sort of NGO
Me; exactly

Busi; can I suggest we all go on vacation before we do this work thing. I need a week on the beach first, then we all come back and play the first wives club

Me; ill drink to that

We all raise our glasses and go back to talking about the one

topic that we all agree on. Sex

When I get home after meeting the girls, I start making dinner. Aya is spending the night at Rifiloe's house. So it will be just me and Nathi for the night

After dinner I go upstairs to take a shower. It's already after 8pm. I'm tempted to call him and asked where he is but I decide against it. I don't want to seem like I'm nagging I take a shower, put on my sexy negligee and wait. I wait and wait for hours, but Nathi dololo I look at the time and it's after 10pm, and now I am pissed. Pissed beyond. Nxa

So I put my worm gown on and go to sleep. Well, actually I try sleeping.

He comes home an hour after I tried sleeping. He tries to give me a kiss and I nearly slap the shit out of him.

Him; baby I'm sorry. I got held up with Siya

I keep quite because I don't want to get into it.

Him; Tshidi

Lord help me not murder my husband tonight. Please lord Me;

Nathi. Sleep

Him; I want us to

have dinner Me;

not happening

Him; why

Me; its nearly

midnight Him;

but baby

Me; Nathi. Do you

value your life? He

better not laugh

Him; Baby I'm sorry

Me; ok

I put the duvet over my head, but being the idiot that he is he decides to move the duvet. He has a death wish

Me;

Nathi

Him;

baby

Me; let me sleep. for both

our sake. Let me sleep He

looks at me and knows that I

am pissed

Him; Tshidi, I can see you are upset. Talk to me

Me; talk to you? I spoke to you earlier today and you said you were coming home at 8. You haven't been

home at 8 since this stupid

campaign started Him; but

Baby

Me; but nothing. Have I not supported you? have I been nagging you to be home more? No I haven't, and do you know why? Because I don't want to be a nagging wife. I want to support you but when I ask you to be home a certain time I expect you to be home.

Him; baby I'm sorry. its just that things got hectic. Siya arrived and our meeting ran over. Dominique ended up ordering us dinner

You know I was just acting out because I wanted Nathi to see that I also needed him. I never thought he would mention that things name. that just about drove me the edge

Me; so you didn't come home because

you were with Dominique He looks at

me like I've lost my mind

Him; Tshidi how the

Me; don't. ok. Instead of being here, you were with her

Him; what do you mean with her? She just ordered us dinner

Me; why didn't you phone me? You could've called me to let me know that your precious Dominique

was feeding you instead of having me

slave over the stove for hours Him; Tshidi

she is my assistant

Me; yah she seems to be assisting you quite a lot

Him; I can't deal with you when you're like this

He stands up to leave and I put my duvet back on. Nxa

I know he's mad and well so am I. He has no regards for my feelings

I don't know if Nathi came back to bed last night because I fell asleep. I wake up feeling like shit. Nathi and I never, and I mean never go to sleep angry.

Its Saturday morning and I don't have plans for the day. I thought maybe Nathi and I could spend the

day together, but he isn't here and I don't have a note from him. So I go to the bathroom, and then get back into bed. No use getting up in this weather.

I start dozing off when Nathi walks looking all sweaty and sexy. I forget for a second that I'm mad at him.

But then it quickly comes back.

He looks at me for a second, then goes to take a shower. He doesn't even greet me. I want to cry. Like really cry. I thought he would say sorry and I would say it's fine and we could do what we were supposed to do last night.

He comes out the shower and gets dressed.

he takes his keys and walks out Me; where

you going?

Him; work

He walks out and I cover my head again. No use trying to talk this through. I'm woken up by Boni's call

Her; bitch

where are

Me;

sleeping

Her; its

Midday

Me; yah

and?

Her; get ready we're going out

Me; out where

Her; ill pick you up at 4

She drops the call. I don't know where we're going, but I am not going to sit at home and wait for Nathi.

As true to her word,

Boni arrives at 4pm Me;

where are we going

Her; first food, then we go to the Spa, then clubbing

I look at this crazy chick in front of me. There is no way I'm going clubbing.

Her; relax, we have a private booth at club T

Me; who's we

Her; all of us. But first I want to have

an early diner with you Me; ok

I get into the car and hope for my sake that this isn't a mistake

Her; what are you going to have

Me; if we're clubbing, then I most definitely need grease food

Her; me too

We both order burgers with chips and I even have bacon and chees with it. Just nje Me; so what did

you want to talk about

Her; Hlokes

Me; what about him

Her; Linda wants to take Owami back. I've brought up that child since she was just a few days old and now she wants her back. To make things worse Hlokes has been meeting with her to discuss this behind my back

Me; damn

Her; I just don't get why he doesn't think its important for him to discuss this with me. He says if Linda wants the child back then we give her back

Me; he's crazy

Her; I know that. But hat do I do

Me; you fight for her. Listen Boni. This child is yours. Yes Linda gave birth to her, but she calls you mommy. She only knows you. Don't let them take her from you. Go to war with him if you have to. Her; you're right

Me; that Linda chick is annoying

Her; you have no idea. Just be grateful that your man hasn't slept with her

After eating we decide to go shopping before meeting the rest of the girls at the spa. It's a good thing since I'm not dressed for the club

We both settle on different freakum dresses. Mine is above the knee, but Boni's one is short. Like really short, but she can pull it off. She has killer legs Nathi tries to call while I'm at the Spa, but I don't answer. I'm in the middle of a mud bath so he is just going to have to wait. Plus it's not like he doesn't know where I am. He tracks my every move

By the time we get to the club its pumping. We are led to our booth from the back entrance. Our security detail is close by as always

We order drinks and start drinking. The nice thing about being in a booth is that you don't have to worry about pictures being taken.

We all dance and drink and just be plain old stupid. I think we drink too much but hey who's counting? It's only fair after the amount of neglect we get from our husbands.

I have no idea, when or how, but I see some guys in the booth with us. I don't pay attention to them because I know that security probably cleared them.

The guys are sitting with Dourine and Busi. While Fifi, myself and Boni are standing and talking stupid talk.

One of the guy comes over and for the first time I notice how one of them looks like Dourine.

He introduces himself as Mike. He's Dourine's brother. I greet him and wink at Dourine. I know it's wrong of me to think that he is cute. But the truth is the truth and it shall set you free.

We move over to the couch and I'm busy talking to Mike, who is in fact looking to surprise his girlfriend with one of my designs, apparently she's a huge fan. Since I don't have any of my cards with me, I tell him to give me his phone and I put my number in so he can call me on Monday to set up an appointment.

I have no idea where Nathi came from, but all I see is Mike pinned against the booth door.

It takes a second for me to register that Nathi is about to beat the shit out of him. I stand up and try get between them, but tools pulls me away.

I'm screaming at Nathi trying to explain but the music is too

loud. Not that he would listen. He has completely lost it

Thankfully Siya and Mtunzi are able to pull him off the poor guy. Dourine is by her brother's side. Thankfully no punches were thrown. I can see Hlokes trying to explain to Nathi that Mike is Dourine's brother but Nathi is pissed. I don't think he is hearing anything they are saying to him.

He comes charging before me and Siya holds onto his arm. I know for a fact that Nathi would never hurt me. but right now I'm not too sure. He just looks so mad. I am embarrassed.

I look at Boni and she knows that I need to get out of here. She takes my hand and we use the very entrance we come in with. Tools leads us to the car and drives off..... but on our way, he stops.

We're on the highway and
he stops on the side Him; I'm
sorry mam, but I've been
told to stop
Me; told
by who
Him; Mr
Khumalo

as he says that I see another car behind us. Hlokes steps out with Nathi.

Hlokes opens the door and takes his wife. Nathi steps in and I open my door. I don't care that I'm in the middle of the highway. I don't want to see or even speak to Nathi

He grabs onto my hand and I flinch.

He immediately lets go. Him; close

the door, we're going home

I want to tell him to jump off the highway, but his is angry and cold and I don't want to make things worse.

I close the door and pull out my phone. I need to keep my hands busy.

Him; so you're giving out your numbers to guys now

I don't answer. I won't fight with

him in front of Tools Him; I'm

talking to you Tshidi

I continue responding to the whatsapp messages from the girls.

Next thing he grabs my phone out my hand and throws it out the window

Him; you're changing your number

I look out the window and I don't respond. I won't disrespect him in front of Tools.

We get home and I don't wait for my door to be opened. I just walk out and walk straight to our room.

He comes in while I'm getting out my dress. I don't have a bra on because the dress I was wearing couldn't exactly accommodate one.

Him ; Matshidiso I am talking to you

Me; baby can we not do this now. Let's wait for you to calm down first. We can maybe talk about it tomorrow

Him; no we are talking about it now. How could you give that guy your number? Have I not given you everything. What

could you possibly want from him?

His words hurt me. does he really think i am that cheap. That i would want to hurt him like that? one guy at a club shows interest and i'm immediately taken. I know we didn't have a big white wedding, but my vows to him were real.

I put on my Pyjamas and get into bed. I cover my head with my duvet and let the alcohol in my system pull me into a deep troubled sleep.

Tomorrow is another day.

25

(sorry if there are spelling mistakes)

I try sleeping but Nathi is having none of it. He is so angry and my ignoring him it only makes things worse. So I sit up and lean against the headboard.

Him: Tshidi, answer me. Tell Me why the hell you would need that boy. Do i not satisfy you? Do i not Give you everything?

Me: Nathi. Please. I get you're angry but you have no reason to be.

Him: you must be joking. You were in a club Tshidi. With a dress that's hardly there and you were giving some random guy your number

Me: Nathi if you want me to explain, then you need to let me. You can't be shouting at me. You were the one who told me we don't deal with things like this.

Him: That's before I realized you were capable of cheating
Me: Nathi

Him: and what kind of wife goes around dressed like that Tshidi, where is your selfrespect. You want people to see you as some cheap whore? Tshidi you are going to be 2nd lady of a country. You don't dress like that.

Ok, now Nathi was pushing it. I get he is angry, but i would never, ever do what he is accusing me of. Plus my dress was just above the knee. Yes it was figure huging and was open in the back and i showed a bit of cleavage but that was just about it.

Me: ok Nathi, what do you want me to do? Becuase it's obvious you won't even let me explain. So tell me what I must do for you to stop shouting at me

Him: you should've spoken when I was speaking to you in the car.

Me: but Baby, tools was in the car. I didn't want to answer you infront of him. I don't want us arguing infront of the staff

Him: If I ask you a question you answer it.

I don't care where we are. Me; ok. I'm

sorry

Him: so you admit that you were going to cheat with that twat
Gosh

this man doesn't listen

Me: No Nathi for fucksakes. He asked me to design a dress for his girlfriend. Apparently she is a fan of my work but hasn't been able to afford any of my designs. He was planning on surprising her with a custom dress when he proposes to her. That's why I gave him my number so we could set up an appointment on Monday, to go through some ideas.

Him: you swear at me now. You don't respect me now

Me: I actually can't do this anymore. We're going around in circles. I don't know why you are acting like this. Have I ever given you any reason to doubt me? Did your ex cheat on you? Because I feel like you're punishing me for someone else's mistakes

I see his face change. He gets darker and his eyes change completely

Him: do yourself a favour Tshidi. Keep my wife's name out your mouth. She would've never done what you did. Not in a million years.

Ok. Nathi has said things to hurt me tonight and i understand them because they were said through pain and anger. But for him to compare me with his ex wife just trampled on any self-esteem I thought I had.

I get out of bed and go get a bottle of water. I can feel that I am going to break if I don't remove myself from the situation.

He doesn't follow me to the kitchen. I know he knows he hit below the belt because immediately when he said it, he realized what he had done.

I take deep breath and drink the bottle of water. I can feel my knees getting weak. I am breathing uncontrollably. I know this feeling. It's because I've been holding in too much. I sit on the kitchen floor and let it all out. I let go of the heaviness in my heart. I cry because I know I can never be her. And I thought he was over her, but it's obvious he still loves her. It's obvious he compares us. What if he thinks of her when we are together. What if he thinks of her when he touches me.

Nathi finds me on the kitchen floor, and I can see that all the anger is gone. It's been replaced with guilt. Fear even

Him; Tshidi I'm sorry. I

He steps to touch me but I get up. I don't want him touching me. I don't want him anywhere near me. I need him to leave me alone

Him: Baby. I'm sorry,

I walk up to the spare bedroom and fall asleep on a wet pillow.

I wake up and I can hear voices downstairs. I take a shower and get ready for church. I don't care what's happening in my life.

Sunday's

Are reserved for church. I wear my floral print dress with black sandal heels. I look in the mirror and I see Nathi standing behind me.

He looks like he has died a thousand deaths since last night.

I know my dress is a little tight around my butt,
but he is just going to have to deal. I fix my
fascinator and take my bag. I want to walk out but
Nathi is blocking my way

Me: Ke kupa ho fita

Him: I'm sorry Tshidi. What happens
last night should've never happened. Me: ok

I don't look up at him. I don't want to argue with him. Yes, I'm
still hurt, but now isn't the time to discuss this

Him: Baby please. I know I hurt you. I should've never spoken
to you like that. Let alone what I did at the club. Please Tshidi.
Talk to me. Shout at me. Just don't ignore me

Me: I'm not ignoring you. I just need to go to
church. I'll talk to you when I come back Him: can I
go with you

I look at him and see
that he is serious. Me:
fine

He gives me a kiss on the cheek, and jumps into the shower.
I go downstairs to grab some fruit while he gets ready. I
totally forgot that I had heard voices. I see Dominique in
the lounge. I don't know what she is doing here

Her: Mrs

Khumalo

Me: Hi

Dominique

I put my bag down and
grab some fruit
Me: can
I offer you something
to eat

Her: no thank you mam. I just came to see you regarding an
interview that S.A. news wants to do with you

Me: interview? Me?

Her: yes. I thought Mr Khumalo had
discussed this with you
Me: we've
been a bit occupied

Her: would it be better if I came back at another time

Me: I'm sorry Dominique. I think Nathi forgot to tell me, and
now we're going to church. I'll come to you tomorrow

Her: Thank you

She stands up to leave.

Me: do you work on weekends

Her: I'm on call for Mr

Khumalo 24/7 I don't

like how she says that

Me: Don't you have a family or something

Her: my boyfriend

understands that I have to

work Me: I see.

Her: ill, see you

tomorrow Me:

yes.

She leaves just as Nathi walks down looking like my very own James bond in his black suit, white shirt and black tie.

I stand and fix his tie. He takes this as an opportunity to take my hands in his. His eyes are different. Gone is the angry man I came across last night. Today he is the man I fell in love with. He is soft and gentle. He's my Nathi

Him:

Makhumalo I'm

sorry Me: so am

i

We don't discuss it further. We both were in the wrong, and we both know it. We can discuss that after church.

We arrive at church and I make it an effort to sit as far away from my family as possible. That's what I've done every Sunday since we had that fall out, but with Nathi being here and people realising who he is just makes it difficult. People's eyes are on us. I look at him and he doesn't even seem bothered.

The sermon starts and it feels like God is talking to me. Because the sermon is based on forgiveness. The pastor even makes an example about couples fighting and being unable to forgive. I look at Nathi and he takes my hand in his.

The sermon ends and we get ready to leave. Till Thabo my oldest brother comes towards us. I take a deep breath and count to 10. I take Nathi's Hand. He looks at me with a questionable face but i don't say anything

Thabo;

Dumelang

Me: hì

Thabo: Ntate

wants to see you

Me: today isn't a
good day.

Thabo: not you. Him

He looks at Nathi and i feel my heart racing. Nathi looks at me and I know he can ready my fears Nathi: no problem.

Tshidi why don't you go wait in the car

Me: Nathi

Nathi: go. I'll be right behind you.

He looks at Tools, and he walks off with my brother. I want to go with him, but i decide against it. I walk to the car and i wait for what feels like eternity.

Tools: man. Mr Khumalo has asked
me to walk you back inside Me: does
he say why

Tools: no mam.

He opens my door, and i walk back inside. I find my

family in the pastor's counselling rooms. I don't like this.

I greet and sit next to Nathi.

Pastor: Tshidi how
are you? Me: I'm
good pastor. Thank
you

Pastor: the reason we've asked to see

Is to discuss what
happened that day you left

Me: ok

Pastor: have you seen or spoken to your family since then

Me: no. I have only seen them here at church, but i
haven't spoken to any of them since Pastor: your
father has asked me to intervene

Me: intervene?

Pastor: yes, your father feels like you disrespected him. That
you should've discussed your feelings with him at another time

I take a moment to observe what he is saying to me. Nathi
takes my hand because he knows I'm about to lose it.

I look at my father

Me: Ntate I'm sorry if you feel that I disrespected you. That's wasn't my intention. It's just that when you started bringing up my personal life in front of people, I got mad. There is so much you don't know about what happened for me to leave Msizi, and you never asked. You just assumed I was in the wrong

I feel myself getting more and more emotional

Me: Ntate Msizi isn't the guy you think he is. If it

wasn't for Nathi I'd probably be dead. I see tears

stroll down my mother's face.

Ntate: Matshidiso ngwanaka, why didn't you tell me. We could've had a meeting with his family. We could've done something to stop this

Me: Ntate he threat end your lives if I ever told anyone. The only person who knew was his father. His father helped me get a divorce. 2 weeks later he was dead. Do you think I would want to risk your life when I know this man is capable of killing his own father

Ntate: did you ever report him

Me: yes once. But the police were his friends. They told me to suck it up and make sure I don't anger him.

My father looks down at the floor.

Him: Tshidi ngwanaka I have failed you. We your family, we have failed you. I don't want to cry, but i can't hold my tears.

Him: I'm sorry Tshidi. I'm sorry I didn't see the signs. I'm sorry. I look down and for the first Time in my life, I feel like a weight has been lifted off my shoulders. I know things might never be the same. But at least we are moving somewhere.

Nathi: I think we

should get you home I

nod

We stand and leave. I promise my parents that I'll see them during the week. I just need to process everything, once I've calmed down and put the emotions aside I'll be able to move on. But for now I want to be with my husband.

The ride home is silent. There's no tension, but we are both emotionally tired. This weekend has been one hell of a weekend.

When we get home I order us lunch

and go upstairs to change. I turn

around and Nathi is standing behind

me

Him: I'm sorry

Me: it's fine Nathi. Can we just move on please

Him: I know I hurt you. I didn't mean to say

what I said. It just came out wrong Me: do you

still love her

Him: Tshidi

Me: just tell me. Do
you still love her

Him:
no

Me: ok

Him: she's dead Tshidi. I carry the guilt of her death. Yes
sometimes I miss her. But that doesn't mean I don't love you.
It doesn't mean I long for her

Me: I don't know what to say Nathi. You hurt me. I know I'll
never be her. That's not what I'm trying to do. It's just the way
you called her your wife. Like she was still your wife in your
heart.

Him: Tshidi, I was angry. I
wasn't thinking straight. Me :

ok

Him: Tshidi last night shouldn't have happened. I let my
jealousy get the better of me. The thought of losing you to
another man, literally drove me off the edge. I don't know
what happened but the next thing I had him Pinned against
the door.

Me: but baby, he's Dourines brother. I would never. In a
million years cheat on you. Let alone with a 22 year old.
Despite how cute he is

Him: you think he's cute

Me: yes. As cute as Olwetho and Aya. Cute as in

a baby. I don't do cute. I do you I smile

Him: you haven't done me in 2 days

Me: maybe if you started behaving like my hot chocolate,
confident husband who drives me crazy in all the good ways. I
might just do you

Him: you're not mad at me anymore

Me: no. Because I know what jealousy can do. And as much as I hate what you did. I love the fact that you love me enough to fight for me

Him: I'd kill for you Tshidi.

Me: I know you would.

Now help me get out This
dress.

Him: I like the dresses you wear to church. They're
decedent and covered up. Except for this He taps me on
the butt

Me: nothing i can do about my booty. It's passed
down from generation to generation. Him: it's my
favourite part of your body

Me: stop drooling over my butt and unzip me

He unzips my dress, slowly. Like he has all the time in the
world. He stares into my eyes through the mirror. I know
those eyes, those eyes are lustfilled

My dress falls to the floor and i am left in my bra and my g-
string.

I hear him breathing like he is trying to
suppress something deep inside I turn
around and put my hands around his neck

Me: I love you.

Only you Him:
despite what
happened

Me: I love you more because of what happened. We've been married for 3 months Nathi. We are going to fight. But what's important is that we move on.

Him: what did I ever do
to deserve you

Me: we
both needed each
other

Him: I
want you

Me: then
take me

I start undressing him. I want him now so badly. I want to feel the connection that we've lost. I need to feel him inside me. Feel that he is mine

He starts kissing my neck, but i don't have the patience . I'm already wet. I just want him inside me

He picks me up and puts me on the bed, and kisses me some more. He knows what I want but he is purposely delaying.

He takes his sweet time kissing

every inch of my body. Me: Nathi

please

He doesn't respond, instead he opens my legs

wide, and eats me like I'm candyfloss I can feel my
body climbing.

Him: don't

cum Me:

Nathi.

Please

He makes me reach the very top. But

stops just as I'm about to let go. Him: I

think our lunch has arrived

Nathi is going to be the death of me. I was so close. Just one

more lick and i would've been a happy girl. I try spilling him

towards me, but he stands up and puts on his jeans

Me:

Nathi

Him:

baby

Me: where are

you going Him:

I'll be back. Don't

move Me: butt

Him: and don't touch yourself

He walks out and i lay there frustrated.

What man would be so cruel He comes

back with a bowl in his hand.

He smiles when he sees

that I haven't moved Him:

I'm glad to see you listen

Me:Ntahi i swear if you don't

He takes an ice cube and puts it his mouth. Ok, I know it's hot, but he could put the air on on, why go to the kitchen for ice

Just as I was thinking that, I feel the ice on my c**t. I tense up. He moves the ice slowly around my p***y. I hold onto the sheets. The ice cold feeling around my most sensitive part of my body takes me into another world altogether.

Just as I get used to the ice, he puts it in his mouth and chews. Then his cold tongue hits my c**t. He puts a finger in me and licks, and kisses till I can't hold on anymore. I let go and enjoy the relief that I've been needing

Nathi comes up, and puts himself in me. He does not start slowly, instead, he rams into me. He touches my gspot, and I start to build again. He is lost in me, and I'm lost in him. We are lost in each other. He turns me around and I am on top of Him. I cross my fingers with his, and start to move. I hear him growling and I know he is close. I move faster and faster till we both cum together calling out each other's name.

I lay on his chest and for the first time till this whole crazy fight. I feel like my normal self. If there's one thing I learnt is that we both love each other and that sometime drives you crazy. But what's important is the fact that despite our fighting we are still one.

26

Waking up in my Nathi's arms after such a hectic weekend feels like heaven. His hands play with my hair, as we approach yet another day

Him: what are your plans for today?

Me: I need to start by buying a new phone,

I feel him tense up and decide to move on from the subject

Me; Then I need to go and to the warehouse to get some material, then I'm at your offices for a meeting with Dominique, and lastly I need to meet with the girls regarding our trip

Him; Trip?

Me; oh Gosh. I totally forgot to tell you.

I see his face tighten and I know that he is going to be against this

Me; the girls and I want to go on a vacation. We were thinking Zanzibar

Him; I don't think I can get

away at the moment Me;

baby, it's a girls trip

Him; I don't want you to go

He stands up and goes to shower.

I sit and think of how to approach this. Nathi is going to drain me of every bit of energy I have I go check on Aya and get her ready for school, when I go upstairs Nathi is getting dressed.

Me; are we going to discuss this

Him; No. I don't want you going. If anything happens it's too far for me to get to you.

Me; But

Him; Tshidi, it's not happening. You might as well forget about it

Me; so is this how our marriage is going to be like? You are going to dictate everything I do?

Him; No. but right now isn't the time for you guys to be going on trips

I decide for the sake of peace, I'm going to let this go. I'll meet with the ladies. We'll discuss it and take it from there, because if we continue right now. Nathi and I are going to go into WW3

By the time I get my day started, Nathi and Aya had left for the day. I start by getting a new phone, problem is now I have no numbers, my messages, and my emails. I have to get everything set up all over again.

Once done, I head to the factory to get some material, then head to the studio. I see a space available to let right across the Boutique. I make a mental note to see if I can let the space for a bridal boutique. I haven't started designing as yet, but if I could do Diva Couture, I can do Diva Couture Bridal.

By the time I head to see Dominique it's after 3pm. Unfortunately Nathi isn't in the office. Apparently he's at his law firm. So today it's just me and Dominique

Her; Thank you for coming to see me Me; sure. So tell me about this interview

Her; well, The thing is Its more than an interview. Mr Khumalo has asked that we do more than just this interview. He wants us to turn you into a public figure. You have an entire PR team

I take a deep breath. I don't know what's wrong with Nathi. Why

couldn't he just talk to me about this before making decisions?
Now I've got to sit here and pretend I know what the fuck she's
talking about

Me; when is the
first interview Her;
Wednesday

Me; send me the details. I'll make sure I'm there

I stand up and leave annoyed. It's a good thing I'm meeting the
girls today, because at least I can vent
and they understand

I get to Dourine's house

and as always I'm late Me; I

know I'm late. I'm sorry

That's the first thing I say because I can see them eyeing me like a
crazy person.

I don't even sit down, I take a glass out of Boni's
hand and drink what's left of her wine Boni; you look
like you've had a hell of a day

Me; you have no idea

Fifi; what happened after you left the club

Me; if I'm going to speak about

that then I need a refill Dourine

smiles and refills my stolen glass

Me; so after we left, Tools decides to stop the car, apparently
Nathi and Hlokes were behind us. So he stops and Hlokes
literally drags Boni out the car, and Nathi sits in her place. I try

opening the door, to get out but he held onto me. After that it went even more downhill. We had a few words exchanged and I slept in the spare bedroom

Busi; damn

Me; yah, you can

say that again

Dourine; are you

guys ok now

Me; yah, we're fine, but he is still getting on my nerves, apparently we aren't going on the trip

Fifi; welcome to our world

Me; I don't know how much more I can take

Boni; but Tshidi you don't listen. Let me tell you something.

Nathi is a control freak. All of them are. But

the only way to get what you want is by seducing him. Without him even noticing.

Me; haai this seducing thing with Nathi doesn't seem to be working. Instead of him getting better he gets worse. Now I think he is just being extreme.

Fifi; I just cry my eyes out. Siya hates seeing me cry. So the more I cry the more he gets all soft

Me; I might just try it. Dou, how's your brother? I feel so bad

Dourine; He'll live

Me; can you believe Nathi thought I really wanted to cheat on him with your brother. Like really

Dourine; they're all the same. You'd swear they were brothers

Fifi; at least Nathi isn't violent with you. I remember the time Siya hit me.

Me; what

Fifi; yah. I was pregnant and contemplating abortion. He found out and lord did things get out of hand

Me; that's horrible

Fifi; yah, His temper is on another level

Boni; Hlokes tried that when I broke up with him after one of his missions. I pretended to faint after the slap. You should've seen his face. He looked like he was dying. I broke up with him for 2 weeks and then we got married a month later

We all burst out in laughter. It's amazing how these crazy bitches know how to put me at ease.

I leave the ladies and go home to help Aya and Olwetho with their project science project. Olwetho ends up sleeping over. Nathi arrives home just after 9pm. I'm already in bed working on one of my first bridal gowns.

He gives me a kiss

on the cheek Him;

who's that for?

Me; no one. Just putting down what's in my head

Him; how was

your day Me;

ok. Just hectic

Him; mhmm

Me; and you

Him; I was in court

most of the day Me;

sounds fun

Him; hardly

Me; so I met with your PA and she filled me in on something I didn't know about

Him; what

Me; apparently you've hired a PR team for me?

Him; oh yah, that.

Me; and you didn't think you needed to talk to me about it before hiring all these people
Him; after the club incident, I thought it best to get you working on your 2nd lady profile
Me; Nathi
Him; baby

Me; you can't make decisions like this without discussing them with me

Him; askies ke baby wam

Me; its fine. Ill support you in every way possible. But I just feel (sniff) so (sniff) overwhelmed. I really just wish we could've discussed this first. And to make things worse you don't want me to go on this trip. It just makes me feel so trapped. Like you don't value my opinion.

I see his face drop. I know it's wrong to deceive your husband. But come hell or high water I am going on this trip

Him; you really want to go

I nod and tears continue to roll down my cheeks.

He takes me in his arms and says Him Baby. I

know fake tears when I see them. Better luck next time

I look up and he's laughing. I give in and laugh my head off.

Him; you are crazy

Me; baby please

Him; I need to see the place you're going first. I need to make

sure security features are in order, then
we can discuss you going
I throw my sketch on the floor and jump up and give him a kiss

Me; you're
the best Him;
whats for
dinner? Me;
me
Him; well you better make it good.

I run upstairs and we make love in the shower. My weave gets wet but I don't care. At least I'm getting what I want. I guess Boni was right. Being needy makes them think they are in charge. Nathi loves it when he thinks he is my prince charming who rescues me. so I make a promise to myself to make sure that going forward I submit more. That way we both get what we want without killing each other

27

I served him dessert, and then decide to go get dinner for him and take advantage of his fun spirit Me: So baby wam. My Khumalo. My chocolate. My yonkinto
Him; Lord help me. Makhumalo. What do you want now?
Me; Well, I've kind of been thinking of adding another boutique under my belt
Him: are you going to
manage time wise Me: I
hope so
Him: Tshidi, you need to think this through
Me: I will. I saw a space available across the street from my current boutique. I want to see if I can take the space and start

a bridal boutique

Him: I think it's a great idea. Just as long as you can manage your time. Especially with all the new

responsibilities that are coming your way

Me; But baby you guys haven't won the elections as yet

Him; have you seen our numbers? Come voting day you will be the 2nd lady of SA and that's going to

take up a lot of

your time Me: I

should be fine

Him: when are you going to give me children if you're busy opening boutique after boutique and your 2nd lady duties and your duties as my wife?

I look away

Him: I'm surprised you aren't pregnant already. We haven't exactly been safe

Me: I had an

implant inserted

Him: when

Me: 2 years ago

Him: you should get it removed. I want little

bambinos running around the house soon Me: can't

we wait for another year?

Him: nope,

Me; but Nathi, with the campaign, and you not being home

it's going to be difficult to have a baby Him: we'll make it

work

Me: can we just enjoy practicing making a baby. We can

talk about babies at a later stage Him: we should

practice now

Me; are you on a Viagra or have you secretly been

drinking imbiza from the taxi rank He bursts out

laughing

Him; I don't need that. I'm a Zulu man. It all comes naturally

Me; im going to bed. You want some, then you

better let me go on that trip Him; so you are

going to deliberately keep what's due to me if I

don't let you go? Me; yes

Him; are

you sure

Me; yes

I feel his hand run up my gown. I'm not wearing anything underneath it.

Him; lets

make a bet

Me; no. no

bets

Him; cause you

know you will lose

Me; I will lose

dismally

Him; I love

you baby

Me; I love

you more

Him; come

here

I move closer to him and cuddle with him as he whispers sweet nothings in my ear. This here. With me in his arms is something I would never give up. Not even in a million years

I'm woken up by a phone ringing. I know it's Nathi's so I ignore it. I look at the time and it's 1:15am. Nathi isn't in bed, but I figure he's in his study. The phone rings again and I decide to answer.

I look at the caller ID and it's a private number. I answer it anyway

Me; hello

Her; he he hello. Can

you hear me? Me;

yes. Can I help you.

Her; who am I speaking to

Me; who would you

like to speak to Her;

(silence)

Me; are you there

Whoever is on the other line doesn't answer me, so I drop the call and go back to sleep. I'm not his PA. If people want to phone they can phone back. I'm not hunting him down. This house is 3 stories. I aint got time for that at this hour.

It's been over a week since Nathi and I made up, and it's with pleasure to announce that we have maintained the peace. Nathi has been busy but with me planning a second boutique I've also been a bit on the hectic thing.

The good thing is that at least today we leave for Zanzibar. Nathi wasn't exactly happy with the idea, but Hlokes convinced him to let me go along after Boni threw a tantrum about me not going because Nathi was being an ass. Needless to say I had to pull out the big guns since the tears didn't work. I decided to surprise him one night with my not so there lingerie and the handcuffs that Boni bought for me.

I let him handcuff me to the bed and do with me as he pleases. Let's just say after he was done, I got the go ahead to go to Zanzibar.

What I don't understand is why I'm always late. When I get to

the airport the girls have already boarded the jet and are waiting on me.

FIFI; Mara Tshidi, how is it that you are always late Me; blame Nathi. He kept me up all night Boni; I don't blame him. Those shorts are damn hot Busi; come sit. We are about to take off.

Our Security team board, and we are in the sky in minutes. I was actually hoping to get some shuteye but with these bitches that's impossible.

They have already started drinking. Boni on the other hand started earlier today. I have some Amaretto and Lime and listen to the crazy conversations.

Busi is telling us about how she had Mthunzi on his knees begging for forgiveness after she threatened to expose his nonsense to the world. I couldn't start laughing. Because Mthunzi is a giant beast. He is taller than Nathi. I can just imagine him on his knees begging

By the time we get to Zanzibar we're all tipsy. We get to the beach house that we're staying and we are all floored when we find the flipping husbands chilling on the deck. They had obviously gotten here before us, because they are already having drinks. nxa !

I hear Boni burp.

Her; this isn't exactly what I had in mind

The guys are chilled nje. As though they didn't just mess up our week

We each sit next to
our spouses Me;
when did you
arrive
Nathi; about two hours ago

Me; why didn't you guys
say anything Mthunzi; we
wanted to surprise you
ladies

Fifi; you surprise a woman by buying her diamonds,
not rocking up unannounced Luzuko; I thought you
guys would be more excited

I look at Boni and for some reason she seems a bit
nervous. Next thing I hear the doorbell ring. I stand and
go see who is at the door. I find two police men

Me; hi

Them; mam, are you
Matshidiso Khumalo Me;

yes. Why

Them; mam, you are under

arrest for being too sexy. Oh hell

no

They walk in and one of them carries me inside. I try getting
them to let go, because I know Nathi is going to fucking kill
someone, but unfortunately for me Nathi and Mthunzi walk
in.

One of them is carrying me while the other has already taken off his shirt, Lord help me.

I manage to get out the one guys arms, and I see Nathi fuming. Boni and Rifiloe come rushing in along with Siya and Hlokes.

Me; nathi. I swear I
Him; shut up Tshidi. Just Shut the hell up

Boni; Nathi. Its not her fault. I planned this for the girls
Fifi; we wanted to give Tshidi the bridal shower she never had
Siya;; Rifiloe you had something to do with this? So this is why you wanted to come here. You wanted to have some guy all over you.

Luzuko takes out money from his wallet and gives it to the strippers, and they leave.

We are all left staring at eachother. I can Siya's fuse is just about out. He is going to kill us

Fuck

He moves to Rifiloe, and she

moves behind me. Fuck my

life

I put up my hands in a gesture to stop him, but

Nathi pulls me away. Boni jumps in Boni; you just

lay a hand on her and you'll know me Siya

Siya; Hlokes; get your wife
Dourine tries to move but
luzuko stops her. Mthunzi
is the only one who seems
a bit calm

Mthunzi; ok. Let's all calm down. Ghost this isn't the time. Lets
just take a minute

Siya; all of you. OUT

I don't move. I'm not leaving Rifiloe with this man.

Nathi takes my hand and I jerk it out his hand. He gives me a
warning look but I don't dare move. I don't
care. Not after I know for a fact that Siya has hit Rifiloe before
Rifiloe; Siya. Its not what you think. It was just strippers. They
weren't staying the night

Siya; I said all of you better get out

Rifiloe holds on to my hand as tight as she possibly can. I don't
know where and why, but all I hear is a
gunshot go off.

All the girls hit the floor. I swear it feels like I'm in sarafina.

I look up and find Boni with

a gun in her hand WTF

Boni; Siya step away from her, or I swear the
next bullet goes in your head. All I hear is
silence. I swear you could hear a pin drop

Hlokes; Boniswa. Are you fucking crazy? He grabs the gun from her and I swear he nearly hit her. Mthunzi pulls Hlokes away from Boni. I get up and Nathi looks at me like he wants to kill me.

God why me. I didn't even know about this
Me;

baby

Him;

Mx

He walks off and the rest of the guys follow. I see them get in the Jeeps parked outside and leave. So much for having a restful week. Instead we are in a house with a bullet hole in the ceiling and all husbands who have gone off to God knows where

28

So here we are. The five of us sitting in the lounge of a beautiful beach house in Zanzibar, and we are all miserable. The whole idea of us going on this trip was for us to relax. But Instead here we are more stressed than when we left JHB.

Me: well there goes our week

Fifi: I'm sorry guys. I just thought it would be fun for us to have fun. Dourine: it's not your fault.

Me; Boni; where the heck did you get a gun

Boni; from Hlokes. He taught me how to use it in case of an emergency. And to me this was an emergency

We all laugh... Honestly only Boni could've seen things the way she does

Busi: but I don't see why we have to mope around. We came here to drink, sit on the beach and enjoy Zanzibar. To hell with those idiots that we call husbands. I'm changing into my bikini and I am going to have cocktails and order as much food as I can possibility take

Boni: I'm with you on that. To hell with them. It's not like they haven't been to strip clubs since we married them

Fifi: let's order food and then go to change. Fuck all of them

We all order insane amount of food. From pasta to cheese fries, burgers, pizzas, and even hot dogs. You name it, we ordered it.

We change into our bikinis and costumes. I opt for a 1 piece with shorts. I may be crazy but knowing Nathi he would make me change into a onesie if he saw me in a bikini

When we get downstairs we all start drinking our hearts out. I stick to my Amaretto and lime, while the ladies have wine, and some siders.

Boni puts on the music, and we let loose. We drink and eat as though we have no worries in the world. I drink more than actually eat. Boni takes my hand and makes me dance with her. The good thing about being drunk and at home is that you don't have to worry about random guys touching you. Or having to drive home. We dance on our private beach, while tools makes a bonfire for us.

Busi: we should all go

skinny dipping We all

laugh at her

Me: no matter how drunk I am. I know for

a fact that that is a bad idea Fifi: who

wants to do body shots with me?

Dourine and Busi all shout hell yah, while Boni sits and rolls her weed.

Boni: have you ever

had some? Me: no.

But my ex used to

love it Boni: want a

drag?

Me: why the hell not.

She lights it and takes a few drags, then gives it over to me.

We all sit around the bonfire, each with our

own drink, smoking the zol. We sing along

to some house music, but none of us

dance.

We don't even realize how late it is, till we see the guys

coming coming in. By now we are high and drunk and

honestly couldn't care less about their moods.

They sit around us and don't say anything. The only couple

right now that seems normal is Busi and Mthunzi

Nathi: well this is cozy

Siya: you guys seem to be having tons of fun

I take a sip of my drink and think about how unlucky we are.

Why can't we all just get along

They walk back into the house, and I hear some female voices. We all look at each other, trying to register what was happening

Me; I'm sure it's the staff. The guys probably ordered some food

We hear some cheering on and immediately I know what they have done. The fuckers bought strippers home

The girls and I stand up and go to the lounge, and find 5 half-naked girls dancing for our husbands. Nathi has a bottle of Hennessy in his hand and is clearly enjoying the show.

I take a deep breath. I won't let him get the better of me. If he wants to play games. He can do so

I see Boni's face drop. All of us just stand and whimper in the misery of what we are seeing in front

Boni goes to Hlokes slaps him on the head. Hard

He doesn't even seem to notice. He's too busy concentrating on the girl in front of him, who is only wearing a thong.

Fuck, where is Boni's gun when we need it.

Fifi switches off the music, and brightens up the lights

Her; whoever isn't married to a man on the couch

had better get out before shit starts None of the girls

move

Busi; Boni, where is your gun?

Boni; Hlokes has it. But we've got butcher knives in the kitchen.

I see the strippers, walking out. I won't fight with him. I won't even entertain this shit.

I walk upstairs, and lock the bedroom door. Nathi can sleep at one of those strippers' houses for all I care.

I take a shower, and change into my Pyjamas. Its 1:30am, and

I think its time I get myself some sleep. I hear a knock on the door, but I ignore it.

Fifi'; Tshidi open its me.

I get up and go open for her

Her; Im sleeping with you. I refuse to sleep with that idiot

I just smile and we both get into bed. Then next thing Boni is in bed with us. I don't care. I just want some sleep. Hopefully tomorrow will be a better day

Ok. So waking up in the middle of Boni and Rifiloe, isn't exactly fun. I prefer waking up next to my man. But then again I'm still pissed at him, so he can go to hell

Me; wake up bitches. And get the fuck out of my bed

Rifiloe pinches my boob, and Boni cuddles me like Nathi does. Except there isn't anything poking me

Me; you know this is just another level of friendship. Like who wakes up in this day and age with their friends morning breath instead of their husbands

They both laugh

Me; Boni move. I need to pee Her; shhh Tshidi maan.

Sleep Me; I'm hungry Fifi; its 6am

Me; yes, and I need a shower

Fifi; are you OCD or something

Me; if one of you doesn't move I'm

going to pee in this bed Rifiloe finally

moves, but follows me to the

bathroom. Like really. She pees, while I

get in the shower and Boni uses the

bath

We talk while we freshen up, as though we have known each other for years. I always imagined how my relationship with my sisters is supposed to be, and this right here is what I imagined.

All three of us head downstairs and to our surprise the house is spotless. I order all the ladies breakfast and go wake up Dourine and Busi, who to my surprised are already up.

We sit on the breakfast table and indulge on some greasy amazing food

Me; so what happened last night. I left because I knew if I didn't I was going to kill Nathi Boni; they didn't say anything. They just pretended like we didn't exist

Fifi; knowing these idiots, they just did that to prove a point.

Me; I don't care anymore. I just want to

enjoy the rest of my holiday The guys

come down just as we are about to leave

Nathi; and where do you ladies think you're going

I don't answer him, because the only thing I have in my mind is to swear at him

Luzuko; all

of you sit

None of us

move

Siya takes Rifiloe's hand and makes her sit on the couch. I roll my eyes and we all sit Hlokes; well I think since we're all here we might as well get a few things out the way

1. I think it's obvious that the stripper thing isn't exactly fun. If you don't want us doing it. we expect you ladies to do the same

Nathi; there won't be any more of this nonsense. We're all adults here and its time you ladies try behaving like WIVES.

I roll my eyes

Ive heard the wives speech way too much.

Mthunzi; you ladies have all been nagging us to spend more time with you. We thought that it would be a good idea to surprise you on your trip. Do you know how difficult it is for all 5 of us to take time off of work to be here, and then we find out that you ladies hired strippers. It's not exactly what we expected

Boni; but as always you guys overreacted. Its not like we were going to sleep with them Hlokes; and yet you are pissed that we did the exact same thing

Me; ok. can we all just forget about the stripper thing. Its honestly boring the hell out of me. in fact maybe we should all just go back home.

I see the girls look at me as though I', crazy

Me; what. I came here to relax. Not to fight and bicker. I have enough of that at home Busi; I think youre right

Fifi; If anyone should leave it should be the guys

Nathi; ok. how about we all apologise and move on. We still have another 4 days here. I'm sure we could try coexist without killing eachother

Everyone nods. I don't really care anymore. I'm not in the mood. I had no part in the strippers, and for him to willingly bring strippers home and actually enjoy it doesn't sit well with me. Not one bit.

29

I'm still annoyed with Nathi, and he knows it. We all discussed the stripper thing and agreed to move on, but deep inside it was still eating me alive. I just feel like he was supposed to react differently. He knows for a fact that I wouldn't, not in million years call random men to come and take off their clothes for me, and yet he didn't even give me time to explain. Instead he comes home and brings strippers.

Everyone else has gone on with their lives. Rifiloe dragged Siya to the spa, by the sounds in the room next to ours Boni and Hlokes are humping like rabbits. Busi, Mthunzi Luzuko and Dourine have gone hiking, and I'm here at the beach house watching tv mxm

Nathi walks in and sits next to me

Him: are we going to move on or are you going to continue sulking

I look up at him and actually get more pissed. I don't answer

him. Instead I watch TV and just ignore him Him: Tshidi. I

thought this was over. I thought we all spoke about this and

agreed to move on?

(Silence)

Him: in that case I might as well go back home. I've got a

shitload of work to do, instead of me being here with you sulking.

Me: Nathi . Did I ask you to come here?

Him: Tshidi, this was meant to be the honeymoon we never had. But here we are fighting.

Me: and why are we fighting? Is it my fault? I told you I didn't know about the strippers. I just came here for a girl's getaway. You on the other hand willingly bought those britches home to hurt me.

Him: it wasn't to hurt you. We just wanted to prove a point. Because it was obvious, that you ladies didn't understand why we were all reacting the way we were reacting

Me: Nathi , stop telling Me about what you and the guys decided on. I'm not married to them. I'm married to you. And its your job as my husband to want to protect Me. Not deliberately hurt Me

I see him look down.

Him: ok. Baby, I'm sorry

Me: you're only saying that because

that's what I want you to say I see him

sigh. He doesn't know what to do

Him: Baby. I was wrong. I get it. And I'm sorry. What more do you want me to do? Just tell me. I'll do it. I can't take the sulking for much longer

Me: come shark

diving with me He

looks at me like

I've lost it

Him: Tshidi. I know you're mad at me. But baby for you to want me to be eaten by sharks is a bit extreme.

I laugh and he smiles. He

knows he's forgiven Me:

come on it will be fun

Him: ok let me rephrase my sentence.

I'll do anything except that Me; Nathi

come on. You said anything

Him: fuck. Ok but i swear Tshidi, if a shark even bites a

finger off me, I am going to kill you I jump off the bed

and Into his arms. I give him a hug and a kiss on the

cheek

Him: your going to have to do more than that to thank me

Me: if you play your cards right, I might just

let you do things to me tonight He puts his

hands around my bum and squeezes

Him: why wait for tonight when I could

take you right here right now He kisses

my neck and starts sucking. And I let out a

gasp.

His hands stroke my butt as he kisses me, right behind my ear, he knows that drives me crazy. Then out of nowhere Boni barges in.

Her: Haai Nathi no man,
that's my friend. We
both look at her

Her: Tshidi, the sharks aren't waiting for you to get fucked. You guys can do that later. She walks to me, and takes my hand and pulls me towards the door. She turns around and looks at Nathi

Her: plus wena Nathi you don't

deserve some of this. She

spanks me, and then pulls me

out the door

I don't even have words. Like I don't know who this chick's mother is. Boni is on another level of craziness.

Me: Mara Sistas you aren't fair. I could hear you and Hlokes bonking, and you won't let me get some
Her: it's the only way I could shut him up.

I laugh. Really how is one person so crazy....

.....

We leave the house, much to Nathi's unwillingness to come with. But since he is sexually frustrated he doesn't have a choice but to give me what I want.

We get to the diving station, and we are given training first, then we are given our diving equipment to wear.

Nathi keeps asking questions about the safety terms and conditions. He has gone all advocate on the poor guy. We have to sign a terms and condition policy before we get into the water, and Nathi insists on reading it before we sign

Whoooooosssaa

We sign the doc, once Nathi is 100%

sure that he's happy with it. We get

into the tank and we are told to put on

our packs.

The tank is lowered, and i am holding on to Nathi. The cold water gives me a bit of a rush, but a few seconds later my body has adjusted,

The tank goes down, and we immediately start seeing sharks. It's beautiful reAlly. Seeing nature at its best. The sharks swim around as and some even bump Into the tank.

It's magical. And the best part is I got to

experience this with my crazy Nathi. We're in

the tank for about 20 minutes, and then we're

pulled out

I take off my mask and give Nathi a high 5

Me: see it wasn't so bad

Him: I'm glad you forced me along

Me: come, now it's the dolphins. Only

this time there is to tank He just smiles

and shakes his head.

We go over to the dolphins and this I must say is my favourite part. The dolphins are friendly, and so soft. We get to feed them, and even ride on their backs. At first I didn't think that Nathi would participate, but by the end he was having more fun than me.

We leave the water meuseum and go get lunch. The conversation is easy. There's no tension anymore. We're just 2 couples on a vacation having fun. See we can be normal sometimes.

Boni and Hlokes leave hand in hand after lunch, apparently Hlokes wants to go sight seeing. But Nathi insists on us staying which I don't understand since we've already paid for lunch

Him: come

Me: where are we going

Him: just come. I want to show you something

I take his hand and we walk about a block and end up at some luxurious hotel

Me: what are we doing here?

Him: you'll see

He checks us into one of the luxury suits.

The door opens and i am in awe. The suit is absolutely breathtaking. It's on the 11th floor, and even has an mini indoor pool

I turn to look at him

Him: I know when I arrived things kind of got out of hand. But I had hoped that we would have the honeymoon we dreamt of

Me: ncooh baby.

Him: do you have

any regrets Me:

regrets?

Him: do you ever

regret being with me

Me: no

Him: good. Because I don't know what my life would be like if I ever lost you. And lately I've been messing up so much, and i just get worried that you will leave.

I look into his eyes, and i see his fear written all over them. I know he can be a handful, but i hate seeing him like this. I hate seeing him doubt himself.

I take his left hand and kiss his ring finger

Me: Nkosinathi Khumalo. You are my husband. You are my friend. I love you. I don't care what happens between us, just don't ever doubt my love for you.

He leans in and

takes my lips

Him: forever?

Me: forever

I hear a knock on the door, and he goes to open

Him: good you're on time.

I see some ladies walk

in carrying bags. I look

at him quizzically

Him: you have yourself a nice pampered session. I'm going to play soccer with the guys. I'll see you now I want to stop him, but he's out the door in seconds.

I change into a robe, and enjoy the Swedish massage that he organised for me. I enjoy it so much I end up falling asleep on the table.

I'm woken up when I hear more voices. The messagist leave, and I go inspect what is happening.

A lady gives me a note from Nathi

" hope you enjoyed your massage. Now it's time for you to get ready. I'll see you at dinner by 8pm, sharp

Ñķ

I smile when I read the note. One lady tells me to sit, and she starts doing my hair, while the other does my nails.

I don't know what Nathi has planned, but in all honesty I am enjoying being pampered

By the time the team is done with me I am transformed. The make up is subtle, my braids are tied up in a bun, and i am standing in front of the mirror looking like miss universe.

The ladies pack up, and i see Nathi walk

in looking dapper in a tux Him: you look

beautiful

I flash him a smile

Me: thank you. But

what's going on? Him:

Walk with me

He takes my hand and we walk out to a private lift. He presses a button and i am whisked away. When the lift stops, he tells me to close my eyes

Me: what if I fall

Him: you won't. I've got you

I take a deep breath and allow him to lead. We don't walk very far, when he tells me to open my eyes

Him; I know we didn't have a proper wedding. And with everything that's been going on we haven't had the time. So when you forced me into letting you come to Zanzibar, I thought this would be the perfect opportunity for us to say our own vows, in front of our friends.

I look up at his glittering eyes and smile.

Him: so Mrs Khumalo.

Will you remarry me Me:

a thousand times over

He opens the door, and i stand in shock. I don't know how he pulled this off. The small conference room has been turned into a wedding reception. There's a beautiful white carpet, there are flowers everywhere.

The only people here are my bitches and their husbands. And the priest. Him: shall we?

Me: we most certainly shall,

We walk down the very short isle with a

pianist playing a beautiful melody . I look at

everyone and they all look beautiful. I can't

belive this is happening The priest does take

long, but he asks us to say our ow vows

Him: my love, from the very first time I laid eyes on you. I knew you were the woman I was going to spend the rest of my life with. Your soft nature, your Faith, and your craziness, makes me the happiest man alive, I am beyond honoured that today infront if our crazy friends, I vow to take care of you, I vow to be with you through sickness and health. Even if we go broke.

Which will never happen, I will still chose you. I know we haven't been together for long, but in the short space that we have you have made me the happiest man alive. You and Aya have made coming home more fun. I wouldn't trade you for

anything.

I do my best not to cry, but tears stream Down my face

Me: I don't know what to say. All I know is that I love you. I love you because you've show me what true love is. You've shown me the world. I look out and all I see in these crazy eyes of yours is pure love. And that alone makes me believe that out there is a God.

I would've said more, but i know for a fact that I am too emotional.

We are pronounced husband and wife again, and i get to kiss my chocolate brown Prince charming.

We have what some would call a reception, but i call it dinner with my peeps. It's just the 10 of us, but somehow everything feels perfect. Nathi may be crazy. In fact he is dam crazy and crazily overprotective, but i would still pick him. Everyday of every week

30

The rest of the vacation was magical. Nathi and i spent the rest of it at the hotel, while everyone else returned to the beach house. He said he didn't want my moans and groans to be heard by the guys, which in high and site was a good thing, because boy oh boy did he make me moan and groan.

Today is our first day back, and i was actually planning on spending the day with Aya, but she was not interested. Her and Olwetho apparently had plans to go ice skating and she didnt want any interruptions.

Nathi went straight to the office from the minute we touched down. I don't mind though, because I honestly have had him all to myself for these passed couple of days.

I sit and look at the pictures from our "vow renewel" and i just smile because of how happy I am. A call from

Dominique comes in just as I am looking through my pictures

Me: Hi Dominique

Her: Mrs Khumalo, so sorry to disturb you, but i was wondering It's ok for us to come over. The S.A. news interview is on Monday and we haven't been able to prep

Me: firstly let me thank you for the amazing job that you and your team pulled off for our vow renewel. Everything was beautiful. Thank you

Her: it's a pleasure mam. I'm glad it was to your liking

Me: it was. Even the dress you chose. It was all just perfect. But my favourite part was the banting chocolate fudge cake. That just made my night

She giggles a bit and for the first time since knowing her, I kind of worm up to her

Me: ahhm, don't worry about dragging the team here. Ill meet you at your offices Her: ok, we'll see you in a bit

I rush upstairs to change into something more covered. I can't exactly walk into his office in shorts. So instead I wear ripped jeans, with a top and my all-stars. I look at myself and i look like

a teenage girl, but hey, it's a Saturday

When I arrive at the offices I first go to give my hubby a kiss. He's only been here for a few hours, but I already miss him. I open his door and see he's on a call. I just blow him a kiss, then head to the boardroom to meet with this PR Team.

Me: Hi everyone. Sorry I'm late

They all smile and look at me, as Dominique introduces them one by one. I try remember their names, but knowing me, I'll be calling all of them by nicknames.

The only name I remember is Cindy because apparently she is my assistant. I don't know why I need an assistant, but I just nod and smile

Me: so I'm here Dominique. Tell me what I need to know

Her: we'll first start with the questions that are going to be asked by the interviewee. They sent us a list She hands me the list.

Her: once we're done, we are going to go through ideas on how to make your profile that of a first lady in waiting. Then we have to talk about your image.

I look at my clothes
and then at her Me:

what about my
clothes

Her: we just need to work on having you look more your age

Me: Dominique I'm 29.

Her: yes, but you have the body and face of a 20 year old.

I don't know if I should take that as a complement or if this weasel is trying to throw some shade. But I let it go.

I spend hours with these people training and torturing me. We go through the interview questions. My hair and make up team show me ideas of what my make up should look like,

I let them have what they want, but I put a full stop to them telling me to only wear designer clothes, the only designer I will wear is me. The rest of my clothes I will wear from my normal Woolworths, Mr price, YDE, I refuse to have them make me wear designer jeans worth thousands of rands when you can find a nice pair at Truworths. Mxm

They let the issue go, and we move on to my social commitment

Cindy; I was thinking you should open some sort of Home.

Maybe for orphans or for disabled kids
Me: that sounds promising

Dominique: it's always better to do something close to your heart, so that it's easier for you to have an idea of what's going on

Me: how about a safe house for women who have been abused

They all look at me and I know they are wondering why I would say that

Dominique: that's perfect. It will make you a champion of women's rights. You'll be our very own modern Mother Theresa

We go through locations, and names for the shelter, but

nothing i like. So I schedule another sit down with everyone for Monday.

By the time I walk out that boardroom my brain is fried. I go past Nathis office tonsay goodbye, but he locks the door and kisses me instead.

His scent and his lips on my neck

rejuvenate me more He pulls

away,

Him: how was you planning session

Me: gruelling. Apparently I need to work on my image.

Him: Baby these people are professionals, they know what they're talking about

Me: yes, but they want me to wear overly priced clothes

amd no sneakers and blah blah blah He smiles

Him: did you go through the terview questions?

Me: yes. I'm not too worried about those, and the styling team is coming to the house tomorrow to go through my wardrobe

Him: thank you for doing all of this. I know you didnt ask for this position, but i am gratefull that you are supporting me

Me: I love you, and if this is what you want, then ill do everything in my power to support you. Him: does that mean no more crazy stuff like strippers and clubs

I give him an irritated look, and he smiles

Him: it's a joke

Me: so you're Trevor Noah now

Him: in got better jokes. That Trevor
dude got nothing on me Me: stick to
politics

I leave his offices and head straight home. I know he isn't going to be home early tonight, so I decide to start looking at the idea of this shelter. The sooner we have it open and running, the soonerni can work on my bridal boutique

By the time Aya , gets home it's close to her bed time. I don't think I realised how much I missed her. I sit in the bath with her, and she tells me about school, and all the time she's spending with Olwetho

Her: mommy can I ask
you something Me:
anything baby

Her: I know Uncle Nathi isn't my dad. Like
aunty Fifi isn't Olwetho's mom. Me: mhmm

Her: but Olwetho calls aunty Fifi, mommy and i just want to know if I can call Uncle Nathi daddy, since my dad isn't around anymore. Plus uncle Nathi attends all my school sports, and we have a secret handshake.

I tense up when I think of what I asked Nathi to do about Msizi. I know it was cruel, but in the end Nathi will be a much better father and Husband than Msizi

Me: I'm sure uncle Nathi would like that very much

We get out the bath and change into our matching onsies. Somehow Aya has convinced me to set up a tent in the lounge so we can pretend we're camping. I make us popcorn and we watch MONA, but we both end up falling asleep only halfway through it.

I'm woken up by Nathi. He's taking Aya up to her room. He comes back down and has a briefcase in his hand

Him: you should
go to bed Me:
Bed? Aren't you
coming

Him: I need to handle something first.

Me: Nathi, it's nearly midnight,
what could you be handling Him:
Tshidi. Go to bed

His eyes, are red. He looks angry, and I know it's best I do as I'm told. So stand up and put my arms around his neck. At first he doesn't respond, he is so stiff.

I wipe the drop of sweat off his forehead. He doesn't look me in the eyes. Me: Nathi.
Him: mhmm

Me: promise me

you'll be safe I see

his face soften.

Him: lock the doors, and go to bed.

He gives me a kiss, on the head and leaves.

I take a deep breath, and lock up then, head to our room.

I try sleeping, but i can't seem to fall asleep. I send a message to our group chat asking the ladies if know anything about this, but as expected, none of them know what's happening.

I say a prayer for them and

somehow I manage to doze off. I'm

woken up by a message from Nathi.

All he says is. "Don't leave the

house."

I try calling him back but his phone rings unanswered

Today is Sunday and I'm supposed to go to church, but i decide to listen to my husband.

I check on Aya and see that she's fast asleep. I try eating breakfast, but my stomach rejects it.

We spend the door inside the house. No word from Nathi. I've asked tools if he's heard anything, but he insists he has no idea what's going on

This goes on for a total of 3 days. No word from any

of them, no sms, no call, nothing. Aya insisted on

going to Olwetho, so tools took her. It is after all just

next door.

When he comes back he tells me we have to go. I question him on where but he tells me its an instruction from Nathi.

I try calling Nathi, but he doesn't answer, all he does is send me a text telling me to do what tools says. I get in the car with tools and some of our other security team.

I ask them where we're going, but all tools says is

that we are going to a safe house. I want to take

Aya with, but I'm told she's on the way there with

Rifiloe.

We drive for what feels like an hour. Tools always looks calm, but today all I see is his fear.

He keeps looking at the review mirrors. I try asking him if everything is ok, but as always he says everythings fine mam.

I try calling Nathi again, but the next thing I hear is gunshots going off. The car screeches off the roads and i feel us roll at least twice.

I'm surrounded by dust. I try lifting my head, but my neck hurts like crazy.

I lift my hand and all i see is blood. I do my best to keep my eyes open, but the darkness takes over. My last thought is of Aya and Nathi. Even if I were to die, at least I die knowing that Nathi loves her just as much as I do

(short but from the heart)

Death. They say that when you die, you don't feel pain. That you spirit leaves your body, and you don't feel pain anymore. If that's the case, then why the hell am I in so much pain?

I open my eyes, I'm on a bed, a single bed.

I try moving, and I feel a shooting pain throughout my body. I lay back down and everything that happened starts to come back. I remember the accident. I remember the shooting. I tried not to sleep, but it felt like something was forcing my eyes closed.

I hear footsteps approaching the door, and reality starts to sink in. I'm not at home. I know for a fact that if I was with Nathi's people he wouldn't have left my side. So I know for a fact this this shit ait good.

Him; Tshidi, Tshidi Tshidi. What did I say about you and this swine of yours?

I don't even need to look up. I can spot Sizwe's voice from any and everywhere. In this moment I know that death would've been a much better option I try sitting up, but I feels the pain all over again.

Him; you might want to refrain from moving. Me;

Msizi,

Him; I told you maan. Baby. You and I will be separated by nothing but death. Me; Aya.

Wheres Aya.

Him; Aya is fine. See I'm not too worried about her. I know for a fact that soon enough she will forget all about you. I'll take

her and we will be a family.

Me; Msizi, please.

Him; please what? You think I would just let you go. After everything that we have been through? You think I'm going to let that idiot be a father to my child? Msizi; I'll do anything. Please don't hurt me.

Please

Him; hurt you? Tshidi, why would I hurt you? all I'm going to do is kill you.

He gives me an evil smile and walks out. I'm left alone in this ice cold room, and there is nothing I can do. I know Msizi, and I know that he doesn't joke. If he says he is going to kill me, then I know he will, my only prayer is that Aya is ok.

Nkosinathi

I've seen a lot of things in my life. I've seen war, I've seen death staring me in the face, I've lost a woman that I thought I would spend the rest of my life with. I lost her because I had enemies. I left the force after the Lesotho deal. I couldn't dare be in the very same Job that took away my wife. I partied, I drank, I slept with anything that had a skirt on. Just so I could ease my pain and guilt

The day I went to one of my petrol stations to check on my staff and make sure that our books were running, when I saw the most beautiful little girl walking around my car. The expression on her little face told me she knew exactly what she was looking at. I moved closer and realised she was with her mother. The first thing I realized was how this woman looks so much like

Thandiwe.

I moved closer and I heard her telling my daughter about what a waste of money my car was.

There in that moment I fell in love. I know it's corny but there was something about how she said it that made me aware that she wasn't a materialistic person.

The closer I examined her the more I saw how plain and simple she was. She had minimal make up. Her hair, which I know is a weave, was tied up and her eyes bored with the idea of an individual spending money on what she thinks is a useless car.

I made promise to myself that day, that if this woman calls me back, I was never going to let her go. I was done being Mr Play boy. I wanted her in my life and nothing was going to stop me.

I took down her number plate so I could find out more about her. I had my PI do some research and I was pleased that she was single.

I waited the whole weekend for her call. I had her number from my PI, but I didn't want to scare her off. I didn't want her to think I was stalking her. Even though I was
Needless to say that you guys k now how the story goes. After some convincing she married me. we had only known each other for a short period, but that didn't mean anything to me, since I knew that she was the one.

I wanted to kill this bastard. I really did, but I just didn't want that on my conscious every time I look at
Aya. I love her like my own, but I could never live knowing I was he reason her father was dead.

So I had my guys ruffle him up a bit. I warned him to stay away. I few knife cuts and that was it. I thought that that would be enough for him to stay away, but I was wrong. I did the one thing I was taught to never do. I underestimated my opponent, and now that motherfucker has my wife.

Ive been sitting in front of these monitors for hours. I have men all over this fucking country looking for her, but it looks

like they've disappeared. The signal we had died just as they took her out the car. I know now, for a fact that there is more to this guy than meets the eye. Everything was done too professionally.

Me; nails, any news on tools

Him; Axe, you need to take a moment. You've been at it for hours

Me; I didn't ask for your opinion. And don't fucking call me that. You know I'm not that person anymore

Him; fine. and tools is still in surgery. We don't know if he'll make

It

I stand up and take a walk outside. I haven't smoked since the day I met Tshidi, but today calls for deperate measures. I take out a cigarette and try calm my nerves.

The guys left me here and went out to our old HQ. Knowing Siya, he is in Ghost mode. I wanted to go with, but they flat out refused. Apparently I can't concentrate, and well, their right. I haven't even thought of sleeping. Rifiloe keeps trying to force food down my throat. I know she does this when she is nervous. The kids have been running around like we are on some vacation. Little does Aya know that her mother is missing.

Her; daddy. If mommy catches you smoking she is going to be very cross with you I turn around and there is my little princess with her hands on her waist

I throw the cigarette in the pool and walk over to her.

Me; are you going to tell her

Her; not if you don't want me to

Me; its our

little secret

Her; yep. Our

little secret

I look into her eyes and I see Tshidi. I wish I could wake up and someone would tell me that this is a dream, but I know for a fact that it's not.

Siya and the rest of the guys arrive after midnight. The ladies and the kids are all in bed.

The looks on their faces tell me that whatever they have isn't good news

Me; and

Siya; I'm afraid it isn't a good

Me; just tell me

Hlokes hands me a folder

I open it and I cant belive my eyes

Me; that's impossible

Mthunzi; I wish it was. but it's not. It took some digging, because he covered up his tracks, but its all there

Me; how did we not know this

Siya; after I let him off the 2nd time, he disappeared. I didn't think nothing about it, till I came across a

picture of this so called Msizi. The similarities were too close

Luzuko; it took me a moment to believe it, but it's true

Me; fuck; I know that this is a coincident, but I just hate that we missed this. How it is that Sizwe and Msizi are brothers.

Mthunzi; you know what

this means right Me; yes.

Its time we go hunting

Siya; fuck it. just when we

were normal now this Me;

Nails. Find Sizwe.

Siya; The rest of you go kiss your wives goodbye. We're going on a mission.

We all move in different directions. I go to the room where I put Aya down just a few hours ago.

I don't wake her up because I don't want to scare her. I give her a kiss, and pray that I return with her mommy

32

I've been laying on this damn bed for hours. I sat up eventually. I haven't see Msizi or Sizwe in a while. I just wonder what they are planning, I just pray that whatever it is it ends my life quickly. The last thing I need is to have them torture me before killing

I hear the both of them approaching. I lay still and pretend to be asleep. Msizi, pulls the sheet off of me, and slaps me across the face

Him; do you think this is a hotel.

I sit up slowly. Im still in pain, but I know for a fact that things are about to get worse Msizi; we are going to have some fun now

I look up at Sizwe, who I always considered the soft one.

Me; Sizwe, please, don't let him do this to me

I know this isn't going to help, He is loyal to his brother.

Me; Sizwe... Please. He is going to kill me.

Don't let him do this. Please He walks put

and I scream my lungs out. He's left me

with this monster. Me; Msizi.... please.....

Please... I'm begging you

He doesn't listen. Instead he pulls me off the bed and I hit the floor with my head.

I know the routine. He will punch, kick and slap me till he sees blood.

I put my arms over my head as he kicks me. He pulls my hands away and looks me in the eyes with such hatred.

Him; stand up and take
off your clothes Me;

Msizi

Him; Tshidi, you made me this monster, you made me do this. You and I were ok, before you got with his idiot. And now I am going to have to keep my word. I told you a divorce decree means nothing to me. YOU ARE MINE. I will do with you as I please, and right now I am going to remind you of who I am

I stand up, and try running towards the

door, but I bump into Sizwe. He pushes

me back inside

Msizi; Bafo do you want a taste?

Sizwe looks at me and shakes my his head

Sizwe; I like my woman with less blood on their face.

Msizi; well, your loss. Tshidi did I not tell you to take off your clothes. Or you want me to do it for you

Msizi walks towards me, and I hide behind Sizwe, I hold onto Sizwe's jersey

Msizi tries to pull me off, I hold on even more. I feel Sizwe slap me

Sizwe; Just do as he says. If you want a chance at living. Give him what he wants

Msizi, grabs me by the head and throws me on the bed. He tears my bloodstained shirt in half, I try with everything in me to fight him, but I know that he will get what he wants. He won't stop until he does..... I scream, and cry while he tries to undress me. he punches and slaps me, but I do everything I can do stop him...

By some miracle his

phone rings... He

gets off me, and

answers it Him; Ta

I look at him look at me

with even more anger

Nathi; (silence)

Him; Ive been waiting for your call. Took you long enough to find my number Nathi; let her go

Him; Let her go? No never. Her and I were just about to start

having fun

Nathi; I'm warning you Msizi. If you hurt her. I will find you
Him; well let me give you a clue about where we are. Maybe
by the time im done with her, you can come in and play Mr
Hero. Ill be sure to leave you her heart on a silver platter
Nathi; Tell your brother

Ghost says Hi He ends

the call, and looks at his

brother

Msizi; who's ghost

Sizwe; Why

Msizi; this moomish says I must

tell you Ghost says Hi I see

Sizwe's face change. He turns

red immediately. Sizwe; Fuck

Sizwe walks to me and moves

my hair out my face. Him;

Tshidi. how do you know

Ghost

I stare at him blankly. I don't know any ghosts

Me; I don't know what youre talking about

Sizwe; Tshidi. think.

Msizi; Bafo, you are interrupting me. I need

to get back to what I was doing Sizwe stands
up and pushes his brother

Sizwe; do you have any idea what
the fuck you've done. Msizi; I
don't know what you are going on
about.

Sizwe; If she is associated with Ghost,
we are both as good as dead Msizi; oh
please man. Her boyfriend is some
lawyer. He's no Ghost Sizwe; What's his
name? Do you have a file on him?

Msizi pulls out his phone and hands it to Sizwe. I see Sizwe
infuriate. He throws the across the room and I hear it break

Sizwe; do you know what you've done. You've just
fucking signed our death warrants Msizi; you aren't
making sense

Sizwe; That's Axe. The picture you showed me is of Axe. He is
associated with Ghost.

Msizi; wait. You mean Ghost as in THE GHOST

Sizwe; yes you fucking idiot. I thought you said you
did some research on the guy Msizi; I did.

Sizwe; well, not deep enough, because I know for a fact that
these guys are going to kill us. We need to
get out of here. The reason they called was to
get a signal. They're probably Msizi; ok. Let's
Go

He walks towards me, and pulls my arm

Sizwe; leave her. We don't need dead weight
Msizi; leave her? She's the reason I did what I did.
Why the hell would I leave her? Sizwe; because
Axe won't rest till he has an Axe through your
head. Now lets go

I see Msizi look at me with those dead eyes

Him; ill see you soon. Don't think even for a second that this is finished

He walks out and I hear gunshots going off. I hear screaming and shouting.

I drag myself under the bed, and pray that this Nathi or his people. Because knowing Msizi, he could be killing his own brother at this very moment.

33

I've never heard so many bullets go off in my life. I

felt like I was in the middle of a war. I stayed under the bed, till I heard silence.

I wanted to come out but i was scared. What if the people who are outside aren't here for me I sit till I hear someone approaching. I freeze. He opens the door and my heart sinks.

Sizwe: Tshidi.. Tshidi are you ok

He looks underneath the bed,

and our eyes meet Sizwe:

Tshidi, come. I'm going to get

you home

I don't move, what if he is lying.
Sizwe: he's dead Tshidi. He's never
going to hurt you again He lifts the
bed, and i dont move. He lifts me
up

Him: I need you
to call axe I
shake my head

Him: don't you
want to go home

Me: I do

Him: then phone your man

I take the phone from
him and dial Nathi. He

answers on the first ring

Him: Sizwe

Me: Baby. (sniff)

Him: Tshidi. Tshidi is that you

Me: (sniff) yes

Him: I'm on my way.

Sizwe takes the
phone out my hand

Sizwe: Axe

Him: you better be dead by the time I get there or else I'll kill

you and that idiot with my bare hands

Sizwe: Axe. I dint know about you and Tshidi. I swear. You have to tell Ghost. I wouldn't have let my brother go ahead with this if I knew

I look up and notice Nathi standing behind Sizwe.

I don't know when and where but all I see is absolute rage. Our eyes meet and for a second his soften, but then he looks at Sizwe and his anger is beyond. He takes out his phone and types a message. He hasn't said a word to me or to Sizwe.

I see the guys barge in. Nails and Hlokes come to me. Hlokes looks at me and shakes his head. And pulls out something out his back pack. I feel the needle before I can even see it. Nails put a blanket around me and picks me up. The last thing I see is Nathi with an Axe in his hand.

NATHI

The day I left the force I made a vow I would never kill again. I told myself that I was going to be an upstanding citizen of the law, but now here I am, in bullet poof vest, and an Axe in my hand

Seeing Tshidi looking so vulnerable awakened my killer instincts. The moment we raided warehouses I founf Msizi lieing in a pool of blood. He was shot at close range. I was relieved he was dead, but i wished I had been the one to kill him.

I look at Sizwe standing I front of us and i know that he has

messed up too many times. Now nothing he says or does will pardon him. Today he dies.

Me: Sizwe, what did we tell you the last time? We gave you a 2nd chance, and now here you are
Him: Axe. Please dude, I had no intention of doing this. I didn't know about you and Tshidi

Siya: well, I guess it's your loss.

Me: so it's your choice. How do you want to die? Do you want a bullet and Axe or knife
Him: gents please.

I didn't mean to do this

Siya: I let you go after find i g out about Fernandez. All because I know how fond Rifiloe is of you. But now. No more pardons. Chose

I see him look at us with pleading eyes. I k ow he doesnt want to die, amd to some we may be heatless but no one messes woth my woman and thinks im going to let them get away with it.

Since he won't pick, I take the decision for him. I take the gun out of bullets hand and i fire. The bullet lands in his head, and he falls down immediately.

I haven't smelt the smell of a gun going off in a long time.

And i must admit, it smells amazing. I give Bullet his gun back and walk out. All I want now is to take care of my wife

Mthunzi: dude you just got blood on me

I hear the guys laugh. Yes it's crazy but killing people doesn't bother us. Why should it when we've done it all of our adult life

Tshidi

I wake up from a fog filled sleep, and i see Nathi sitting in a chair next to me. He has his head on bed. I know he's asleep. I don't move because I don't want to wake him , but i am pressed and i need to go now. I shake him gently, and he jumps up

Him; what is it? Are you ok.

Do you need anything Me:

Nathi. Breathe. I just need the loo

Him: they put a catheter in,

so you don't get up Me:

eeuw, get it removed.

I want to go to the loo.

Him: Tshidi. Hlokes said it's best if you rest for a while

Me: Nathi. Please. I don't feel co fortable. I

need to pee, and shower. Please I make those

puppy eyes he can't resist.

Him: even after everything you're still a manipulator

I smile at him, and his smile doesn't meet his ears. He

looks at me and I see tears in his eyes. Me: Nathi I'm fine

Him: I'm so sorry

Me: it's not your fault.

Him: it is Tshidi. I should've killed him when you asked me to

Me we can discuss that at a later stage. For

now I feel like I'm about to burst He gets up

and walks out, and comes back with Hlokes

Hlokes: well, you look better than you

did when I last saw you Me: thank you.

But I'm sure I probably look an absolute

mess Hlokes: you a mess. Never. Your

way too beautiful to look a mess Nathi:

dude. Do your job and stop flirting with

my wife

I hear Hlokes laugh

Hlokes: I'm not flirting. I'm just being honest

Me: can we be honest later. Right now I need to pee

He takes gloves from the cabinet. Oh he'll no. I'm

not letting him see my cookie. Me: don't nurses do

this?

Hlokes: your husband does t seem to trust any other doctor or nurse.

Me: Baby, Im, sure there are other capable

people to do this. I can even pull it out They both

look at me like I'm crazy

Nathi: Tshidi. Hlokes is my friend. I don't trust

anyone else near you Hlokes: don't worry.

I've seen all of theirs wives naked. I'm a pro. I

promise

He laughs and i see Nathi giving him a displeased look.

Hlokes ignores him and takes the Catheter out, and i get up to go to the bathroom. I take a nice warm shower, I try not to thik of the past couple of days. I'm grateful to be home. That's all that matters after all

I come out the shower, I wear my Pj's that Nathi bought for me from home. Him: I

bought you some food
Me: smells amazing

I get into bed and eat my heart put. Nothing like

chicken noodle soup to make my day Him: I was

thinking of bringing Aya to come see you

I shake my head. I can't speak. The

soup tastes too good Him: why not

Me: I don't want her seeing me like this. I'll see her when I get home. By the way when do I get out of here

Him: Hlokes wants to keep you here for a few days. He wants to make sure you're 100% ok before you go home

I look at him and I don't see my Nathi. He has guilt written all over him. He cant even look me in the eye Nathi, I'm fine

He shakes his head, and i see a

tear fall from his eye. I put my

food aside, and open my

blanket for him.

Him: no you

should rest

Me: please.

He takes off his shoes, and gets in next to me. I hold him as he lets go of his anger towards himself.

We both drift off to sleep in Each others arms. I know I was the one that went through this, but seeing Nathi so torn up breaks me. I hate that he blames himself. Msizi was a pshyco and i guess this had to happen so we could truly be rid of him.

34

I spend about a week in hospital, The girls come to see me every day. Which is nice, because Nathi has been a Zombie, ever since he found me. I've tried getting him to laugh, but the moment he sees my bruises, he turns sour.

I don't know what to do anymore. I don't know how to comfort him, I just let him be, hopefully he'll get over it soon.

I've spoken to Aya a few times, and it broke me when she kept asking me when I was coming home.

So the fact that Hlokes finally released me today was like a dream. I was sick of being fussed over, especially by Nathi. I just wanted him back at work.

He has been so overly protective. I've asked him about what happened to Sizwe and Msizi, and as usual, all he said was its been handled. I just wish he would stop being so closed off.

Him: you
ready

Me: yes

Him: come let's get you home

Me: Baby. I don't need a wheelchair

Him: Tshidi, sit. I give him my small bag, and get on the
wheelchair

I've really missed being home. I miss my bed, and my
bath, but most of all I miss my husband. Him: get in bed
I'll get you a fruit salad

Me: Nathi I don't
want food Him:

what do you
want

Me: I want you to sit here next to me and stop faffing. I want
you to stop blaming yourself, I want you to be present with me.
Stop what you're doing.

Him: Tshidi. I think I'm going to move

into the spare bedroom I feel my

heart sink. Why the hell would he

want to do that

Me: Nathi why would you want
move to the spare bedroom. Him:

Tshidi, I just need to figure out a few

things.

Me: a few things? Nathi what are you talking about

Him: Tshidi, I failed you. I should've never let this happen. I was so concerned with leaving this life behind, and giving you a normal life, that i forgot that killing people is a part of me. I hate being AXE. But the minute i smelt the blood ooze out of Sizwe, it awakened something I had thought I buried.

Me: Baby you were only doing what you had to do.

There's nothing wrong with that. I get your traumatized but we can find a psychologist you can see.

Him: and say what? That I'm a cold blooded killer who enjoys killing? Who loves the smell of a gun going off? Who loves the smell of blood

I look at him shocked

Him: yes, Tshidi. you are married to a monster. You left one monster and you married another. So when I say I am moving to the spare bedroom, it's because I am trying to protect you.

Me: protect me from what Nathi? Msizi is gone, what

could you be trying to protect me from? Him: from me!

He walks out and i see his car pulling out the driveway. Reality starts to kick in. Msizi may be dead, but he has left behind so much damage. Damage that i dont even know how to begin to fix.

I get out my clothes and go take a worm bath. Maybe by the time Nathi gets back he would've cooled down. But that's not the case, because it's now 2:00am and he's still not home. I've tried calling him but his phone is off. I think of calling Rifiloe,

but i decide to face this alone

I somehow manage to fall asleep, hopefully by the time I wake up he'll be home. But again no such luck.

The ladies have organised a pamper session for us right here at home. I'm getting my hair and nails done. While the others get massages and foot rubs.

I let the ladies set up outside by the pool, while Rifiloes caterers set up brunch in the dining room. Fifi: so how you feeling?

Me: much better. I'm just glad this whole nightmare is over Boni: your bruises also look better

Dourine: Hows Nathi handling everything

Me: not well, he's gone awol since I arrived yesterday Busi: why? What's wrong

Me: he blames himself. He just can't get over it

Fifi: I know what's that like. When I was kidnapped, Siya broke up with me. He filed for divorce, and said it was for my own sake. It's their way of thiking they can protect you

Me: I just don't know how to deal with him. Like now, I don't know where he is or if he's ok. He is t taking my calls, and that freaks me out

Fifi: let him have his to . Let him deal with everything in his own way. He'll come around eventually

I hear the girls, But it doesn't make it easy. But I conserntrate on my hair and nails instead. I decide to take the weave out and stick to my natural hair. I do nude nails, and even get a wax done.

By the time everyone leaves, I am feeling more like my normal self. I just wish things in my home were as normal.

I wait for Nathi, till I doze off on the couch. His phone is phone

rings, but he doesn't pick up. I try to understand, but a part of me doesn't.

I stand up to go upstairs, but I hear the doorbell ring. My first instinct is to run and hide, but then I remember that Msizi is dead, and that security has doubled since the accident

I open the front door, and there stands Nathi's parents with child that looks like a replica of Nathi. I stand there shocked.

What on earth is going on.

Me: ma, baba hi

Them: Makoti

I open the door and they walk in. I have to tell myself to breathe.

I take their bags to the guest room and change into a dress, and cover my head and shoulders. It's not exactly appropriate for me to be walking around in shorts in front of his parents. And where the hell is Nathi

When I walk back down I see my mother-in-law smile.

Me: I'm sorry Ma, Nathi didn't tell me you were visiting. I would've made sure that I looked a bit more presentable

Her: don't be silly.

This is your home. Me:

and who is this cute

little boy? Her: This is

Ndumiso

I think she will elaborate but she doesn't

Me: I'll go dish up dinner.

Her: haw, Makoti, don't worry about us. It's too late for dinner.
Just make us tea insisted

I get up and she follows me to the kitchen. She stares at me
and I know she is going to ask me about the bruises

Her: Makoti. What's going on. Why are you so bruised

I look away and start boiling the kettle. I

don't know how to answer her. Her: Makoti

Me: ma

Her: what happened. I saw your legs as well.

Me: it's nothing ma, I take kickboxing classes and i just hurt
myself

Her: kickboxing? Haai cha Makoti, you gave me a fright. I

thought maybe Nathi had done this Me; no Ma, Nathi

would never

Her: speaking of my son, where is

he? Is he already in bed Lord what

do I say. I look down

Me: he's at work ma. The campaign

has been keeping him busy She moves

closer and lifts my chin with her finger

Her: Makoti. The truth. Where is your husband

My eyes start to water. I don't know why, but i feel like Nathi and i are losing Each other

Me: I don't know Ma. He didn't come home lastnight. I've tried calling him, but he doesn't answer my calls or my texts

Her: how about you go to bed. I'll handle

making tea for your father. I look at her in

confusion

Her: He'll be home tonight. I'll make sure of it

I just nod, and go to bed. I have so many questions for the people who are In my dining room, but chose to believe he Will be home, by the time I awake in the morning.

I wake really early the following morning to make breakfast for everyone. As expected, Nathi isn't in bed with me.

I take a deep breath, and go take a shower. I look at my bruises, and as much as all swelling is gone, the bruises remain.

Nathi walks in just as we are all , having breakfast. He looks a bit puzzled when he sees his parents. He greets and sits next to me. I dish up for him, and make him coffee, I stead of tea.

I am pissed at him, but i won't say anything infront of his family. I look at his father, who has his eyes focused on us

Him; Nkosinathi, is this the time a man

comes home to his wife? Nkosinathi

looks down and drinks his coffee

Him: Nkosinathi, I'm

talking to you Nathi:

no

Him: so what makes you think its ok to walk in your house at this hour. You make me leave my house to come here and help you with Lobola negotiations, and yet you aren't home? Who is protecting your wife when you are galavanting.

I look down, and to be hi eat, I've lost my appetite. I get up to go wash the dishes, and leave Nathi's father to handle his son.

Nkosinathi comes into the kitchen

and i feel my body tense up Him:

Tshidi, I'm sorry

Me: where

were you

Him: I was

Me: were you with another woman?

He looks at me with shock written all over his face

Him: Tshidi, I was at my old house. I just needed time away. Time to deal with what happened. Me: mxm

I finish up and leave him I there. I bump

Into his mother as I leave. She looks at

the both of us concerned

Her: Nkosinathi we're going to visit your uncle in

Spruitview. Well see you guys tonight He nods and

just like that they leave, and just like that its the 2 of

us here alone

Him: Tshidi. I shouldn't have left. I should've discussed things with you, I just felt so useless, like I don't deserve you.

Me: Nathi. I don't care about all of that. You don't get to take time out. If you need space, you take your space in this house. You don't disappear for e days, and expect me to be ok with it

Him: I know Tshidi. I'm sorry. It won't happen again

Me: and why the hell didn't you tell me your parents were coming

Him: it totally slipped my mind. I spoke to them while we were in Zanzibar, they're going to your family some time during the week

Me: it would've been nice for you to discuss this with me first Him: we're already married. I just wanted us to do things right. Me: Is Ndumiso your child

He looks at me as though I'm crazy

Him: i would've told you if I had a child Tshidi

I leave him and go to our bedroom. I need to take my pain killers. He follows me up, and puts his arms around me

Him: I'm sorry Tshidi. I know it was stupid of me. But I really needed to deal with this in my own way Me: can we just get through this week. We can deal with everything else after your parents leave Him: ok

He gives me a kiss, and my heart melts. Yes I'm still ,mad at him, but i don't have the emotional energy to deal with him and his disappearing acts. For now he's home amd thats all that matters.

35

(yes, its short because of all the inboxes asking me to post. Ill post a long one when i get home.)

I've never really been one to hold on to grudges, I can't even if

I try. But the way I'm so quick to forgive Nathi sometimes scares me. He just apologizes and I'm over it. It's like no matter how hard I try, I just can't be mad at him. Which scares me because it feels like the love I have for him makes me blind.

We lay in bed with my head on his chest. We haven't been intimate, and to be honest I'm rather thankful. All we've done was kiss and cuddle, and that is all I needed. I needed to feel like we were one, not physically but mentally, and after the intense conversation we had a lot of things make more sense.

His reason for staying away was because of his anger towards himself. He feels like he wasn't man enough to protect me. Like he should've known about Msizi and Sizwe. Which is stupid. But as we all know men value their egos over almost everything

Him; what are you thinking about

Me: how much I love you and

how that scares me Him: that

makes two of us

Me: I'm just glad your home.

Him: I'm sorry I left.

Me; what did you do while you were away

Him; the only thing I know how to

do. Drink and workout Me; your

dad looked pissed as hell

Him; I don't blame him. Im

surprised you didn't kick me out Me;

(giggles) I should've. But I missed

you too much.

Him; did you really

Me; yes. And when I saw you walk in I felt relieved. I was angry, but above all relieved. I was scared you wouldn't come back. That maybe you had thought I was a mistake

Him; Tshidi I would've never left you. truth is I was scared you would blame me, so I beat you to it. I thought you would want nothing to do with me. Even when I came back I thought you were going to tell me to leave, but instead you made me breakfast.

Me; You said respect is important to you. its as important to me. Him; I know

Me; no more running. As you said in the beginning. We deal with things together Him; deal

Me: are you going back to work on Monday?

Him: yes. The closer Election Day gets the more complicated things will get

Me: are you and I going to be ok? I just don't want to lose us. In this whole thing

Him: I'm never letting you go Tshidi. Even if it means I have to kill again. I'd kill everything and anyone who got in the way of us

Me: you shouldn't say things like that Nathi. Especially since you don't like discussing this whole AXE thing

Him: there's nothing to discuss. That's not who I am anymore. It's not who any of us are. We've moved on. We're politicians now, but I won't think twice to do what I did

Me: just as long as you keep AXE away

from home. We'll be good
Him: I have a different way of dealing with "axe"

Me; oh really? How

Him; through handcuffing you and

torturing you sexually I burst out

laughing

Me: remind me to get rid

of those handcuffs Him:

don't. I love them

Me: you

are crazy

Him; crazy

for you

We sat in bed for hours just talking. The best part of a relationship is when you can talk. Really talk in each other's arms, and not have to think about sex.

At around 4pm, I decided to start getting dinner going. Aya was back for the first time since the whole Msizi thing happened, and I was really looking forward to seeing her.

Nathi helps chop veggies, while I cook. I put on some music, and for the first time since shit hit the fan, I feel like we are normal.

We're back to being us, and that alone make me over the moon.

Nathi's parents arrive, just as we finish cooking. I lay the table with Aya, who looks so much more grown than she did just a few days ago.

We all sit and Nathi's dad says grace. They all dig in the moment he says amen. I don't know why but for some reason I keep looking at Ndumiso.

Me; (clears throat) so Ma, how was your visit to malume?
Her; all's well, Koti. He is excited to represent
Nathi for the Lobola negotiations I just smile.

Nathi; so Ma, where is
Bandile arriving Her;
tomorrow

I look at him confused

Him; My brother. Ndumiso's father

I let out a sigh of relief, and I see Nathi smile.

Nathi; So Baba, how long do you think
the negotiations will take Him; we will
discuss that at another time Nathi

I look down and continue eating, then take the kids and put
them to bed.

Nathi stays behind to talk to his parents. Now that I know
that Ndumiso isn't his, it's easier to talk to him. He's actually
quite a cute boy. He's just a little younger than Aya, and he
speaks pure Zulu and English.

By the time Nathi comes to bed, I am out the shower.

Him; and since when don't you wait for me?

Me; you were taking too long

Him; Well, since I'm here now, I might as well take advantage of
your nakedness under that towel

He undoes my towel and it drops to the floor
I'm still a bit bruised, but most of
me is back to normal Him; I've

missed you

Me; not as much I've missed you

He comes closer and takes me into his arms, and I am lost. He makes loves to me like he did the very first time. He is gentle, and caring. Like I'm an egg that he doesn't want to break.

Every time I think he's finished he would start again. By the time he was done he had me singing like I was in a flipping orchestra. I just hope and pray that his parents didn't hear us.

36

(Please excuse all the spelling errors. I didnt have time to correct them)

This week has been the longest night ever ALL because of Nathi and his shenanigans, and now I have to wake up early and make breakfast for his parents. Mxm

I shove him off Me, and he opens his eyes puzzled Him:

Tshidi, are you trying to kill me

Me: if I have to wake up, then you have to wake up with me Him:

Tshidi, it's 5:30am

Me: I don't care. You kept me up last night.

He smiles at me

Him: don't act like you didn't enjoy it

I try not to smile when I

think about it, but i fail Me:

that's not the point

Him: how about I give you a little reminder of how good it

was. Maybe you won't be so grumpy afterwards

He takes my hand and puts it on his growing erection. I

want to pull my hand away but my body is already

responding.

Him: tell me you don't want it

I open my mouth to speak but he puts

his fingers in my honeypot. I let out a

groan

Him: Tell me to stop

I don't dare say a word. Not when he's massaging

my most sensitive part of my body He doesn't take

his eyes off of mine. Instead he takes his finger

away and stops Gosh I hate it when he does that

Me: Nathi that's not funny. You better wioe that damn smirk off your face

Him: I thought you

wanted me to stop Me:

did i tell you to stop?

Him: tell me what you want

Me: Nathi you know
what I want Him: no I
don't. I want you to
tell me Me: I want you
to make love to me

Him: no can do. I'm not exactly
in the mood for that Me: your
penis doesn't seem to agree

Him: I'm not making love to you

Me: then I'm going to go finish myself off in the shower

Him: I'll drown you in that stupid shower of yours. No wife of
mine will masturbate.

Me: well if my husband isn't fulfilling his duty, then I have no
choice but to relieve the very tension that you started in my
body

I try getting out of bed, but he pulls me back, and he's on top
of me in seconds. I try playfully fighting him off, but he
doesn't even move. He's too strong for me. So I give up and
look at him. I try not to smile, but the naught look in his eye
has me captivated

Him: and where do you think you're going

Me: to shower. I need to make
breakfast for your parents Him:
they can starve for all I care

Me: Nathi shame on you

Him: would you

rather cook, or play

He presses his

erection into me

Him: I take your moan is an

indication that you want to play I

nod

Him: good girl.

I think he is about to start but he gets up and goes to the

closet. He comes back with his tie in hand. Him: lift your

head

I do as told and he fixes the

tie around my eyes. Him:

now open wide

I do as told. And next thing I hear is the door close, and the key lock.

Me:

Nathi

(Silence)

ce)

Me: Nathi I swear I'm

going to kill you

(Silence)

I wait for a few seconds but Nathi dololo. I hastily untie the stupid tie, and throw it on the floor. I get up and make the bed then I go and take a quick shower. When I come out Nathi isn't back. Nxa this fool doesn't know me.

I walk downstairs and find Nathi placing breakfast on the table.

Aya and Ndumi are already eating, whirl his

mother pours the Orange juice Her: there you

are. How you feeling? Nathi told me you

weren't feeling so good I look at Nathi, and i see

him smile

Me: I feel better ma. Just

need something to eat Her:

sit. Your husband has made

you breakfast

I give a fake smile, and go sit with the kids. Nathi brings me breakfast and i feel him brush my hand with his

I look at at his stupid smile, and shake my head. I hope he washed his hands before touching my food.

I eat and make conversation with my overly joyous mother in

law. She keeps going on about the wedding, and how she plans on inviting the whole of KZN. I smile and pretend to listen. Nathi sits next to me, and i feel his hand on my thigh. I carry on eating a d talking to his mother as his hand goes higher and higher. I know what he's trying to do, and Lord knows I ha e to stop him before he reaches his target

His mother is busy telling me about how her wedding day went. And how Nathi's father was running late. The more we laugh and talk, the higher his hand goes.

I want to get up but I'm only halfway through my food. The only thing I'm grateful for the fact that his mother is sitting opposite me and can't see what her son is doing.

He reaches his target and i close my thighs shut, but he pinches me, and i open.

He moves his finger around my c**t. I nearly gasp, but i forget to swallow, and the juice goes down the wrong pipe.

I cough and grasp for air, and thankfully that's enough to get him away from, because his mother stands up to pat my back.

He still has that stupid smile on his face. I stop coughing and decide enough is enough. I'm not letting him near me. I excuse myself and start washing the dishes.

Aya leaves for school, while Nathi goes to get ready for work. I sit back with his mother and we have tea. I must say, I enjoy having her around. She is so lively and has quite a sense of humor.

Nathi comes down with just a
towel wrapped around him. Him:
baby, you riding take out my
clothes.

I look at him confused. Since when doni take out clothes for him. Then it dawns on me. He's trying to get me in the

bedroom. Well not happening

Me: Khumalo . Your navy suit is in the closet. I took it out
astnight, with you baby blue shirt, and your navy tie

I give him the two can play this game look.

Him baby. I can't find them. Please
come up and help me Thankfull his
mother steps in

Lhed: Nkosibathi, all these years you knew where your
clothes were. Now all of a sudden you need Tshidi to take
out clothes for you?

He walks back up with his tail between his legs, as his
mother and i continue with our conversation Her: you must
be harder on him.

ME: but shame ma. Look at how
dissapointed he looked Her: he's
37 year old man. H'll survive

He comes back down in his navy suit, looking

like my very own Morris Chestnut Him: I'm off

off to work. mill see you ladies later

His mother gives him a smile and goes

upstairs to go wake his father. The minute

she disappears he pulls me closer.

He lean in and whispers in my ear

Him: she won't be able to save you from what I have planned for you tonight.

He kisses my cheek, and leaves my heart racing. Knowing Nathi I am in for one hell of a night. But that is something I'm going to have to deal with later. For now, I need to get the other room ready, since his brother arrives today

I spend the day being the perfect Makoti. I make food, tea, and even bake scones.

Nathi's parents spend most of their time in the garden, it's evident the love they share for each other. They do everything together. His mother even reads the paper for BabKhumalo. I hope Nathi and I make it that far.

His brother arrives just as I lay dinner on the table. He comes with his wife Sibongile who in my opinion is an absolute beauty. They seem like the overly happy couple. They hug me the very first time they see me.

Just a few days ago the house was empty, now it's a full house. I've never heard so much laughter in one place.

Nathi arrives and the first thing he does, is punch his brother in the stomach. At first I worry, but his brother retaliates with a punch on the arm.

Nathi: you still
punch like a girl
Bandile: In your
dream bro.

He punches Nathi in the gut and I feel

my heart sink. Makhumalo: will you
two behave. Your not 2 year olds
anymore Nathi smiles and walks over
to me.

Him
: hi
Me:
hi

He gives me a kiss on the cheek and i blush. I make sure I step
away quickly. I can feel his families eyes burning Into us.

Me: I'll bring
dinner through
Sibongile: I'll
help

We head to the kitchen and she helps me lay the table. We
make conversation about small things. She seems like a nice
person.

She's only 4 years older than me, so At least we will be able to
get along.

Dinner with the Khumalo's was fun to watch, Bandile, and Nathi
have a bromance that I myself can't describe. It's nice seeing
Nathi around his family. He is so mucn more relaxed. It worms
my heart to see see his never ending smile for them.

We wrap up dinner, and i show Bandile and Sibongile to their
room.

Everyone retires for the night, except for Nathi and me. He locks up, while I take out everything I'll need for breakfast.

He comes around to where I am and i feel

his warm arms around me Him: you ready

to be punished?

The butterflies in my stomach roam around, while my nipples stand to attention. He nibbles on my ear, and rubs my nipples with his fingers

Her (clears throat)

Nathi let a go and i turn

around embarrassed Me

ma, I weHmmm

She smiles at us

Her: I just came to get some water for your father

I give her a bottle front the fridge, and she walks back upstairs.

I give Nathi an annoyed look, and instead of behaving, he picks

me up and springs me over his shoulder. Him: it's time i show

you who's boss around here

I try wiggle myself out of his hold but it's no use. He throws me on the bed and locks the door.

He stands in front of me and I already know that whatever he has planned for me is going to drive the both of us crazy.

37

Someone please explain to me why I'm grining at this savage fool infront of me, whom I know for a fact is going to drivr me crazy

He takes his tie out his pocket. But I've learned the hard way. No way I'm letting him do this to me again. Not after he left me hanging

Me: I'm not falling for that shit again
Him: trust me

Me: love them all,

but trust no one
He

smirks at me

Him: up

I stand up and stand

right infront of him.
Him:

hand on the air

I lift my hands and he lifts my dress over my head.

He unclips my bra and doesn't bother to take

my thing off. He just tears it. He turns me

around, and ties the tie over my eyes

Me: you better n.....

I feel my butt cheeks sting from the spanking that he's just given me

I want to turn around and slap the shit out of him, but he beats me to it, and spanks me again I let out a gasp, and he lifts me and puts me on the bed and cuffs my hands

Him: open wide

I shake my head. I can't see or touch him. Only God knows what he has in plan for me Him: Open Tshidi.

Now

I do as told.

Him: relax your body. I'm not going to leave you hanging. Trust m3 He says that and on cue I let go and let him be In

charge

I hear him take off his clothes and i brace myself for what's to come

I feel something over my nipples. It's not his tongue or fingers. It's soft. He moves it slowly accross to the next nipple.

I feel what I've concluded is a feather,

move down my stomach Him: keep

still Tshidi

I don't know how I'm supposed to keep still when he is torturing me

He moves the feather between my thighs, and i wiggle some more. He smacks the inside of my thighs, and i feel his tongue on my c**t. I need to sink my nails into him. I wa t to touch him but these Damn cuffs are stopping me

Him: shhhh Tshidi.

He eats me till I can't take anymore. Between his tongue and that damn feather, my pleasure tolerance has gone off the monitor.

Me: Nathi.... please..... I..... oh God Nathi If you don't

He enters in me and I let out what sounds like a cry. He doesn't stop to let me catch my breath.

Instead he rams into me over and over again, until I can't hold on. We both cum together calling every swearword possible. He has to put his hand over my mouth because of the noise. He collapses on me and I gasp for air

Me; Nathi..... get off

Him; what part of shhh
don't you understand Me;
get off, And for God's sake
uncuff me

He looks down at
me and smiled Me;
get off

He gets off and unties the tie and cuffs. He has that stupid grin on his face again.

Him; you are going to be the death of me
Me; get a towel and clean me up

He stands and does as instructed.

Him; The next time you think of depriving me of what's mine. You remember tonight. He puts the duvet over me and I fall asleep almost instantly.

Him; get up. I'm hungry

Me; mhmm

Him; Tshidi its

6:00am already.

Shit

I jump out of bed and get into the shower. I'm out in no time. Nathi is just looking at me like I've lost my mind

I run out but remember I need a doek. I go back and put on a doek and a scarf around my shoulders. Breakfast is ready just as everyone comes down

Phew.

Sibongile helps me lay the table and everyone digs in Bandile; so

today is the big day bra.

Nathi rolls his eyes

Nathi; baba, please make sure he doesn't screw this up for me. Knowing Bandile and Malume Khoza. I'm screwed

Makhumal. Nathi ... Language

Him; sorry ma .

BabKhumalo; don't worry son. By tonight, Tshidi will be your wife

Nathi smiles. Makhumalo looks at me and then at my wrists. Her face changes

I look at my wrists and I see they are bruised. Shit. I pull down my leaves, and do my best not to look at her. How am I going to explain this?

MaKhumalo; Makoti. What happened to your wrists? Lord help me

Nathi takes my hands and moves my sleeves. He looks at me and I see a bit of a smile. I know he's thinking about Last night.

MaKhumalo; Tshidi I'm talking to you

Me; (clears throat)

BabKhumalo; Nkosinathi what happened?

We both don't know what to say.

Me; it's nothing Ma. We just

Bandile; I'm sure it's nothing

Makhumalo; Nathi. Are you hurting this poor girl? A few days ago it was a blue eye and bruised legs, and now this

Lord

Nathi; Ma, I would never

MaKhumalo; and how do you explain this

Nathi; well ma, if you must know it's because I handcuffed her last night

I swear my stomach dropped. My heart sunk. I'm sure I look like a red hot plate right now. I can't believe this idiot

I try standing up but Nathi

pulls my hand down Him;

finish your breakfast

Sibongile is the one to break the ice. She just bursts out laughing. I feel my hands shaking. And then I hear the doorbell

Nathi stands up and goes to open the door. I hear what sounds like commotion. I turn around and it looks like the whole of Hluhlwe has come to my house. I see Uncle after uncle, after uncle walk in. Nathi's mother takes me and Sibongile upstairs to the bedroom. Apparently the uncles aren't allowed to see me before the negotiations are complete.

All three of us woman sit in awkward

silence in the upstairs lounge Sibongile;

Tshidi (claps once) Handcuffs ?

Makhumalo; yah. I

wasn't expecting that

Me; and we not have

this conversation

Sibongile; why not?

We're all adults

Makhumalo; Maybe I

should get a pair

Oh Lord

Sibongile burst out laughing. How am I ever going to be able to look at Nathi's mother the same again?

Like she is just on another level

Makhumalo; I thought I heard some noise last night. But I thought it was Bandile and NoSbongile. Only to find out it was my sweet new Makoti. Haai

I just sit there as these two continue to make fun of me. I don't say a darn word. I am too embarrassed. I

just sit and wish I could indulge in a bottle of wine.

38

I love Nathi. I really do. But the fact that his family leaves today is great.

I've spent the week with a full house. I've been cooking, cleaning and scrubbing like a mad person. I'm over wearing long dresses with scarves all over me.

I can't wait to get my nails done, and even go for a massage. I haven't been able to look at his mother since the handcuff situation.

Nathi on the other hand didn't seem fazed. He said he would rather have his parents know what we do in the bedroom than door them to think that he beats me. mxm,

The Lobola negotiations went well. I am officially Mrs Khumalo. All that's left is for us to have the actual traditional wedding.

Apparently the negotiations were easy. My father named his price for both myself and Aya, the Khumalo's agreed to it. Apparently they didn't even sit for an hour. They agreed and then had lunch. Just like that.

I have exactly 5 months to plan a 2 day wedding. And apparently after that Nathi wants an Heir.

I didn't discuss this because I'm not sure on how I feel about having a baby so quickly, Nathi and I have only been together for less than a year, and I just feel like we need to concentrate on us.

In my opinion we both still have a lot to learn about each other. Maybe another year from now. But for now. I don't plan on popping anything out.

As always Sibongile and I are up, making breakfast for the family. Sibongile and I have grown rather close the past week, she is a true reflection of what a modern wife looks like. I envy the way in which she takes care of her family. It's obvious how much love is shared between her and her husband.

She's also given me heads up on some of the family gossip. She had me laughing one night when BabKhumalo and MaKhumalo went out for dinner. We sat at the bar with wine and she told me about our sister in law Thokozile. Apparently she is the apple of her brother's eye. She lives overseas and is rather spoilt. She also told me about all the uncles and their wives. All in all they are a crazy family, and I love them

We have our last breakfast, and once we're done

MaKhumalo calls me and Sibongile to the side. She sits in-between us and smiles

Her; I just want to thank both of you for making my sons so happy. Sibongile you have been such a backbone to this family. Your grace and humbleness is something I still admire 9 years after you joined us. Thankyou

She looks at me

Her; Tshidi I don't even know where to begin. You came into NkosiNathi's life when he needed you the most, and you turned his life around. He hardly took our calls. He was distant and whenever he answered my heart broke, because I knew as a mother there was nothing I could do. But the day he called and told me Ma. I found her, was the happiest day of my life. It was a day that I had prayed for.

I literally have tears in my eyes. Little does she know how he saved me.

Her; Tshidi, Sibongile the future of this family is in your hands. It's up to you to help these crazy children of mine to fulfil their

roles, and usually woman, we lose ourselves in our roles so just know if either of you need me, all you have to do is call me. If they give you problems, you call me. Tshidi, Nathi must be home by 8pm. I don't care how busy he is. He needs to be home in time to put Ayanda to bed.

I just nod. I can't. I know I'll cry

She stands up and gives us both a hug.

Her; I'll see you both soon.

We say a prayer and everyone leaves. Aya walks over to Rifiloe's house to see Olwetho, and I am left with my crazy beautiful husband.

Him; Phew, I thought they would never leave Me;

Nathi

Him; what? I love them. But I missed having you all to myself

Me; well since its just the two of us, we might as well start planning the wedding

Him; we? Cha baby. That's your job. You just tell me how much you need

Me; I was hoping you would help.

Him; what do I know about weddings?

Maybe you should get a planner Me; now theres an idea

Him; see. We

both win I roll

my eyes at

him

Him; now that we have some spare time. How about we

I jump off the couch because I already know what he wants.

Him; you can run, but you

know you can't hide Me; I'm

on my periods. Stay away

Him;

damn it

Me;

uzobastro

ng

Him; mxx, well then since we can't do that, how about we go out for the day

Me; out? Where

Him; I don't know. See

a movie maybe Me; We

have a cinema

downstairs Him; I

know. but I just feel

going out. Me; ok. I'll

go get dressed

Him; what's wrong with what you're wearing

I throw my doek

and scarf at him

Him; I was just

saying

I change into jean shorts and a top. Just to annoy him. Nathi mustn't think I'm going to let him dictate what I wear.

I walk down and I already know he is displeased

Him; but MaKhumalo, how am I supposed to be ok with you wearing that

Me; what's wrong with my shorts? It's not like I've got cellulite

Him; that's not the point. You're a married woman now. I won't have you dressed like that

Me; Nathi

Him; no. go change Now

Me; mxm

I take a step up the stairs, and holds onto my hand. I turn around and I see that he is pissed

Him; we're not going to have this conversation again. I won't have men drooling over you

I snatch my hand out of his and go change into long jeans instead. I walk back down and he smiles

Him; that's better

Me; lets go

I walk away but he holds onto my had

Him; you're mad at me now

Me; yes

Him; askies my baby. I should've been nicer about it

Me; its fine... Come. Let's go

We leave and to be honest I really do enjoy my day with him. it felt like we were a normal couple for once. Well, except for the security following us.

I'm shocked when Nathi gets asked for an autograph. Since when is he a celebrity?

After watching some boring movie about dinosaurs, we go to the grill house for lunch

I order my usual fillet with veg, while Nathi goes all out with T-bone and chips and vegetables.

I guess it's a good thing he eats so much, with the amount of weights he lifts.

We're in the middle of lunch talking about random things, when some chick walks up to him and taps him on the shoulder.

Him;

Ntsiki

Her;

Hey

you

He stands up and gives her a long hug. Yes I counted and I concluded it was too long for my liking. I just sit there

looking at them. He finally breaks the hug and looks at me

Him; Oh... this is my wife Matshidiso Tshidi, this is Ntsiki ...an old high school friend

I put on my

fake smile

Me; Hi

Her; Hi

She turns her attention back to Nathi

Her; we should do lunch sometime this week. You know. Catch up

He looks at me

Him; yes. I'm sure that would be nice. You should come over to the house. My wife is an amazing cook.

Nathi takes down her numbers and she gives him another hug and leaves.

Breath Tshidi Breath

Him; wow, it's a small world. I
haven't seen her in forever. Me;
mhmm

He looks up at me
questionably Him;
and that look
Me; nothing

I push my plate to the side irritated. The idiot opposite me doesn't even notice. He's busy telling me stories on how close they were while growing up, and blah blah blah. I want to tell him to fuck off, but I don't. Instead I play it cool, and hope for his sake i don't decide to poison this chick. What gives him the right to invite her over to our house without at least discussing it with me? Nxa and here he sits with that stupid smirk on his face

Him; Tshidi jealousy doesn't suit you baby. Not one bit
I literally close my eyes and say a 2 sec prayer asking
God to forgive for killing my husband Me; are you done?
Id like to go home

Him; but Tshidi, whats with the face. You look like you
are getting ready to murder someone Me; yes you. And I
would prefer to kill you at home

He takes my hand in his

Him; baby you know I love you mos. You don't have to feel
threatened by ANYONE.

Me; threatened? Me? never

Him; then fix your face and finish your dinner

He kisses hand and continues eating. I put aside what just happened, and finish my food. I may have put it a side, but I haven't forgotten. Something about this chick rubs me off the wrong side. I think I need to call a 911 meeting with the girls. They'll know how to deal with this.

39

(sorry for spelling errors. Im still a bit hectic ❤️<3)

This gremlin woman named Ntsiki keeps playing on my mind. Its all, about how she looked at me when Nathi introduced us. I send the girls a message simply saying 911 in our whatsapp group.

They all respond and tell me their in the way. All I need now us to get Nathi out the house for a few hours

I go to his man cave, where he retired to after our day out. Me:

Baby

Him: mhmm

Me: the girls are coming over to discuss the wedding.

They've agreed to help me with the planning. Him: Thats nice of them

Me: yah, I was thinking you can join us. Maybe you might have an idea on some things

Him: aahhhmm.

Me: it will be fun. You could help me pick out a dress from the magazines, or maybe look at venues oh and cakes.

I see Nathi look worried.

Him: yaz, baby, I just forgot. I promised Siya I would come over. He needs help with some documents. Me : ahhh, that's a pity. But it's fine. I'll keep you updated.

He smiles, and rushes out the room. I laugh because he may think he filled me, but little does he know I fooled him.

I take out a few bottles of wine from the cellar,
and get snacks ready for the girls. They all arrive
one after the other. Boni walks in last and a tool
box with her

We all looked at her puzzled

Her: what? You said 911, I thought I should come
prepared. Plus Hlokes took my gun We all burst out
laughing. I didn't realise how much I missed my
hitches

We all sit I the lounge with our wine

Me: thanks for coming.

I've got a problem Fifi:

what's wrong?

Me: well, Nathi and i went to the movie's today, then lunch and

while we were at lunch some that looking prude taps him on the shoulder. Apparently they were like the best of friends during high school. Then she says to him and i quote "we should catch up. Maybe do lunch or something"

I look that Boni and already I know she is planning a murder Dourine:
what did Nathi say?

Me: he invites her to lunch here at the house and tells her I'm a good cook Busi: mhmm I think that's a good thing

Me: yes. But something about the gremlin makes me uncomfortable Fifi: I know the feeling

Me: I have a bitch radar, and right now it's going off

Boni: I say we kill her. No use waiting for

Nathi to actually fall for her Busi: No maan, Boni. Maybe it's not like that.

Boni: ok. On a serious note. do you know her name Me: yah

Ntsiki

Boni takes out her phone

and types something Her:

Do you have a surname

I shake my head

Her: it's fine. We won't need it. What restaurant were you at Me:

grillhouse rosebank

She continues typing

Her: I'll get video footage from the restaurant. Well use that to identify her. Then we start digging I look at her shocked. How the hell is she going to get all this. She winks at me,

Her; in the meantime

She opens her toolbox and takes out small packet with white looking powder in it. Me: whats this?

Her: you put in

her food Me:

I'm not

poisoning Boni

Boni: who said anything about poison? This is just to (clears throat) give her the runs Me: huh?

Noni: gosh Tshidi you are so slow. You put this in her food. She takes a few bites and I'm telling you she will be out your houses in a matter of minutes. She might fart a bit, and that will put Nathi off her

I'm trying really hard not to laugh. But I just can't hold in the laughter. The girls are beside themselves with laughter

Me: Boni, have you ever

used this before Boni:

yes once.

Fifi: on who?

Boni: some chick. But I nearly used it you once. But then I

realized you were over Hlokes for real. we all, laugh. We weren't expecting that.

She gives me the white powder and i put it my bra. I'm not sure I'm going to use it. it feels a little extreme. But I keep it anyway. You never know when you'll need it. But I know for a fact that I will be having her over.

The girls have convinced me that this will be a good way to get to know her. Plus you know what theysay mos. Keep your friends close, and your enemies closer.

Busi: Tshidi, how was it having

Nathis family here? Me: it was

fine , but highly embarrassing

Dourine: what happened

Me:Well, where do I start. Hmmm Nathi's mother caught us kind of making out Busi making out?

Me: he was nibbling on my ear, and

was pinching my nipples Fifi: oh my

gosh

Boni: but why was she

in your room Me: she

wasn't. We were in the

kitchen Boni: I knew you

were freak

Me: that's not all of it. Then she heard us getting it on. The next morning she sees my wrists are bruised and she asks me what happened. So me being who I am, try finding a non-existent excuse, but she persists. She even thinks that maybe

Nathi is the cause. Then out of nowhere Nathi tells her its because he handcuffed me the night before

They all gasp

Me: it gets worse. She tells me she thinks she should get a pair. I've never been so embarrassed in my whole life,

Busi: that is just raw

Me: you have no idea. And mind you , the very first time she met me was in Nathi's bedroom.

The girls tease and make fun of me. But the one the one thing we all agree on is that my mother in law is the ish.

The girls leave and Nathi returns. Aya and the rest of the kids are having a sleep over at Busi's house, so it's just me and my boo.

We sit on the couch drinking wine, and just watching some stupid reality show. Nathi doesn't consecrate, he's too busy on his phone .

Him:

MaKhuma

lo Me:

baby

Him: I'm speaking to Ntsiki. Can we do lunch tomorrow instead of a dinner during the week? Me: she's messaging you?

Him:

yes

Me:

mhmm

Him: and?

Can we?

Me: yah,
sure

I had thought I wouldn't use the stuff Boni gave me, i wanted to speak to Nathi about my feelings, but the fact that this chick is messaging my man, changes my mind in a heartbeat. And knowing Nathi, he will tell me I'm jealous, so I will deal with the gremlin in my own way.

I decide to retire for the night. Nathi is so busy texting this thing, that i feel like if I sit any longer I'm going to slap the shit out of him.

I take a bath, and drink my painkillers. My periods are rather heavy, and the pain inst exactly helping my mood.

I have no idea when Nathi came to bed, all I know is that I wake up today and he's lying next to me.

I smile when. It's not often that I was me up before him. I trace my finger along the outline of his face, and admire his beautiful dark features.

He opens vividly opens his eyes. He looks like such a baby.

His lips lift into a smile. I lean in and kiss him, catching him off guard. Him: morning

to you too

Me: morning sleepy head

Him: I came to bed and you were fast asleep

Me: I was tired. And i know you were busy, and i didn't want to bother you Him: what's

the plan for today?

Me: I'm going to church for the early morning service, then I'm coming back to cook lunch for your friend

I see him smile

Him: thank you baby. It means a lot.

Me: it's my pleasure. I can see you're very fond of her

Him: Yah. She was

Thandiwe's maid of honour

Breathe Tshidi Breathe

Me; that's nice

I get up and go take a shower. I get dressed for church, and don't bother even making breakfast for him.

I kiss him and leave.

I know he wants to say something but I'm late. He can wait. Plus he should be grateful that I'm going to church. Maybe God will convince me not to kill him.. nxa

As always church is the best. I am able to put everything I'm feeling aside, I leave feeling better. The pastor spoke about repentance. I want to repent but I'm not ready yet. Don't judge me, this woman started it.

When I get back home Nathi is in the study working. As always I give him a kiss, and he smiles

Him; how was church?

Me; good. As always. What did you have for breakfast?

Him; I haven't eaten. My wife didn't make me breakfast

Me; well then you should've made something for yourself

I stand up to leave, but he pulls me onto his lap.

Him; I'm sorry I mentioned Thandiwe earlier. It wasn't my intention to upset you. It just slipped out

I put on my

convincing fake

smile. Me; its fine

Him; Tshidi, that's the same smile you gave Ntsiki the first time you met her. I know it's fake

I roll my eyes and frown

Me; its fine baby. I can't erase her from your life. I know she's in the past. I just think that if you two had divorced I would've been able to live with it. but it's just difficult because I feel like I'm competing with her in your heart, because you lost her
Him; that's not true Tshidi. You're not competing with anyone
Me; then why are her things still in your old house? Why haven't you sold the house? I know when you left me here and went there it was because you needed to feel close to her

I see his face go blank. I know my man, and I know right now that I am 100% correct in my assumptions.

Him; Tshidi

Me; you don't have to say anything.

I get up, and go change, then start making lunch. I decide to make beef stew. Ill add some chilli to it to cover the taste of what Boni gave me

Ntsiki arrives, just as I switch off the stove.

She gives me a cold hug, but give Nathi a huge ass hug and that seals the deal.

I decide I'm not going to lay lunch on the table. Ill dish up for them instead. so i can spike her food

Me; baby, will you get a bottle of wine from the cellar? The girls finished the ones I had brought up yesterday

He winks, and goes

Her; you guys have
a lovely home Me;
thank you

Her; its a lot more extravagant than the one he shared with Thandi. But then again she was a very simple person. thats why he loved her so much

I just fake smile.

Nathi returns and I stand up to make dish up, while he opens the wine.

I dish up Nathi's food in a gold and white china. While I use the white and silver for me and the gremlin.

I take their food through, and then mine. Nathi sits at the head of the table while Ntsiki and I sit on opposite sides. I

say grace and we dig in.

Him; Tshidi, this is amazing. As always my love

I smile, and look over at his place, and I feel my heart stop. I specifically gave him the gold and white plate, because I had put the stuff Boni gave me in the silver plate that I gave to Ntsiki. But here he sits with a silver and white plate. I look at Ntsiki and she has his plate.

Shit

I want to take the plate from him, but I can't figure out what I'm going to use as an excuse. Ntsiki; yah. It's amazing. You really are a good cook Nathi; and the best designer

I just smile. My heart is beating at a rate of 100

I see Nathi start sweating a bit. I

hand him a glass of water Him; is

the air-con on

Me; yes

Him; it's a bit hot in here

Me; yah,

The conversation pretty much flows between the two of them. I just sit and pray. But then I see him flinch.

Oh God

Him; will you ladies excuse me. I'm not feeling to well,

He gets up and walks upstairs

Her; oh, I hope

he's ok Me;

I'm sure he'll

be fine

We sit in an awkward silence and finish the rest of our lunch without Nathi. I just want this chick to go. I need to attend to my poor husband who is probably dying from diarrhea

Her; I'm guessing he's not

coming back Me; yah. I'm

sure you guys can

reschedule Her; I think I

should go

Me; yes. I'll get him to call you

Her; ok

She takes her bag and leaves, and I run up the stairs. I knock on the bathroom door me; baby

Him; get out

the room Me;

are you ok

Him; Tshidi, for god's sake get out

Me; Nathi. I just want to make sure you're ok

Him; I'm fine. Just go link up with the girls. I'll see you later

Me; ok

I take my bag and run out the house. I am running straight to Boni's house. This bitch better have an antidote for this.

40

I get in the car and my driver drives off. He is driving at a normal speed, but I am so nervous, I feel like we're not moving at all.

I get to Boni's house and find her and Hlokes chilling.

Her; Tshidi. whats wrong.? You look like you've seen a ghost

Me;we talk. In private

Hlokes; well, this is my cue. Ill be at

Nathi's place if you need me babe Me;

No... Ahmm Nathi isnt feeling too well.

Hlokes; whats

wrong with him?

Me; Nothing

Him; you just said

Me; Hlokes. Go to siya's house. Don't go to mine

He gives me a weird look, and leaves

Boni; Tshidi, what's wrong?

Me; I used that stuff

you gave me She

bursts out laughing

Her; and? Its works well doesn't it

Me; yes. But Nathi took her plate.

He ate her food instead Her; wait.

You mean

I nod

Her;

shit

Me; yah, exactly. He is

going to kill me Her;

does he know you

spiked her food

Me; no. but he's not stupid. He's going to connect the dots

Her; shit

Me; don't you have an antidote or something

Her; no.

Me; oh God. He is going to kill me

I sit on her couch and drink a glass of wine that's on the table. I

don't care who was drinking from it. all I

need now is some serious liquid courage

Her; come

Me; where

are going

Her; to the

chemist

Gosh, why didn't I think of it?

We leave for the chemist, and luckily they are able to give us something without a prescription.

I walk back into the house way after dark. I don't have the courage to leave Boni's house any earlier.

I walk up the stairs, and find Nathi sitting on the bed with his laptop on his lap Me; heeyy

baby

He looks at me and doesn't respond

Him; is this the time that a married woman comes home?

I look at my watch and it's already 9pm

Me; sorry baby. I got you this

I take out the meds and hand it to him. He just takes the packet and throws it aside We stare at each other. I feel guilty. Really really guilty

Him; are you going to confess or do I

have to drag it out of you Oh God

Me; bbbbaabby... I..... I don't I just

Him; Tshidi you could've killed her. What if

she had an allergic reaction? Me; Nathi. I

wasn't thinking straight. I was being stupid

and jealous

Him; I actually can't believe you would do something so stupid.

Me; Nathi. I'm sorry. It's just, the way you spoke about her. And

the long hugs. You even gave her your

number right in front of me

Him; would you have preferred for me to keep it a secret?

Me; no. but Nathi remember how mad you got when you

saw me speaking to Dourine's brother? Him; I don't care

Me; well I do. You can't expect me to be ok with what you did.

You just gave her your numbers as

though I wasn't there. Don't even gets me going about that

stupid smile you had on your face. Oh and yesterday all you did

was sit on your phone talking to her. Why do you think I left

you and went to bed? Him; Tshidi are you serious right now

Me; dead serious

Him, why didn't you tell me

Me; because. You're my man. You're supposed to know that's

not ok

Him; come here

I sit and lay my head on his lap.

Him; can you behave from now on. Please Tshidi

Me; I'll try

Him; no more spiking people's food

Me; as long as you keep those skanks away from us

Him; Tshidi she's a friend

Me; so you're ok with me

having guy friends? Him;
Tshidi let's not even go
there

Me; but baby that's a double standard. If you can't stand men
around me, how am I supposed to be
comfortable with woman around you?

Him; Tshidi it's different. I have no intentions of being with any
other woman but you. The guys who
come around you are just looking to get lucky

Me; is that what you were looking to do when we met

Him; no. of Couse not. I knew from the beginning I
was going to marry your crazy ass Me; speaking of
asses. How do you feel?

Him; let's not even go there. You better thank Hlokes

Me; I'm sorry baby. I didn't mean to hurt you. I just wanted that
gremlin out my house. Out our lives

Him; you do realize I am not going

to let this go this easily. I look up at

him scared

Me; what do you mean Nathi

Him; Im going to spank
the shit out of you Me;

Nathi

Him; sshhh. Im just letting you know. and I don't plan on using
my hand.

I look at up him and see that he is not joking. He is going to
flipping kill me

Me: but baby

Him: and where on earth

did you get this stuff Me:

ish baby. Just leave it

alone

Him: Boni gave it to

you didn't she? Me:

no. Never. She

wouldn't

Him: Tshidi. If you are uncomfortable with something you

speak to me. You don't plot and scheme. It's not you.

Me: sorry baby

Him: I'll speak Ntsiki tomorrow. I'm

sure she'll understand Oh gosh

here we go again

Me: But Nathi. Why do you have to discuss anything

with her about us? This is OUR marriage Him: so what do

you suggest I do

Me: just block her.

Him: Tshidi, that isn't exactly kind

Me: I don't care. You're my husband. She should've been

woman enough to keep her distance from you in the first place

Him: you are so

damn possessive

Me: let a bitch try

me.

Him: it's kind of sexy

Me: I'm glad you're not mad at me

Him: I don't think I can stay mad at you. But don't t you dare

take advantage of that. I'll put you in your place.

He gives me that don't try me look, and i smile. I know he wants to intimidate me, but I'm too happy to be mad.

I take a shower, then get ready for bed.

Nathis back on his laptop. Me: Khumalo

Him: baby

Me: please move

the laptop Him:

but I'm working

Me: I want

to cuddle

Him: Tshidi

maan Me:

baby Maan

Him; how am I supposed to keep up

our lifestyle if I don't work Me: Nathi.

You're a billionaire. You don't need

more money Him: that's not the point

Me: and you only have one wife

Him: you know I'm Zulu right? I can

always take a second wife. I give him

the dirtiest face possible. In fact now

I'm pissed. Nxa,

I get Into bed, and face in the opposite direction. He

must think he's clever, and he's not He puts his laptop

aside, and cuddles me from behind

Him:

Nunu

Me:

(Silence

) Him:

baby

Me

(silence

)

Him:

MaKhuma

lo Me:

mhmm

Him: you don't want daddy to take a second wife?

Me: Nathi I swear, I'll cut your dick off in your sleep if you even think of that Him: I wouldn't expect anything less from my poison feeding wife

He laughs at his stupid comments, and i nudge him in the stomach with my elbow. He turns me around and next thing I know he is on top of me

Him: you're really cute when you're mad Me: Nathi. Nathi. Don't try me

Him: ok, ok baby. You know I only have eyes for you. Me: good. Now give me a kiss.

He leans down and gives me a kiss that sets every part of me in fire. His hands sneak under my PJ's and i shiver with the skin to skin contact.

I hear his phone ring and he doesn't answer. But then it rings again. He looks at the caller ID and gives the phone to me.

Him: it's a private number. Must be a telemarketer, will you answer it while I go take a shower. I answer the phone and he goes to the bathroom

Me: hello

Her: (breathing)

Me: hello. Is anyone there

Her:

Nkosinathi?

Me: hi, sorry, he's in the shower. Can I take a message

She drops the call and I'm left wondering who she is. Maybe it's a wrong number.

I put his phone on his pillow, and watch some tv, while I wait for him to finish with his shower.

I know what I did was stupid. I honestly don't know why I let my jealousy cloud my judgement. I'm just glad that Nathi isn't as mad as I thought he would be. But i wont be stopping my inveatigation on Ntsiki. I know she up to something and

whatever it is i plan on stopping its

Monday mornings are the worst. I hate getting up, but i don't t have a choice. I need to work out. I've been too lazy lately! But now its time to get my butt Into shape.

Nathi wakes up with me and we have a full work out together. By the time we're done i am sweaty and in need of a serious shower

Him: can I
join you

Me: in your
dreams

Him: but baby its been 3 days already

Me: so? Nature is nature. I can't
to anything about it

Him: but
baby, I'm dying here. Look

He literally pulls out his P***s and
its flipping rock hard.

Me: Nathi.
put that thing away.

Him: baby Maan. I'm dying
here. Help a brother out

Me:
how did you survive before we
were married?

Him: you don't
want to know. Trust me

Me: Nathi move. I need to
get in the shower

Him: and
my situation?

Me: you need to get that thing away from me.

Him: yaz Tshidi, I'm going to add this to your punishment. For real Me: whatever

I get in bath and he uses the shower. I feel bad, but Nathi needs to learn that he can't always have what he wants.

We sit and haave breakfast together

Him: what time is your interview?

Me: 10:00am

Him: is that all you have planned for today

Me: I'm passing by the boutique, and then, I'm going past the hospital to see tools. Him: why do you want to see him

Me: don't start. I'm going to see him and that's that Him: some one grew son balls

I blow him a kiss, and leave for S.A. news. Im not going to argue about me seeing tools. Nathi needs to learn to control his jealousy

When I arrive my entire team is there waiting for me. They do my hair, and make up and we decide on make an outfit for the day.

I decide to go with the baby pink ensemble. It's simple, yet elegant and I'm sure Nathi would approve. Dominique only arrives just as im about to go on air.

The interview goes better than I could've dreamed of. The other girls had already done theirs. I was the only one outstanding, and it felt good to get it over and done with.

I hope Nathi was happy with my answers. I didn't stray from the answers that the team gave me. There were a few questions that the presenter asked me that weren't in the copy they gave me, but i answered them to the best of my ability. She tried to get me to open up about my personal life, but i

politely declined to answer.

We leave S.A. news, and I head directly to my boutique, and to my surprise things are going as well. I am going to have to start designing the wedding gowns soon, because my offer to purchase the space opposite the boutique was accepted. So that just means more on my plate. And to make things worse, Aya and Olwetho are insisting on going to the S.A. boarding school for science. Like really. Aya is only in grade 2 and she was accepted.

I look at her acceptance letter and I just put it in my bag. I'm not sure how I feel about her being that far away from me.

I step out the boutique and bump into Dominique

Her: Tshidi. I'm sorry to bother you. But I've been calling Me:

what's wrong

Her: there's a sight we need to go see for your shelter Me: a

sight?

Her: well it's actually an old hospital that is for sale. It's empty and would be perfect for your woman abuse shelter

Me: oh, ok.

I text Nathi and let him know about my change of plans.

As much as I don't like Dominique I must admit

she is good at what she does. Her: so can we go ahead and purchase it?

Me: I need Nathi to see it first. I'm sure once he's seen it he'll love it Her: ok

Me please start looking at contractors the place needs a bit of maintenance her: consider it done

Me: thank you

I get home and I'm feeling good. Today was a productive day, and nothing beats productivity. Not ever. I'm as glad to see tools doing so much better.

I've never been this nervous in my life. Nathi and I have already done this twice and both times it was perfect. But now that the big day is here I am nervous.

My mother and sisters are fussing over every little thing. It's funny how much closer I've gotten with the rest of my family.

The past 4 months have led me to appreciate and accept them for who they are.

Me: ma. Will you stop crying.

You'll ruin your make up Her: I

know. It's just that. I'm so happy

I smile as my hairdresser finishes the finishing touches to my hair Lerato:

Tshidi. Nathi wants to speak to you

I take the

phone at her a

Me: baby

Him: I miss you

Me: I'm seeing you in

less than an hour Him: I

can't wait

Me: are you at the

venue already Him:

yes

Me: is everything ok

Her: Tshidi relax. The girls are all here and they've made sure everything is perfect

Me: ok. I'll see

you in a bit

Him:
I love you

Me: I love you more

When I walk down the aisle With my father by my side feels perfect.

We say our vows and and for the 3rd time this year we are pronounced husband and wife.

The traditional ceremony is intense and huge. His mother wasn't joking when she said she was inviting the whole of S.A. she even wanted us to televise our wedding, but i refused.

Nathi was already the peoples person. The one thing I insist on keeping private, is our love life.

By the time Nathi and i get to bed after the 2 day wedding, we are both drained. I'm supposed to be staying with my mother in law for about a month. But I have the opening of the woman's shelter opening in 2 days. Hell, we didn't even get to go on a honeymoon. Nathi promised that since the elections are a few days from now, we could go away once he was settled in his position.

Him: so now we're finally married.

You are Khumalo wife

Me: yep.
You're stuck with me for life

Him: I wouldn't have it any other way

I cuddle my head on his chest, and think about how much my life has changed in the past couple of months. I get along more with my siblings. We're not perfect, but at least we are trying. My parents and i have found what I call common ground. They understand and respect my decision to marry Nathi so soon. And despite my heart hurting when Aya left for this boarding

school of hers. I'm pleased that she is doing well and is happy at her new school

Who knew just a few ,moths ago that this was what God had planned for me? Back then all I thought about was being beaten, I didn't understand what it was to be loved. But today I understand it all. Nathi has been such a pillar to me. I don't know what I would do without him.

We leave KZN on Monday, and i am overjoyed to be back I my own house .

Nathi goes straight to the office when we arrive. I know he's busy, I just wished we could've spent more time together. He's been really hectic the last couple of months. But I decide to let it go. I knew what I was getting myself into when I married him. And anyway I think it's better I consertrate on the opening of the woman's centre tomorrow. The last thing I need is to have this thing flop, when the media will be there.

The last few months have been a real eye opener for me.

Nathi and i have become some public figure what what.

Everywhere we go there are reporters there. Even at the wedding with all the security we had, news outlets were packed outside. I'm not a fan of the attention that we're getting but i am grateful that Aya isn't around to witness all of this. It just wouldn't be fair.

I've been criticised, ridiculed, and looked Down upon by the media. Some of them even call me plain Jane of the group. At first it used to hurt me, but now I am way over it.

I go through the agenda, and my speech for tomorrow. I practice it to the best of my ability. I've spoken to my team and as always they have everything under cotrol.

Nathi arrives home as I

finish cooking dinner. Him:
all we need now is to make
you pregnant

He walks over to me, lifts me up and puts
me on the kitchen counter Him; you're
barefoot and soon hopefully you'll be
pregnant

Me: in your dreams. I still
have my implant Him:
when did you get another
one inserted Me; another?

Him: yes. Didn't Hlokes take it out after the kidnapping saga I look at Nathi shocked

Me: what are you talking about

Him: Hlokes has said he needs to take out the implant. He said all the meds they were going to give you were going to stop it from working anyway

Me: Nathi. Why am I only hearing about this now Him;

Tshidi. I thought you knew

Me: well I didn't and Hlokes didn't tell me either

Him: I'm sorry. At that time things happened so quickly. It slipped my mind Me: I need to

get on a contraceptive asap

Him: I don't see why

Me: because we can't have a child now. Him:

why not

Me: because we are both at the peak of our careers. I've just opened the bridal boutique. I can't Him: Tshidi I'm not getting any younger

I see that this baby thing is frustrating him, and wells that's not , intention. I'm just glad that I'm not pregnant already.

Me: baby. I'll make a deal with you Him

I'm listening

Me: I'll give you a baby. Just give me a few months Him:

how many months

Me; 4. Max

Him: I can live with that

Me: good. Now why don't you have dinner,
while I go get your surprise ready I see his face
light up

Him:

surprise?

? Me: yes.

I leave him in the kitchen and head upstairs to change. Boni
made me buy some barely there leather lingerie that comes
with a matching floggef.

I make sure I dim the lights. I

hope he likes this. He walks

in and i pray he doesn't

laugh.

I'm sitting on the bed, with my legs spread.

He closes the door and stares at

me, his mouth wide open Him; Tsì

I don't respond. He walks to

the bed and smiles Him: you

look so sexy

I pull out the flogger from under the pillow, and his
face lights up like a Christmas tree I stand up and he

tries to touch me, but i smack his hand

He looks at me

puzzled Me:

take off your

clothes

He tries to touch me, touch me

again, but i hit him harder Him: I said

take off your clothes

He looks
surprised
Me: now

He steps back and
starts does as told.

Him: I'm naked. Now
what

I take out the cuffs, and put
them around him Me: on
your knees.

He kneels

Me: good. Now kiss me. Here

He smiles as I spread my legs a bit.

The feel of his tounge in me makes me weak at the knees,
especially with him on his knees and me standing.

He licks and sucks till I
push his face away. I go
down on one knee and
kiss him.

Me: good. Now sit
not the bed Him:

no

Me: what
did you say

Him: I said

no

I take the flogger, and hit
him on his back. Him: shit

Tshidi

Me: the bed

Nathi. Now He

sits on the

bed.

Me: no

touching.

Him: but

Me: if you touch I will stop

I hear him growl when I take off the top part of the leather top

I get on the bed with him, and put my lips over his

cock and start to suck, really suck. Him: baby.....,

shit.... Ts.....Tsi. oh God

I suck faster and massage his balls at the same time.

Him: Tshidi. Please..... baby... I Tsi..... oh please baby.. please

I pull away and he lets out another growl

as he tries to catch his breath Him: baby..

take these off. Please

I shake my head, and sit on

top of him instead. Him:

Tshidi don't you dare

I unclip the bottom part of the lingerie, and

slowly lower myself onto him. He moves his

hands trying to touch me, but i slap him

Me: no

I move up and down slowly. I know im

torturing him, but I kind of love it I start to

move again, slowly, and i see actual sweat

come down his face Him: I'm going to kill

you Tshidi. I swear

I move a little faster, and i feel him tense up. I can feel I'm

close and I'll be damped if I don't let go. I move a little faster

and in no time I let go and crumble around him.

When is finally come back to

reality, I decide to get up Him:

Tshidi where are you going

Me: I'm done.

Him: you can't leave

me hanging Tshidi Me:

says who

Him: baby. Maan, please

I look at his pouting lips and no i resist. I take the keys and undo his cuffs.

I don't even get to put the cuffs down. Nathi has me by the waist and throws me on the bed. I knew what I was doing when I was teasing him. I flipping unleashed the fucking animal in him and now he was going to devour me

He rams into me from behind. I let out a scream, as he rams into me again. He did say he was going to kill me

I feel a sharp sting as he flogs my butt. This goes on for at least another ten minutes, I build again and we both finally let go calling Each others name.

We both lay in the aftermath of our lovemaking and do the best to catch our breath Him: you are fucking crazy

Me: Crazy about you. Yes

Him: best decision I made was marrying you

I lay on his chest, and eventually doze off in his arms. I know going forward we aren't going to be able to have enough time together, at least I gave him something to remember me by.

42

I knew that the opening of abuse shelter would be big, but i honestly never anticipated so many people, and reporters. There's even a helicopter roaming around.

Nathi takes my hand as

we sit in the car Him:

you're going to be fine

I semi smile

Him: you were born for this Tshidi. Look at how man

people came to support your cause. Me: let's go

Tools drives in through the private entrance. I want to give Nathi a tour of the facility before anyone else.

Him: this is impressive

Me: thanks baby

Him: how many victims are you going to be able to facilitate

Me: 1000 at a time. The last 2 floors is the hospital area. Where doctors will be able to help injured woman, then the other floors is the actual shelter. Once a victim is admitted, they get a room here. They see a pshycologist, and the doctors, then they get skills training, and we help them find jobs

He looks at me with a smile

Him; you did well baby.

Me; thank you baby

He gives me a kiss, and i see a flash go off. Flipping cameras. Nxa

Him: don't mind them.

I run down the details of the day for the last time with my team.

The very first batch of victims have arrived and been placed. All that's needed now is for me to do the press conference.

I walk on the mini podium, and i see my friends and family in the front. There are photographers, everywhere. It's actually quite intimidating, but i look at my girls, and i know I can do this.

Me: Good afternoon everyone, thank you all for coming to support, what I beleive is a worthy cause that is very close to Me.

I look down at my speech and decide I'm not going to stick to it. It wasn't written by me, but by someone else. I'm going to speak from the heart instead.

Me: I had a speech prepared, but I'm going to speak from my heart.

Me: a lot of people are saying that this is all a publicity stunt. That we as wives just want votes for our husband's. But I can guarantee that that is not the case.

I opened this centre because I was

abused in my previous marriage I hear

people gasp

Me: yes. A lot of the times people look at us and see nothing but the gilts and glamour, but the truth is we're all human. I was abused emotionally and physically for years, and i had no

where to go. I stayed because I was scared, which is why I insisted on opening this shelter. This shelter will be a home for thousands. We will make sure they get food, medical attention, and emotional support and legal council. Our woman are the pillars of our country, and no one deserves to live in fear, so No, this is not a political campaign, but a campaign to save the mother's of this very land.

I finish my speech, and receive a standing ovation. We cut the ribbon and finally get to show off the facility to a few reporters.

After taking care of everything I needed to do, and doing a few Interviews, Nathi and i finally get to leave and go join the rest of our friends for a celebratory lunch.

I get to Rifiloes house, and I'm handed a glass of wine. Nathi goes to the guys while I go sit with my crazies.

Fifi: Tshidi, you did well, the shelter is beautiful
Me: thank you ladies.

Boni: you're glowing

Me: well I'm still in the honeymoon stage, so yah, I'm glowig
Busi: did you use the flogger

I look down thinking about lastnight

Dourine: oh my gosh. You little slut. tell us how it went

Me: a lady never tells. But I will say he was impressed
Fifi: see.

Stick with us we'll teach you things

Boni: I saw that Ntsiki
chick at the opening
Me: mx, yah, I saw her talking
to Nathi.

Busi: I hate
that chick
Me: not as much as
I do.

Boni: I thought she had stepped back
after Nathi spoke to her
Me: she did.
But she's still his friend.

Doctrine: I just wonder what she is up to
Me: whatever it is she better
not come for my family
Busi: how is Olwetho and Aya ?

Me: I'm flying down to see Aya next week. We speak
everyday. It's actually strange how well she's adapted to
being in boarding school

Fifi: I tried convincing Olwetho to not go,
but they were so determined
Me: Nathi
tried to bribe Ayanda with everything he
possibly could,

But she was so determined she wouldn't give in. He even
promised to buy her an R8 for her birthday, but madam
wasn't having it. She wanted to be in that school, so we had
no choice, but to let her

Busi: what's important is that they are both happy. Plus Aya is
very mature for her age. It's not surprising that she went to
boarding school

Me: ya, it also helps because I know that Olwetho is there too.

We spend the rest of the day at Rifiloes. The guys eventually leave to go to some meeting, and i also decide to go rest.

Tools walks me accross the street,
and hands me an envelope Me:

what's this?

Him: it's a folder that Dominique came
to drop off earlier today Me; have you
checked whats inside

Him: no mam. She just asked
me to give it to you Me: ok.

Thank you

I step inside and the first thing I do is take a nice long bath. I'm glad that for the first time in my life I have a purpose. At least I kow that a few woman won't be beaten up tonight by their lovers, because of the centre.

I step out the bath, and decide to have an early night. I already know that Nathi won't be home early. The elections are 2 days away, and they are campaigning with everything they have. I guess that's the life of a politician's wife. Going to bed alone, and hoping he is ok wherever he is.

I send him a goodnight text, and he sends me back a heart emoji. That alone is enough to put a smile on my face.

Im about to put off the light, when i see the folder that Dominique left for me. I open it and go through the documents.

I start to sweat. This can't be happening. This must be a sick joke. I page through the records, and the police reports. I even

have the postmortem in my hand, and yet the picture in front of me is telling me that she is alive.

I get off the bed, and pace through the room. This isn't happening. I have so many questions going through my mind. How is this possible? Nathi would've searched high and low for her if he thought she was alive.

I dial Dominique and her phone rings unanswered.

I don't know what to do. I think of calling Nathi, but i stop myself. I take the folder, and put It one of my drawers.

I refuse to believe that this Thandiwe chick is alive. I don't know what sick joke Dominique is playing, but i plan on finding out.

43

I try sleeping but sleep has evaded me. I keep thinking about what to say to Nathi. This can't be happening, not with everything that's going on.

If I tell Nathi now, he is going drop everything and i refuse to have him leave his dream because of this.

So I make a decision. I'm not going to tell him about this now. Once the elections are over, I'll give him the folder, and we can both face this together.

I eventually fall asleep, and when I wake up I find Nathi in bed beside me.

I look at him and my heart sinks because I know if what's in the folder is true, I might lose him. What use would he have for me, if his "wife" is alive? Why would he need me, when he has her?

I feel my throat swell, my heart is heavy.

Nathi opens his eyes and

looks at me worryingly Him:

MaKhumalo. What's wrong

Me: nothing. I just missed you

Him: I'm , sorry I came home so late. We
only wrapped up after midnight Me : it's

fine. I knew things were going to get hectic

Him: are you
sure you're ok?

Me: I'm fine
baby. I promise

Him: come here

I go into his arms, and he wraps them around me. I take in everything about him, his scent, his strong arms around me, the security I had about our marriage has totally vanished. In a few days time, he will probably be with his true wife.

We make love in the shower. It's as though he knows that I need him. He is slow and tender. He doesn't rush. He takes his time and makes me feel like the only woman in the world

He leaves for court and i head to his offices. I

need to get to the bottom of this. I arrive and I

pull Dominique to Nathi's office.

Me: why haven't you
returned my calls Her:

I'm sorry. I was busy

Me: Where did you get that envelope

Her: It was placed on my desk. I opened it because it was
addressed to me, then I gave it to you because Mr Khumalo has
a debates today.

Me: Dominique, for your own sake you better be telling
the truth. You don't want to cross me Her: mam, on my
life. I only found out about this the same way you did

Me: where is she

Her; she's been taken

to your shelter Oh

God, this is bad

Me: why my shelter

Her: The hospital she was in is done with her, but she had no
where to go, so per the agreement we had with the city c
hospital, they admitted her to your shelter

Shit

Me: how is it that she's been alive?

Her: the only way to find out is to go see her

Me: not a word of this to anyone. Especially my husband. Not til,
the elections are over

I leave Nathi's office and tools drives me to the shelter. I 911 the
girls, and tell them to meet me at the shelter.

I just hope Nathi understands why I am about to do what I'm
doing

When I get to the shelter, I go to the hospital section and find the matron there Me: Matron.

How are you

Her: Mrs Khumalo, we weren't expecting you

Me: I need to track down a patient that was transferred yesterday Her: her

name

Me: I don't know. I

only have this I take

out her picture

Her: oh, that's Lerato. She was transferred from the Johannesburg hospital Me: what

room is she in

Her: I'll check for you

She goes between the counter and starts

going through the systems. The girls

arrive just as I am about to head to room

218.

Boni: Tshidi

what's wrong

Me: come

Fifi: you don't look so good,

are you sure you're ok Me: I

don't know yet

Each step I take towards 218 I feel my heart sink. I try keeping Faith, but i can feel it.

I knock on 218, and open the door to find Thandiwe sitting in bed and Ntsiki sitting on a chair beside her Ntsiki gives me a half smile. I know then that this was her plan from the very beginning

Fifi: Tshidi what's going on
I don't answer, my heart is beating at a pace of a million. Ntsiki: what are you doing here

Me: I should be asking you what the hell are you playing at Ntsiki She smiles again

Her: nothing. I'm just making sure my friend gets better. Once she is, she will be able to take her rightful place, next to her husband

I look at Thandiwe, and she doesn't say anything. In fact she looks kind of lost. Me: where has she been this whole time

Ntsiki: That's something she can discuss with her man after she gets better Me: you are sick you know that

She smiles again

Her: I've given you time to tell him yourself. If you don't take the time I will personally tell him I turn around and the girls look at me confused

Me: That's Nathi's so called dead wife They all gasp in disbelief, as I walk out.

I pace the hospital floor like a crazy person. I keep thinking about what is going to happen. The only thing I know for sure is that I won't let this chick ruin things for me and Nathi

Dourine; Tshidi, calm down

I give her a look, and continue pacing. Rifiloe stands in front of me, and I stop Her: Tshidi, how long have you known about this

Me: I found out yesterday

Busi: have you told Nkosinathi?

Me: and I don't plan on telling him. Not till the elections are over Boni: what if

Ntsiki tells him

Me: I don't know . Stop asking me questions and do something

I look at all, of them. Dourine pulls out her phone and makes a call. We all, look at her hoping she can find a solution

She ends her call and looks at me

Her: we need to talk. Privately

I lead the to what is supposed to be my office. I haven't put furniture in there yet but it's a space that was designed for me to be able to work from.

I close the door behind me, and i ask our security team to stand outside

Dourine: the only way to keep these two quite till you speak to Nathi, is for us to make sure they can't get to Him

Busi: yes, that's a good thing, but how?

Ntsiki has his numbers Boni: we take them out here and take them somewhere secluded

I look at them shocked. Did they really just

insinuate that we should kidnap them Me: Boni

we can't. This is a stupid idea

Fifi: I think they're right Tshidi. Its only for 48 hours. After that we let them go Me: I don't know

Boni: Tshidi open your eyes. This is war. Stop being so naive. This woman isn't going to wait for you. She is going to beat you to it, believe me

I look at them and i know they're telling the truth. Ntsiki and Thandiwe are going to make this difficult for me.

Me: ok fine

Dourine walks out, and the next thing I know her security

team is running to Thandiwe's room Dourine: meet me at
the court

The girls nod. I look at them, but no one gives me an
explanation, instead I'm given coordinates and am told by Fifi
to make sure I'm there an hour from now

I give tools the coordinates and he drives me to
an mansion in the south of jobug. I Buzz and the
gate opens.

I walk into the house and find the girls there

Me: and?

Fifi they're in the
upstairs bedroom.

Me: who's house is

this

Dourine: it's a house I bought in my brother's name

Me: but how do we know they won't

make contact with Nathi Busi:

Dourine brother is handling
everything

I just nod. I don't know what to say. I'm numb. Everything
happened so quickly.

We leave the house and let Dourines brother handle taking
care of Ntsiki and Thandiwe. He's taken their cell phones and
promises to care for them.

I get in the car and tools drives me home. I don't know how I feel about what I've done. I feel like this is a bad idea, but i can't turn back now. At least tomorrow is election day. Soon enough I'll be able to confess and hopefully Nathi will understand.

44

Election day arrives, Nathi didn't come home lastnight, he arrived at 2 and left at 5. I shower quickly and get dressed in my signature jeans, t-shirt and all stars. I want to go vote and come back home asap

I put on a bit of make up, and leave to my nearest primary school. Luckily I am not made to wait in the que. Instead I am moved to the front of the line. I cast my vote, leave before anyone notices me.

When I get home, I phone Dourines brother, and he assures me that they are ok. I know I should trust him, but i ask to speak to Ntsiki anyway

Her: hello

Me: Ntsiki it's Tshidi

Her: you are really something special. How could you do this

Me: look Ntsiki I'm sorry. I promise you that tomorrow you will be out. I just know how much this day means to Nathi.

He's spent so much time and effort on this, I didn't want anyone to ruin it. I promise you, the minute he's home, I'm going to tell him.

She ends the call, and i die inside. How did I get here? How did

I let myself do this? I take a bottle of water and watch the results coming in. Nathi's party is in the lead. I'm not really surprised though. They all worked hard to get here.

I call him a few times during the day, just to see how he's doing, and as expected he is over the moon.

By the time the polls close, I have reporters packed outside my house. I look through the upstairs window and see that it's just as worse for Rifiloe.

I get a call from Nathi telling me to get ready. Apparently we are going to celebrate.

I want to tell him I'm not in the mood, but this is his day. And I'm pretty sure it's the very last day that I will spend with him.

So I head upstairs and change into another pair of jeans,

heels, a peplum top, and tie my weave up. I hear him

running up the stairs, and I say a prayer that I can pull this

off

I turn around and face him, and he spins me around with excitement

Him: hello second

lady of S.A. Me:

Hello Mr vice

president

Him: I can't believe it. It feels like a dream

Me: you deserve every moment of this Nathi. I'm so proud of you

Him: thank you baby, but we both know I wouldn't

have been able to do this without you. I just put on my
most convincing smile

Him; I love you Tshidi. More than anything in this world I try not to cry,

Me: I love you too. Don't ever forget that Him: come. The others are waiting

He takes my hand and we leave for Busi's house. When we arrive, we find everyone there. As always I go to the girls, while Nathi goes to his guys.

Busi: how are you keeping up

Me: I'm going to tell him when I get home

Boni: I'm so sorry Tshidi. I know you must be feeling bad.

But remember you did what you had to do Dourine: Nathi loves you Tshidi. He'll understand when you speak to him

Me: I hope so

We spend a few hours at Busi's house. I swear

I've never seen Nathi so happy. I walk up to him

when I can't take it anymore

Me: Khumalo , can we

go. I'm a bit tired He

looks at me with a smile

Him: you better drink a redbull, I don't plan on letting you sleep anytime soon

He winks at me as he takes my hand and leads me to the car. I don't say much during our trip home. I'm too nervous. I just want us to get home, so I can tell him.

Him: you're awfully quite tonight

Me: it's just been a hectic couple of days

Him: it's only going to get worse. The

inauguration is in a few days Me: I'm

sure I'll be fine

We reach home, and Nathi takes my hand as we walk inside.

Him: baby, can ask you to bring me a bottle of

water. I want to take a quick shower Me: sure

He goes upstairs, and i walk to The fridge to get the bottle. As soon as he's out the shower I'm going to drop the bomb.

I open our bedroom door, and find Nathi on the bed. I move

closer and notice he has the file in his hand. I freeze.

He doesn't look up, his eyes are scanning the documents in front of him.

He turns each page, and the angrier he gets. I want to explain but I'm frozen. The bottle of water I had in my hand is on the floor.

He looks at the photo that is among the documents, and i see his eyes change.

He slowly lifts his head and looks at me. I know he's waiting to explain, but i can't form words. Him: where did you get this?

He says this slowly. I look in his eyes and they are red with anger. His face is hard, and i know that this isn't going to end well,

He speaks in slow

motion again Him:

is this true

I nod

I see his face change from being angry into absolute rage.

I take a step back and head for the door, but he is behind me in seconds. He grabs me by the shoulders and pushes me on the bed

Him: where do you

think your going? I feel

tears roll down my

eyes.

Me: Nathi I can explain. I was going

to tell you I swear. I just I scream

when he punches the headboard

Him: how long have you known about this

Me: Nathi please. You're scaring me. Just let me explain

Him:Matshidiso if you want to live. You are

going to tell me where she is I try speaking

but i stutter, and this pisses him off even

more

He goes to the safe and i know

that he is fetching his gun. I jump

off the bed and head for the door,

but it's locked. He must've locked

it when he threw me on the bed.

I try pushing the door, but it doesn't help.

I can sense him standing behind me. I don't

turn around. I'm too scared, He takes my

hand and turns me around roughly

Him: where is she

Tshidi? Me: I

don't know the

address,

He doesn't let me finish. Instead I feel the

cold steel gun on my face. Him: I don't want

to hurt you. But I will. Now one last time,

where is she Nathi: please. I'm telling you

the truth. I don't

He throws me accros the room and i bang my back into the wall.

Him: don't fucking play with Me

Tshidi. ill fucking kill you Me: it's in

my phone. The coordinates are in

phone

He takes my phone and send the coordinates to himself.

He looks at me and all I see is hatred. There is not even an ounce of the love that he had for me. Him: why would you

do this? Why keep this from me

Me: Nathi, please. Just let me explain . It's not what you think.

He shakes his head and looks at me with disgust. He walks to the door, and I jump up. I can't let him leave. If he leaves now he might never come back. He needs to hear me out.

Me: Nathi, please. It's not what you think. Just let me explain please

Him: explain what? Listen to me and listen carefully. I never.

And i mean ever want to see you again. you and i are done. I'm giving you 2 days to dissapear. Run Tshidi, run to the end of the world. Make sure I don't find you because if I even smell you. I will kill you. So you better tell whoever youre working for that I am coming.

I don't know what he is talking about

Me: Nathi. Please I'm not working for anyone. I

only found out a few days ago Me: Nathi

please. Please. I'm begging you. Just let me

explain.

He tries to walk, but i get on my knees and hold onto his ankle

Him: get off me

Me: please Nathi. I'm begging you

I'm on the floor, covered In tears and snot. I'm begging him, literally on my knees, but he doesn't care. Instead he pushes me aside, and leaves me screaming his name.

I try running after him but it's too late. He's already down the driveway.

I run back inside and get a set of keys for one of the cars. I get in the car and reverse, but the guards don't open he gate I hoot, but they don't open. These

morons are passing me off. I jump out

the car and i see tools approaching

Me: tools tell them to open the gate

Him: I'm sorry mam, but i

can't let you go out Me:

why the hell not

Him: we received instructions from Mr

Khumalo to make sure you don't leave Me:

Tools. What if he hurts himself. Please. Just make sure he's ok

I see his face fall

Him: his security team is with him

I walk back upstairs feeling like a failure. Just an hour ago Nathi was smiling and happy, and now he can't even stand the sight of me

I text the girls to let them know that Nathi knows, then I switch off my phone. I'm not mad at them. I'm mad at myself for not telling him. I just wanted him to be happy and now I'm the very person that bought him pain.

45

I stay up all night waiting for Nathi to come home, but nothing. I've tried calling him, but he hasn't answered. I've sent him text after text trying to explain, but nothing from him.

I hear someone at the door, and

i jump off the couch. I see Rifiloe

walk in and my heart sinks

Her: Tshidi, I've been trying to

call you. Are you ok I shake my

head

Me: He's gone Rifiloe. He

won't take my calls. Her:

did you tell him why we

kept them away

Me: he didn't even let me explain. When we came home

lastnight, he found the folder before I told him Her: oh God no

Me: he thinks I'm some sort of spy. He

wants nothing to do with me Her: he's just

upset Tshidi. He'll come around once he's
calmed down

Me: I don't think so. You should've seen the hatred in his
eyes. He hates me Fifi. He hates me Her: it will sort itself

out Tshidi. Trust me.

As I'm speaking to Rifiloe

her husband walks in Him:

Tshidi

Me: hi

Him: Nkosinathi told me what

happened. Are you ok? Me: I'm

fine.

Him: I need you to tell me everything. I need

to track down what happened I tell Siya the

truth about everything. From Ntsiki, to

Dominique everything

Him: so she was admitted at your shelter

Me: yes. But I swear Siay. I had nothing to do with this

Him: I know Tshidi. But right now it's

your word against theirs Me : I'm

sorry, I don't follow

Him; Thandiwe says you held her hostage when you found out
about her. She says you were going to kill her.

I look at Siya shocked

Me: I would never. All I wanted was for Nathi to have election day without disturbance. I was going to tell him Siya. I swear

Him: I hear you, but Thandiwe is telling a different story

Me: and Nathi believed her

Him: he does. But Tshidi, we will find

the truth. Just hang in there. He leaves

and Rifiloe stays with me

Her: I've texted the girls.

They're on the way I just

nod

Her: why don't you go freshen up. I'll make us breakfast

I go upstairs and tidy my room, then I get in the shower. I don't understand why Ntsiki and Thandiwe would lie. I never threatened to kill anyone. All I said was I wanted the elections to go through without her interference. How on earth will Nathi believe anything I say after this.

I get out the shower and wear my matching tracksuit, with my slippers. I tie up my weave and put a doek over my head. I don't plan on going anywhere so I might as well.

When I get downstairs the girls are there. They give me a group hug, and for the first time since last night I don't feel so alone

We sit and have breakfast together

Dourine: I'm so sorry

Tshidi.

Me: it's not anyone's fault.

Busi: yes, but now look at what we've done

Me: guys. I don't blame you. I made the decision, because at the time I thought it was the best decision under the circumstances. Nathi should've let me explain. But I guess it's ok, because now I know where I stand with him.

Busi: Tshidi he loves you. I know it doesn't look that way now, but he does.

Me: if he loved me he wouldn't have pointed that gun at me. I never feared Nathi, but now I don't know what to think

Fifi: Tshidi. These men aren't normal. Nathi was the only one that was able to somehow contain his anger. They are trained to kill, to torture. He didn't mean to hurt you. But he went into AXE mode. He lost it. He didn't mean to

Me: I don't know Rifiloe

Her: I do. He called this morning panicking. He told Siya to make sure you are ok. He regretted it
Me: then why isn't he taking my calls

Boni: Tshidi, give him time. He is in a place that isn't familiar emotionally. He is trying to understand the millions of stories that he is hearing. Just let him figure out what to do. I'm sure there will talk to you once he is calm

I let out a sigh and hope that the girls are right, but a part of me knows that this is the end. Nathi loves Thandiwe and that is something that would never change.

The girls leave at around lunchtime, and i go and take a nap.

Nathi

I sit and watch as Thandiwe sleeps. I had Hlokes check her out and thankfully she is ok.

I leave her and head downstairs to Ntsiki, I need to understand what the hell happened
Ntsiki: I've made you breakfast

Me: Ntsiki I don't want your breakfast, I want answers

Ntsiki: sit. Well, this is what I know. Thandiwe wasn't killed in that accident. In fact she wasn't even in the car, she was taken when she went to the bathroom at the mall. They undressed her and had another woman who looked like dress up and pretend to be her. The accident happened and the body that was burnt beyond recognition was that of this woman.

Meanwhile Thandiwe was taken out the country. She was tortured for information about you guys. In the four years she was there she never said a word.

They finally believed she didn't know anything and

they left her at the Lesotho border
Me: why didn't

you bring her to me sooner

Her: she had memory loss, no one knew who she was. So they kept her at one of the Lesotho hospitals, she only started recovering a few months ago, that's when she reached out to me. She had seen that you had moved on, she didn't want to come forward, but I convinced her it was the right thing to do. I came to your house and the moment I saw Tshidi, I knew that you still loved Thandiwe. Why else would you find a woman that looks so much like her

Me: but still. Why give the file to Tshidi

Her: I gave the file to your assistant to give to you, but apparently Matshidiso got hold of it and hid it. She came to the shelter and had men take us to that house. She told me to my face that she would make sure we were dead before you found out. If you hadn't found us we would be dead

Me: I don't understand. Tshidi isn't the kind of person to do this. I know her. She must've had a good reason to keep you guys at that house

Her: are you saying that both Thandiwe and i are lying? Really Ntahi, after everything that we've been through

Me: no. I'm not saying that. I'm just trying

to put this all together. Her: well, you

better keep that Tshidi woman away from

Thandiwe. Ntsiki leaves me and goes to

check on Thandiwe.

I sit and think of how I reacted lastnight. I honestly don't know what I was thinking. The look in Tshidi's eyes when I held that gun will haunt me for life.

I see Thandiwe walk down the stairs, I help her down the last few. Her: you

look drained

Me: I'm fine. Can I get you something to eat

Her: no. I just want to pinch myself. I can't believe you're here, standing in front of me

Me: Thandi, I'm so sorry. I should've kept looking. I should

never have accepted that you were gone Her: shhh, I'm here now. That's all that matters

She puts her arms around my waist. I know she wants me to kiss her, but i don't. I just hug her back and wonder how I am going to sort out this mess.

Her: I see you haven't changed much of the house since my disappearance

Me: yah, I didn't have the heart to

Her: I'm sure you have a

lot of questions

Me: I spoke to Ntsiki, she told

me everything

Her: oh

Me: I just wish you came to me all those months ago

Her; Nathi, back thne I wasn't well. I was still recovering from my injuries. I didn't want you to see me like that. Plus I saw that you had moved on. You looked so happy, i didn't want to have you worry about me

Me: you know I would've done anything for you. You would've gotten the best treatments. Everything

Her: yes, but i wasn't ready

I see he eyes fill

with tears

Her:

do you love her

Me: Thandi , I don't want to talk about her

Her: I saw the way you look at her, it's as though she is everything to you. Like you had forgotten all about me

Me: Thandi, I never

forgot about you

Her:

but you fell in love

with her

Me: yes I did. I thought you were dead Thandi. I thought I would never see you again. Tshidi, came along and changed

that. She bought me joy again. She made me believe that I could love again

I look at Thandi and i know that I've hurt her. That wasn't my intention though. I was just being honest
Her: so what are you going to do

Me: I don't know yet. The inauguration is tomorrow. After that i will be able to decide on where we go from there.

But for now, o need to go check on Tshidi

I see her face change. I know those eyes , she's about to go off on me

Her: are you kidding me Nkosi? I haven't been home even for 2 minutes, and already you want to rushing back to the very woman who delayed my coming home to you? The very woman who threatened to have me killed? How could you

Me: Thandiwe I'm just trying to make

the best out of our situation. Just as she

was about to say something, Siya calls

Me: G

Him: Axe, we need to meet

Me: this isn't the right time

Him: it's important. We need to contain this situation, before the media gets a hold of it

Me: ok. But I need you to send security to my old house.

Thadiwe and Ntsiki are staying here
Him: already done.

Me: I'll meet you
at your place Him:
sharp

I look at Thadiwe and see that she is boiling with anger

Me: I've got to go. I'll see you right after my meeting with the
guys

She turns and leaves me feeling bad. I get where she is coming
from. I should be staying here with her , Its just that the timing
is all wrong.

I drive to Siya's house, and my heart swells, when I drive passed
my house. A part of me wants to see Tshidi, but then i remember
what she did, and I get pissed all over again

When I arrive the guys
are already waiting
Mthunzi: dude you look
like shit

Me: shut up
man Luzuko:
how's

Thandiwe

Me: she's fine. I'm still trying to wrap my
head around the past 24hrs Siya hands glass
me a glass of whiskey

Him: well, that's one of the
reasons I called you here. Me:
what's up

Hlokes: have you found out what hapoened to Thandiwe

I tell them everything that Ntsiki and Thandiwe told me Siya: and Tshidi? Have you spoken to her

Me: not since last night Hlokes: and what did she say

Me: nothing. She kept avoiding the questions. Then I lost it Luzuko: did you hit her

Me: no not quite, but i pointed a gun at her, and pushed her a bit Hlokes: shit

Me: I was just so mad. Why did she keep this from me? I would've preferred to hear it from her, instead I find a folder tucked away in one of her drawers. That drove me off the edge

Siya: I spoke to her earlier today Me: and

Siya: she says she was going to tell you. She just wanted to wait for the elections to finish Me: and you believe her

Siya: I don't know. But Rifiloe says she is telling the truth

Me: you see what I mean. I have different stories from everyone. Tshidi should've told me the so called truth, the minute she found out. Instead she lied, and went behind my back to keep them hidden from me

Mthunzi : Busi says Tshidi didn't want to go ahead with it. But at the time they thought it was the best thing to do

Luzuko: that's when Dourine phoned her brother and had them move them to the house

I gulp down my drink, and think about what I'm hearing.

Me: these woman are going
to drive me crazy Hlokes: so
where are you staying right
now Me: I spent lastnight
with Thandi

Luzuko: did you sleep with her
I look at him as
though he's crazy

Me: no.

Siya: so from a legal prospective. Where does
you marriage with Tshidi stand Me: it's null and
void, unless I change it to customary marriage

Hlokes: so basically Tshidi would be
considered your second wife Me: yep

Siya: then that is what you are
going to have to do Me: huh

Siya: tomorrow is the inauguration. Tshidi has to be by your side

Me: NO. Tshidi lied to me. I refuse to stand anywhere with
her. In fact I think it's best i file for divorce. There's no going
back after lastnight

Hlokes: whoow, slow down dude. I get you're
mad. But you can't treat her like this Me: what do
you mean

Hlokes: are you kidding me? So Thandi rocks up from out of
nowhere, and you drop the woman who helped you out of
depression?

Me: Hlokes. I don't expect you to understand.

Hlokes: oh, I understand perfectly. You used that woman

because she looked like Thandi and now that Thadi is back, you have no use for her

Siya: guys, calm down. Nathi. You need to think about this. I can see you're still pissed. So I would suggest you don't make any rash decisions. Just speak to Tshidi and make sure she is at the inauguration. You both need to be there and present a united front. We've worked too hard for us to have this ruin everything. Tshidi is seen as mother Teresa of this country. If she isn't there people will start to ask questions, and that isn't something we want.

Luzuko: make sure Thandiwe stays under wraps. At least till you've decided what to do
Me: are we done here

Siya: yes, make sure you and Tshidi are there tomorrow

I get up and i leave the guys. I know Thandi will be mad, but i need to see Tshidi. I know I hurt Her last night. It wasn't intentional. I was just so mad. And now I don't know what to do.

I walk into the house and find her asleep on our bed. She looks so small and fragile. I think she's a bit cold, so I take a blanket from the spare bedroom and put it over her. She flinches a bit, and opens her eyes.

For a moment I forget what happened, but then i remember what she did, and how she lied, and i back away

Her:

Nathi,

Me:

Tshidi

She gets up and goes to the bathroom. She comes back and sits on the bed. She doesn't say anything. She just looks at me. I know those eyes, she wants me to tell her its ok, that i understand, but i don't. I don't understand why she did what she did. I don't understand why she lied. I don't understand anything

Me: the inauguration is tomorrow. I'll be here to pick you up at 10: 00am. Make sure you're ready Her face drops, I know I've hurt her, but i dont know what else to do. How do I sort this out

She nods

Me: this doesn't reach the news. Not till I've gotten to the truth
Her: how will you know the truth when you won't let me say anything

Me: because how do I believe anything you say, after you kept this from me Tshidi

Her: Nathi. The moment i opened that folder, I knew I had lost you. I knew then that you would chose her over me. I had already lost you. I know how much you love her, and i knew that the love you say you have for me is nothing in comparison. All I wanted was to ensure that Ntsiki doesn't ruin this for you. Why didn't she tell you earlier? Why choose the week of the elections

I look at her and i don't have answers. Instead she keeps giving me even more to think about

Me: I don't know what to believe anymore Tshidi. I have stories coming from everyone. I dont know who to beleive.

Her: well, let me make it easy for you.

She takes off the ring and puts it in my hand

Her: go. Be with her. She's back Nathi. You guys can finally continue from where you left off. Me: Tshidi.

Don't

Her: you will always doubt me after this. You think I don't see the hatred you have towards me?

I look away because I don't know what I'm feeling. I'm angry at her. I wish she would've told me the truth, but HATE is a strong word. I don't hate her. On the contrary I think I still love her.

Her: I'll be here at 10:00 tomorrow.

She leaves me and locks the bathroom door behind her. I hear her small sobs turn into cries that would haunt anyone.

I put her ring on the dressing table and leave. I don't want to leave her, but at the same time Thandiwe needs me. She's been through hell for the past 4 years, all in the name of protecting me. How do I not honour that she kept her vows, despite me moving on?

I text Rifiloe and ask her to go check on Tshidi, as I drive home to what would be considered my wife

46

My makeup artist looks at me and shakes his head.

Him: how am I supposed to cover up those bags? You look like you haven't slept in years
Me: they're not that bad. Stop making me feel worse

I flatter my eyelids at him and he rolls his eyes

Him: you see this is the problem with you yellow bones. Look at how red your skin is. It's as though you have been crying

Me: Sbu. Just make it happen please. I only have an hour before I have to leave
Him: have you settled on your outfit for the day

Me: yes. I'm going with the black one

Him: I give up. I just can't deal

By the time Sbu and the team are done with me, I look like the perfect wife. My hair is in a bun, I'm wearing a navy suit dress (Sbu refused to let me wear black) And matching navy heels...

All that's left for now is for me to go put on my fake smile and pretend that all is well. Nathi arrives just as my team leaves. He looks at me and I see a small twinkle in his eye
Him: you look beautiful

I just nod.

Me: can we go get this over and done with please
Him:

thank you for doing this

I take my clutch, and walk downstairs and he follows.

He opens the door of the car for me, and i step in. It's awkward to be sitting here in silence, so I take out my phone and go through it.

Him: you forgot this

I look at him and he has my ring in his hand

Me: I didn't see the use of wearing it.

It's not like we're married His eyes fall.

I don't understand why, but they do

Him: Tshidi we are married. You are still my wife.

Me: Nathi, you've made your decision, and I have accepted it. So please. Can we stop with the stupid chit chat

Him: Tshidi, I know things are difficult right now. And well I don't expect you to understand. But I'm sorry about how I reacted

Me; Nathi. I don't care

Him; can we just get through this day. We'll talk tonight

Me: for how long? I can't keep living my life according to your terms. Today is the last day I'm doing this Nathi. After today I want you out my life.

I take the stupid ring from him and place it on my ring finger

Him: thank you

We both sit in an awkward silence for the rest of the drive to Pretoria.

When we arrive I am lead to where the rest of the ladies are seated, while Nathi goes off to join the rest of the guys.

I keep counting down the minutes to Siya and Fifi's arrival. I feel so tired and drained. I just want to go home and sleep.

Luckily Siya and Fifi arrive, and in matter of minutes the events of the day begin.

By the inauguration is finished I am exhausted. I've been here from 10am it's now 2pm, I just want to go home now.

We're led to parliamentary cabin to wait to be escorted home. We only have a few hours before the inauguration ball. Which I have no interest in what so ever.

We're finally placed in our cars, Nathi jumps in next to me, and we are off. I let out a long sigh as I close my eyes and take in the events of the day

Him: are you ok

Me: I'm fine

Him: you look a bit worm
Me: it is a big hot in

here

He asks tools to put on the aircon. I want to open my window, but it's against the protocol.

The police escort have their sirens on, and that alone is frustrating me even more. Nathi hands me a bottle of water, and I gulp it down

Him; Tshidi you're sweating. Are you ok Me; I don't feel so good. I'm a bit nauseous Him; we need to get you to a hospital

Me; no. I'm fine. I haven't eaten. I'm sure my sugar levels are down

He takes out his phone and

sends a message. Him;

Come

I open my eyes and I didn't even notice that we were home already

I go upstairs and change into my onesie and get into bed.

Nathi comes upstairs with a tray full of food Him; eat something

Me; shouldn't you be home with your wife

Him; Tshidi. Just eat. Please

I look at the tray in his hand and just shake my head. He must be damn crazy if he thinks I'm eating all that

I take a banana and he still stands there

Him; take something else

Me; I don't want anything else

He puts the tray on the bed

and just stares at me Me; you

can go

Him; I don't want to leave you like this

Me; stop with the fakeness. I'm fine. You can go now

I put my duvet over my face and drift off into a peaceful sleep.

not even half an hour into my sleep Nathi wakes me up

WTF

I look at him and im

already irritated Me;

why are you still

here?

Him; Hlokes is here to check you out

(Lord this man is going to make me lose my

salvation. Like on a serious note) I stand up

and look at this tall ass ugly beast in front of

me

Me; Nathi. What part of go do you not understand?

Him; you expect me to leave you when I can obviously see that you're not ok

Me; get Hlokes in here and then get the hell out. Nxa

He turns around looking like a damn lost puppy.

And comes back with Hlokes Hlokes; you two had

better have a good ass reason for pulling me out

that party

Me; I'm sorry. He's just being an idiot

Hlokes; yah. I know. He has idiot written all over him

We both look at Nathi and he shrugs

Hlokes; Nathi you know you have
to leave the room right Nathi;
why?

Me; because I don't want you here

Him; well shame. Because I'm not going anywhere

Hlokes. Well in that case let me begin

Hlokes does a full check-up and obviously doesn't find anything.

Like I could've told them that

Hlokes; when was the last time

you were on your period? Me; not

sure. A few week back I think

Him; I need a more

specific timeline Me;

mhmmm I think like 6

weeks ago

The moment I say those words my heart sinks

Me; no. no. no that can't be

Hlokes; calm down. Let's make sure first.

He pulls out a pregnancy stick from his kit

I take it and just stare at them
Hlokes; Tshidi. go pee on the damn thing or
else you'll have to deal with Boni I get up and
sit on the toilet. I don't pee. I don't have the
heart to. Not one bit Knock Knock
Nathi; Tshidi are you ok. Do you need help?
Me; fuck off Nathi. For fucks sake what are you
going to do hold my dick while I pee? He doesn't
respond, but I hear Hlokes laughing

I take a pee and wait for a
whole 3 minutes. When I
open it mother fucking got
2 lines.

Shit

This shit isn't happening. Why now. Why

I wash my hands and give the stick to Nathi

Me; congratulations, your not so wife, who apparently tried to
kill your wife is pregnant with your baby He looks shocked.

Hlokes; ok. So now that we know what the problem is. I am
going to excuse myself. Tshidi come see me tomorrow
Hlokes pack his kit, and leaves us looking like two absolute

idiots. I don't know if it's the emotion of everything that's happened this week, but I literally break down in tears. I was starting to think I was going to move on with my life, and now this. I was going to move back into my house. I was going to concentrate on being a parent again, and now here I am pregnant with a child that I am going to raise by myself, all because I was stupid enough to believe in love.

47

Nathi holds me as I finally let out the heaviness that's in my heart. I don't know why I'm finding comfort in the arms of the very man that keeps hurting me.

Why couldn't Thandiwe just stay wherever she was? Everything was fine when she was dead. Why come back and ruin everything.

Nathi: Tshidi. We'll make it work. Please. Stop crying. I hate to see you like this

Me: you did this to me. Why did you lie to me? You never loved me, and now we've bought an innocent child into our tucked up mess

Him: Tshidi. I do love you.

Me: you're lying Nathi. You love Thandiwe. You only loved the idea of me looking like her. Which by the

way isn't exactly true. But that's not the point

Him: Tshidi, what you and I have is special. I know I fucked that up, but we can make this work. Just give me time to figure it out

Me: I don't want you to have to figure anything out. You doubted me so what's the use?

Him: You're having my baby Tshidi. That changes everything. I owe it to my child to investigate things. Me: you're wasting your time. It's my word against you stupid wife's. You love her. Not me

Him: but i love you too Tshidi. You know that

Me: Nathi just go. Please. For peace sake. Just take your stuff and leave. leave me and my baby in peace. I'll bring the baby up on my own. I won't bother you, I promise.

Him: I'm not going anywhere

I step out his arms angry. His phone rings and by the

look on his face I know it's Thandi Me: you should

take that. You don't want the Mrs thinking you're

here

He gives me an annoyed look and walks out answering his phone. I lock my bedroom door, and get back to bed. I wrap my arms around my tummy, and say a prayer asking God to show me what to do, then I drift off into a peaceful sleep.

Hopefully tomorrow will be a better day.

I wake up the following morning and decide to go get my hair done. I'm tired of wearing weave. I want to do braids.

Something I won't have to worry about brushing.

I make an appointment at Sbu's salon, then get in the shower. I take off my ring and put it in the drawer.

The nice thing about single is that I can do what I want without having to answer to Nathi. I put on my shirt dress with sandals, and leave for a day of relaxation

The moment i leave my room I hear

Nathi singing in the kitchen Damn it

Him: there you are. I was about to come wake you up
Me: Nathi, what are you doing here

Him: I live here

I look at him. He musnt try me

Me: Nathi. You are not welcome here. You left. Why do you want to stay with a liar?
Him: I made you breakfast

Me: I can make my own breakfast. You need to go

Him: Tshidi. I don't want to go. I

want to be here with you I laugh at

him clapping my hands. He must

think I'm a idiot

Me; so now that I'm pregnant, I'm no longer a

cold blooded wanna be killer. Mxm
Him: Tshidi,

can you just eat. I'm sure my baby is hungry

I look at the plate Infront of me, and notice how good it looks.

I sit down and start eating and he smiles but his smile fades as Thandiwe walks in.

Him: Thandiwe. What are you doing here? Her: I

should be asking you that

Him: come,

He takes her hand but she pulls it out of his, and walks towards me instead. She stands right in front of me as I carry on eating

Her: I don't know what he's told you about me, but let me tell you something. You had better stay the hell away from my husband. I didn't suffer for over 4 years to have him taken from me by some wannabe lookalike

Nathi tries to pull her away, but she doesn't move

Me: Nathi. Take your wife and

leave before I lose my shit Him:

Thandiwe . Stop this. Let's go

Her : lose your shit? You think I'm scared of you bitch. I've faced worse. You just try Tshidi. You think I'd be afraid of some side chick

Me: As I said. I'm not keeping your so called hubby from you. You are more than welcome to take him. In fact if you want I can even give you a minute to go upstairs and take his things, and while your at it ensure that your kennel is kept locked. I don't want to see your dog around my house again, are we clear, nxa,

I stand up and leave them arguing in the kitchen. Nathi looked like he was about to bite her head off. Sbu: so what are we doing with you today

Me: Braids. Long ones

Him: ok. Let's start with taking this weave off.

As always my trip to the salon is fun, I hear all types of gossip. From celebrity gossip, to the street gossip. By the time I'm done I'm over the stupid confrontation that happened this morning.

I leave the salon and decide to be a golddigger and go spend Nathi's money.

I start from one end of the mall, and work my way to the front. I buy more clothes than I should. I even buy myself jewellery. Not that I need it, but I'm on a roll. I buy at least 10 pairs of designer shoes, and even a new top of the range fur coat. I walk into a store that have matching outfits for mother and daughter, I go crazy.

I want to carry on but my feet are giving in. So I get a take away from Andiccios and finally head home.

When I get home Mr big bad wolf isn't around, but I see his clothes are. So I decide to handle this shit myself.

I start with the locksmith. I need them to change the locks and, then I go to his closet and start putting everything in black refuse plastic bag. I pack till I have no strength left.

I take out everything I packed and take it to the gate. I tell the guard to give it to Nathi when he comes, or give it to the dustbin guys should they come first.

I go back inside and smile.

Now I need some sleep. Nathi

I've never seen Thandiwe this angry before. She has been shouting and screaming like a mad woman the whole day.

I don't know what she expects me to do. Tshidi is just as much of my wife as she is. Yes I have known Thandiwe for longer, but at the same time i can't just erase my feelings for Tshidi especially now with Tshidi pregnant.

I've always wanted a child. In fact I had thought Thandiwe and i would have a soccer team, but then we found out that she couldn't have children. She thought I would leave her, but i didn't. I always beleived that one day I would be a father.

Her: Nathi are you even listening to me?

Me: Thandi. I'm trying to work. Can you just stop with the interrogation.

Her: stop? How do you expect me to be ok with you sleeping at your bitch ass side chicks house

I never really lost it with Thandiwe before. For all the years we were married, not once did I lose my temper like I'm about to lose it now.

I stand up and thro my laptop on floor. I hold onto her wrists and make her face

Me; Thandi. You need to listen to me and listen carefully.

Matshidiso is my wife. Just as much as you are. I will not have you speak about her like that are we clear. She has never been and never will be a side chick. What you did today was unacceptable. You will respect Tshidi as my wife are we clear

I let go of her and she starts to cry. God I can't take this shit. If its not Tshidi crying its Thandiwe. What did I ever do to be put in such a predicament?

I take my keys and phone and leave. I need to go and check on Tshidi anyway. hopefully she's in a better mood after spending so much money today.

I arrive at the house and I see about 10 black

plastic bags close to the dustbin I open my

window, and the guard comes closer

Me: and that?

Him: Mrs Khumalo left it

here for you sir. Fuck

Me: open the gate

He opens and I drive in pissed.

Tshidi can't do this to me. I try

unlocking the door but my key

doesn't work.

I bang on the door, but Tshidi doesn't answer

Me: Tshidi, open the fucking door

I try calling her, and still she doesn't answer.

I swear these woman are going to be the death of me.

I tell Tools to make sure my clothes that outside are taken to the dry cleaner.

I decide to book myself into a hotel. I just need one night

without a woman going mad on me. Thandiwe keeps

calling but i don't answer. I try calling Tshidi but she

doesn't answer.

I sit in my hotel room and think of the past couple of days. I've really messed up, and now I don't know what to do. How do i fix this? I'd i chose Tshidi I break Thadiwe's heart, but if i chose Thandiwe I hurt Tshidi and my baby

I see a call from my mother come in. And i

already know she knows Me: ma

Her: don't ma me. Nkosinathi, what is this I hear that Thandiwe is alive

Me: ma I was going to phone you.

Her: don't bother. We're already on

our way. Where are you Me: at the

Hilton hotel

Her: hotel? Why aren't you

with one of your wives Me:

long story ma

Her: you messed

up didn't you? Me:

beyond ma

Her: book your father and I a room. We'll see you in a few hours.

With that she drops the call. I knock back a glass of whiskey, and think of this mess. I try calling Tshidi with a private number and luckily she answers

Her: Tshidi, hello

I let out a breath that I've been holding

Me: I'm sorry Tshidi. I know I

screwed up. But I'm sorry She

doesn't say anything

Me: I know you don't want anything to do with me, but please can I ask you just to give me an hour to see you. I want us to talk. Really talk

Her: You really hurt me Nathi

Me: baby I know. I didn't mean to. It

just all happened so quickly Her: I'm

not ready for this. I've got to go

Me: Tshidi, wait. Let

Her: have you slept with her?

Me: Tshidi. please.

Her:

have

you Me:

yes.

But...

No use, she's already put the phone down. Just when I thought she would give me time to try explaining myself, I've just gone and made things worse.

48

I'm woken up by my phone ringing. I try ignoring but the caller is persistent. I look at the caller ID and its my mother in law

Me: Ma

Her: Makoti.

Where are you

Me: at home Ma

Her: and your

husband? Me:

I'm not sure

ma

Her: when I welcomed you in our

home, What did I say to you Me: Ma.

It's complicated. She's back. He chose her

Her: if that's the case then why is he at a hotel?

I don't answer because i honestly don't know what to say. I thought Nathi was saying at his old house
Her: I've called a meeting, tomorrow at Thandiwes house. You must make sure you're there

Me: but Ma

Her: I'm not taking no for an answer. Oh and please make me those nice cupcakes you baked for me the last time i came to visit. Your father has been craving them as well,

Me: ok Ma. See you tomorrow

Her: 10am sharp

She hangs up and

I call Nathi. Him:

MaKhumalo

Me: you're mother just called, Nathi, why didnt you tell them the truth
Him:Tshidi, please just come to the meeting.

Me: Nathi I don't want to be where your wife is. Please, just make your parents understand

Him: baby. You're also my wife. Please MaKhumalo, Mtungwa. Please I'll do anything. Please. Just be there

I honestly don't want to go to this meeting, but being traditionally married to him pushes me to agree
Me: I'll be there

Him: can I come pick you up?

We can go together
Me: why are you staying at a hotel?

Him: you didn't want
to open for me. Me:
you are honestly a lost
cause Him: without
you it will only get
worse

Me: well you better get used to it
because I'm not backing down. Him:
how's my baby

Me: fine. I'm going for my scan
tomorrow afternoon Him: can I
be there? Please

Me: Nathi. You don't need to be.

Him: Tshidi, I've wanted to be a father for so long. Please
don't take this away from me. Don't use my baby to punish
me

I let out a sigh. I know I'm angry at him, and that he messed
up, but can I really keep him away from his child? That just
wouldn't be fair

Me: fine.

Him: I'll
pick You up

Me: fine

Him: Tshidi I love you. I know you
don't believe me, but i do. Me: bye

Nathi

I drop the call, and try going back to sleep but i can't. So I go
downstairs and worm up my take always. I look at all the stuff I
bought and wonder what I'm going to do with it all.

I eat then go to the study to work on some new designs. Since I hired an assistant designer, I've become lazy.

I pull out my sketch book, and my wedding album falls to the floor.

I pick it up and go through it. We looked so happy. Who knew that not even 4 months later we would be on the verge of breaking up.

I put the album away and concentrate on my designs. Who knew that at the age of 29 I would be leaving yet another husband.

I work on 2 designs, then my fatigue takes over. I'm back in bed, dreaming of a happier time in my life. I'm up the following morning baking the damn cupcakes. I only make about 50 of them. I leave them to cool down while I go and take a shower.

I put on one of the many dresses I bought yesterday, I tie my braids and put a doek over my head, and another over my shoulder.

Nathi arrives just as I finish icing the last cupcake.

He knocks and I go open for him. He

smiles when he sees me Him: you

look beautiful. Like a true Zulu wife

I leave him at the door and go

pack the cup cakes. Him:

mhmm I've missed these

He takes a vanilla cup cake and starts eating.

Him: did you make any for me?

Me: I'm sure your wife

can do that for you I see

him frown.

Him: MaKhumalo, you are my wife.

Me: no, I'm not. Thandiwe is your wife. I'm just the idiot that fell pregnant with your baby
Him: Tshidi, I'm here with you. I love you. I know I made mistakes, but I'm here

Me: mistakes? Nathi you had a gun to my head. You pushed me around like I was nothing to you. I could've lost the baby.

I see his face turn. I've hurt him, but i don't care. He's hurt me even more

Him: Are you ready to go

Me; yes.

He takes the cupcakes, while I take my handbag and get in the car.
Him: I like your hair.

Me: thank you

I continue looking out the window

Him: I saw you went shopping

Me: mhmm

Him: will you tell me when you go shopping for

the baby? I'd like to come with Me: it's too soon

for that. I'll go at around 7 months

Him: my parents are going to be so happy when we tell them

me: we should wait till my second

trimester before telling anyone. Him:

why

Me: because the risk of miscarriage in the first

trimester is way more than the 2nd and 3rd Him: we

better make sure you are well taken care of then

I roll my eyes and continue looking out the window.

We arrive at the house and for

some reason I'm nervous. Him: are

you ok?

Me: I'm fine. Lets just get this over and done with

We walk in together and thankfully his parents are already there.

I great his father, and hug his mom, who for some reason hugs me longer than normal. I know she knows I'm hurting and that somehow eases my nervousness.

She breaks the hug and I've

got tears in my eyes Her:

we're going to fix this.

I nod and sit down. I don't bother greeting the wife.

Baba: Makoti, please will you make tea for us

Both Thandiwe and I look at him, because we

don't know who he's referring to. Thandiwe

stands up but Bab'Khumalo stops her

Baba: Nomathemba will make tea. I heard you bought

those famouse cupcakes of yours. I smile and go make

everyone tea. Nathi joins me and takes the tray to the

lounge .

Baba: so as you all know, I'm here to try sort out the mess that has been created. Nomathemba (name given to me when I got married) I don't know how you must feel about Thandiwes return. Tell me about what happened.

I look at Thadiwe and she looks annoyed. I hate that I have to relive this again

Me: well, baba. I received a folder with Information about her reappearance. I didnt say anything to Khumalo because I wanted to be sure it was true. A day later she was admitted in my shelter, so I went to go see her, and her friend threatened to tell him before the elections. I knew that that would ruin the one thing that he worked so hard for baba. I just wanted him to have his day. He had sacrificed so much for that day, and i knew he would've missed the inauguration if he found out, so I moved them from the shelter to a home of a friend, and kept them there till after elections.

Unfortunately Khumalo found the folder the very night I had

planned on telling him, and that was the beginning of our down fall.

Baba: what did he do

My heart broken, I thought I had put this all behind me and now here I am again with tears streaming down my cheeks.

My mother in law gives me a bottle of water and I drink, and try calm down

Me: He.... he he lost it. He was rough with me, and wouldn't let me explain. I tried running but he took out his gun. I tried to talk but i was scared baba,

I thought he was going to kill me. I see shame and

disappointment in both his parents eyes

Me: he left that night and went to Thandiwe. We've been fighting ever since. So I locked him out the house after Thandiwe came into my house and insulted me.

Baba: Thandiwe, you've told me your side of the story and now Nomathemba is telling me something totally different. What I don't understand is why you did t reach out all these months ago, before we had the traditional ceremony? You know how these things work. Once a woman is introduced to our ancestors there's no turning back. You know what happened to nomalanga and Sipho.

She nods. I wonder who Sipho is, but i don't ask

Baba: so you let us go ahead and now you want to come back and claim your husband as though he isn't married to someone else

Thandi: baba, I couldn't come back because I wasn't well. I didn't know if I would make it, and I didn't want to burden him. But when I met her and she basically kidnapped me and threatened to kill me. I knew she could never be the wife that Nkosinathi needs

She looks at his mother

Her: Mama, you told me when I get married that it's my job to protect him at times. And that's what I was doing. Nkosinathi needs to make a ceremony and tell the ancestors why he's leaving her. I'm sure they'll understand

Baba: so Nkosinathi, what do you plan on doing about this?

Him: baba, I've apologized to Nomatheba. I know she doesn't want anything to do with me. She thinks that I love Thandiwe more than her. Which isn't true. Yes, I love Thandiwe, she was my first love. We shared a life together, she made me happy, and when I lost her I carried her with me in my heart. I tried letting go but I couldn't because of the guilt I had.

Then I met Nomatheba. She did help me as much as I helped her. She gave me a family. She helped me tear down all the walls that I had built around my heart, I messed up a lot with her because I held onto the guilt of losing Thandiwe, so when I found that folder it took me back to the day of the accident. I lost my temper, I didn't mean to, all I wanted to know was if it was true. And when I saw that Nomatheba knew I felt betrayed and I left. But the minute I stepped out I regretted hurting her. I had told her to leave, but I told my security team to make sure she doesn't. I did that because I knew I was wrong. I knew then already that I was stuck

between a rock and a hard place

Baba: you still haven't told me

what you want to do Him: I

want to keep them both as my

wives

I look at Nathi shocked. Has he lost his mind. He thinks I'm going to agree to such nonsense

Him: I know this sounds absurd, but it's the only way I can think of that can work. I love you both, and the thought of losing either of you is driving me crazy.

I try not to cry but i can't help it. What did I ever do in life to deserve this. Why can't I find happiness Baba: Thandiwe.

What do you think about your husband a suggestion

Her: I don't like it. Nkosinathi she threatened to kill me. What makes you think she won't succeed if we're sharing a man

Me: oh stop with the bull Thandi. You and I both know you weren't kidnapped. I've worked around woman who have been abused, I know the signs , and you my dear bear none of them. I don't know where you were all these years but rest assured the truth will come out. It always does.

I see her get red with anger. She stands up and tries to come my way but Nathi stands in between us.

Me: I'm tired of crying. I'm tired of having you dictate my life. So let me tell you what I'm going to do. I'm going to find the

truth and I will expose you for your lies.

I don't know what I'm doing, but i won't let this twit win. Yes Nathi wronged me, but i still love him. So I am going to fight with everything in me, to make sure the truth comes out. This bitch has gone too far. It's time i show her what I'm made of.

Nathi: Can we all just calm down.

I sit down this time next to Nathi. He is my husband isn't he?

I can see Thandiwe getting more and more angry. I look at Mama, and she has a small smile on her face. She winks at me then looks at her husband

Baba: we're going to have to discuss this with your families. I'll take into consideration everything that's happened, then I'll come back and call another meeting where we can come to a conclusion.

Nathi takes my hand into his. I want to snatch it away but i don't because I know it's fuelling the witches fire even more.

Baba: Nkosinathi you will stay at the hotel until we have come to a conclusion. You will split your time equally between the two of them. No taking sides.

Nathi nods and

looks at me Him:

let's get you home

to rest.

I get up and give his mother a hug, she doesn't let go,

but whispers something in my ear Her: I'm proud of

you.

I hold her tighter and gather the strength I need for the war that I've just created. I go over and give an annoyed Thandiwe a hug and whisper in her ear

Me: it's game on bitch.

I smile and pretend all is well, then take my traitor husband's hand and walk out. The minute we are out of sight I snatch my hand out of his.

He looks at me confused as we get in the car and tools drives off.

Him: Tshidi, I know what I suggested is crazy. But I was only trying to do the right thing. I look out the window and breath in and out.

When I get home I jump out the car before he can even notice.

He comes after me but i close and lock the door before he gets there.

He bangs on the door begging for me open but i don't. Instead I take the remaining 10 cupcakes that I had left here and go to my room and indulge.

He must be crazy if he thinks I'm going to let him off the hook that easily. He has cut me too deep and continues pour salt into my wound.

49

(crop top things nyana)

I thought this idiot would take the hint and leave but he's been banging on my door for the past two hours, and honestly he is getting on my nerves.

I told him to leave and meet me at the doctors at 3pm, but here he is still knocking, so I have no choice but to go downstairs and open the door for him.

Me: Nathi for God's sake I'm trying to take a nap.

He gently moves me out the way

and goes to the fridge Him: I'm

starving. What do you have to

eat?

I roll my eyes and try walking away, but he holds onto my waits. He moves his hands up and puts his hands on my tummy.

Me: there's nothing to touch Nathi, just let go

Him: shhhhh, I read somewhere that babies

cans hear from an early stage Me: move

He ignores me and stands in front of me. His stupid dark eyes bore into me.

He gets on his knees and lifts up my top exposing my not so there belly. He kisses my tummy and I feel butterflies roaming around.

Me: Nathi.... please move

He stands up, but continues to hold onto my waist.

Him: tell me what I need to do for you to stop hating me so much. I'll do anything Tshidi. I know I've hurt you. I didn't mean to. Please baby, please Nomatheba, Khumalo. Please

I look up at him and my heart breaks. I love him. I really do, but. How do I get passed that dreadful night that he held a gun to my head

Me: you've really hurt me Nathi.

Him: I know I did baby but it wasn't on purpose. Tshidi I love you. I've hurt you. But baby believe Me I love you with every fibre of my being

Me: then why did you sleep with her

Him: Tshidi, it was her first night home. I

just wanted to comfort her Me: so you

use sex to comfort her. Really Nathi

Nxa, just when I thought he couldn't

say anything more stupid Him: sex?

Who said anything about sex

Me: I asked you if you'd slept with her and you said yes

Him: Tshidi I said yes, but you didn't let me finish. Yes, I slept

in the same bed as her, yes I held her, but no. I have not had

sex with her

He looks at me and sees that I doubt him

Him: Tshidi, I know I messed up but is that how low you think of me. That I would have sex with her this quickly? Tshidi what you and I have sexually is something I've never had. The way we connect, it makes me weak just by thinking of it. I am not ready to be with Thadiwe sexually. Yes she tried but i let her down gently

Me: I don't know Nathi. It's all just too much

Him: tell you what. You don't have to make a decision right this instant. I know it sounds crazy, but please think about it

I nod. I don't know how I feel but i kind of feel a bit better.

He leans in and I try backing away, but he holds onto me tighter. I want to fight him. I don't want to find comfort in his arms but a big part of me is vulnerable, and i give in and just let him hug me.

Him: now let's go see our baby.

We get to the the hospital and Hlokes is already waiting for us.

Him: it's nice to see you two not trying to kill eachother for a change Nathi: Dude.

She's just started talking to me. Dont make things worse

Me: hello. I'm standingright here. Can we get this

done please. I'd like to go take a nap Hlokes punches

Nathi on the shoulder playfully

Nathi: you punch like a girl

Hlokes: yah, yah.. come let's take a look at your baby

I lay down on the bed but Hlokes insists we have to do a virginal ultrasound. Apparently it's more clear

I'm given a moment to change, and then I'm back on the bed with my legs spread like a chicken that's about to be roasted. Thankfully from where Nathi is standing he can't see anything. I've got a sheet over my legs. All, he needs to do is keep his face online screen.

Hlokes points at the screen

Him: yep. You're most definitely pregnant. 7 weeks already. For a moment there i thought you were shooting blanks

Nathi doesn't say a word . His eyes are glued to the screen. The smile on his face is the size of the whole of Africa. I don't know why he's grinning because all there is now is a little blip

Me: can i get a picture?

Hlokes: sure. I'll print a few for you
Me: is everything ok?

Hlokes: everything's fine. The baby looks healthy. Your due date is January 10th

From the moment Nathi saw little blip on the screen he has had this stupid smile on his face. He keeps stealing glances at me. I don't pay attention to him. I have bigger things to worry about. Like figuring out what this crazy woman named Thandiwe is up to

Him: what are you
thinking about Me:

(sigh)

Him: it's Thandiwe isn't it?

Me: Nathi. Don't you find her
whole reappearance strange Him:

how so

Me: like. The timing of it all
seems to perfect Him:

Tshidi just say what you
want to say

Me I just feel like you need to dig deeper when it comes to
her disappearance. Like where she was for the past 4 years.
And who held her.

Him: she says she doesn't know

Me: so that's it? She says she does t know about anything,
and you just believe her? Just like that Him: I didn't say
anything about leaving anything

Me: what are you doing about it

Him: you don't have to worry your pretty little head about it. I
told you I will sort this out. All you have to do is trust me. If she
crossed me I'll find out about it

Something about how his face
changes, doesn't sit well with me. Me:

Nathi what are you up to

Him: can we not talk about her. I've just seen my baby for the
first time. I'm too excited to be worrying about that

He opens the volume to some jazz song that

he's playing, and whistles along. I know he's

trying to avoid the subject, my only question is
why?

Nathi decides to spend the rest of the afternoon annoying me. He keeps telling me about what a great dad he's going to be, and how he is going to make sure his son is taken care of blah blah blah. I'm starting to regret letting him in after my appointment. Next thing I know he will be wanting to spend the night.

Me: I think it's getting late

He frowns as he
looks at his watch.

Him: can't I stay
longer

Me: nope. You heard your dad. You stay at the hotel

Him: (sigh) will you at least think about what
we spoke about in the meeting? Me: Nathi I

Him: please Tshidi. Just think about it.

He gives me a kiss on the cheek and leaves me feeling confused. Am I honestly thinking about this? What woman in this day and age is willing to be a second wife? Like really. Something must be wrong with me.

I text the girls and ask them to come meet me for lunch the following day. I need someone's opinion on this matter. Maybe then I can make up my mind on what it is that I want to do,

Nath's request has managed to keep me awake. I love him. I really do, but being a second wife is not something I'm willing to do. How do I go to sleep knowing that my husband is in bed with another woman? I know he already loves her, why else would he have reacted the way he did.

I make up my mind that very moment. I'm going to have to let go of Nath. It's no use making him choose because it's obvious he can't. So it's better I make the decision for him.

The following morning I wake up determined to live my life again. I've been so busy worried about Nath, I've forgotten who I am as a person. I have successful businesses to get to plus I fly out to CT to see Aya, I've missed her far too much. The only good thing about her being away is that she didn't witness the fight between Nath and I.

I get ready, and start my day at the boutique, then I go to the bridal boutique. I work at the bridal boutique for my morning. I ignore Nath's calls, I'm in my zone, and I don't want him bursting my bubble.

I leave for lunch with the girls feeling like a million dollars. I was able to get through a few of my designs.

My flight and accommodation is booked. I can't wait to enjoy the sea breeze with my daughter.

Hopefully I can convince her to come back home.

I'm in the middle of crossing the road, when a black SUV comes speeding towards me. I freeze for a moment, because judging by the speed, it's obvious I'm a goner. I don't know

where tools came from, but all I see is the two cars collide and my security team rushes towards me and moves me out the way.

I'm rushed back into my boutique and it's immediately shut down. They clear the boutique and I'm left with just my staff.

I hear my phone ringing and I already know it's Nathi.

I want to ignore him, but I answer Me: Nathi

Him: oh thank God.

Are you ok? Me:

I'm fine

Him: are you still at

the boutique Me:

yes

Him: do as your security detail

says. I'll be there now Me: ok

I don't know what's going on outside, but whatever is I hope Tools is ok.

My staff give me a bottle of water to try calm my nerves but I'm shaking. What if tools hadn't been so quick? I would've been dead.

In a matter of minutes, there are reporters outside. My security team closes the curtains, and make me go into my office, which only makes me feel worse.

I pace up and down my office. I'm shaking. What if nails had gotten the a second too late? That car would've hit me and I would've probably been dead. I would've left Aya in this big old ugly world. My

poor baby

I hear shouting and I know that Nathi has arrived. He is screaming at the security detail. I don't know why but he sounds like he's about to kill someone.

Him: all of you are fired. I told you to make sure she is safe. What the hell happened

I hear the security trying to explain but as always Nathi doesn't listen? I feel bad for the security because I know what it's like to be in the receiving end of his wrath.

He barges into my office, and hugs me too tight. I pull away but he hugs me tighter

Him: I was so worried. Oh thank God. You're ok

Me: Nathi. I can't breathe

He lets go and I feel his lips on mine. For a second I freeze because, because of the butterflies in my tummy, I kiss him back. Don't ask me why, but I do. Until my mind registers what I'm doing, I roughly step back

Me; don't do that

Him: I'm sorry. I just..., I'm just glad you're ok

I move away from him and sit on my chair. He stares

at me as I keep my face down. Him: I'm sorry. I

shouldn't have done that

I don't know why, but all of a sudden I am pissed. I don't know if I'm angry at myself for enjoying the kiss or if I'm angry at him for kissing me, all I know is I am pissed and I'm about to give him a piece of my mind

Me: no you should've. I'm not yours to do with as you please Nathi. I have feelings and you've flipping used and abused those feelings. So how dare you. How dare you touch me or kiss me or fucking comfort me. I want nothing to do with you.

Him: Tshi

Me: no. I want out Nathi. I want out of this life. Out of this marriage. I want you out my life. I refuse to be your lapdog second ass wife. You had better stay the hell away from me if you want any access to my children at all

I know I've hit a spot when he looks at me like he's about to lose it.

Him: Tshidi, I know you're angry. I'm sorry, but don't you dare think that even for a minute that I will let you use OUR children against me. Aya is mine just as much as she is yours. I won't let you use them to get what you want.

If you want me to leave you alone I will. But don't ever, and I mean ever threaten me using them.

I know at this moment that its best I keep my mouth shut. He's right. I know how much he adores Aya, and how much she adores him, the last thing I'd ever do is

keep them apart because of my selfishness. We sit in awkward silence for a while, until I decide to speak up

Me: is
tools ok?

Him: yes,
he's fine

Me: and the
driver of the car?

Him: (sigh)

Me: Nathi
who was it?

Him:
Thandiwe

I look up at him shocked

Me: please tell, me she's dead

He gives me a look but I don't care, that bitch tried to kill me

Him: she says it was a mistake. She hasn't driven in 4 years. She didn't see you

Me: and you believe her?

Him: I don't know Tshidi. She
looked a bit shaken

Me: My heart sinks. I know nothing I say will make him see her for who she really is. He loves her, and no amount of fighting or pleading will change that.

I try opening the front door but it's locked. I fetch the key, but Nathi stands at the door.

Him: Tshidi. The media is packed outside. They know about Thandiwe being alive. Its best we wait till security can clear the reporters first

Me: I have a flight to catch, and I haven't packed

Him: a flight? Where are you going

Me: to see Aya, I'm spending the rest of my week there

Him: and you didn't think to inform me?

Me: no. I didn't see why I have to tell you anything about where I am

Him: Tshidi, you are the vice president's wife. You are a target. I need to keep you safe. You can't just jump onto some random flight and think that's ok

Me: I don't care. I'm going and there's nothing you can do about it

Him: Tshidi. I'm getting tired of fighting with you. I'm sorry I messed up. But no matter how much you hate me there are things that we can't change. Like security. I don't care if you like it or not. You will have full security detail. You won't take a SAA flight. You take the jet.

Me; Nathi I didn't sign up for this.

Him; I know Tshidi. But things aren't the same now. With Thandiwe's reappearance the media is going to hound us. We need to present a united front

Me; I can't do this. I can't sit and smile as though nothing is wrong. You've broken me Nathi. And you continue to hurt me over and over again. I'm begging you. Please just let me go. I need to think of OUR children. If this continues, I won't be alive to see them grow up. We can always co-parent well. Please. Just let me go Nathi. Please

He wipes his forehead and avoid eye contact. Him; what time do you want to leave for CT

Me; as soon as possible

Him; I'll have the Jet ready for you by 4pm. I'll have your security detail take you home

With that he leaves. He doesn't answer me.

I let out a sigh and hope he understands where I'm coming from. It's all just gotten too much. I can't do it anymore.

An hour later we are finally able to leave the boutique. The two cars are still parked outside. The tow cars are there but because of the media they aren't able to load the cars.

I arrive home and find my girls there. They all look relieved when they see me walking in.

Fifi: we were so

worried about you

they all stand to hug

me

me: I'm fine

Dourine: what happened

Boni: here. Have some wine. This

will make you better Me: I can't

They all look at me like I'm crazy

Busi: since when

don't you drink? Fifi:

oh my gosh you're

pregnant

I smile for the first time
since this morning Boni:

how far along are you
Me: 7 weeks

Fifi: I get to make the

baby shower Me:

yah, that's if I carry to

full term

The smiles on all their faces disappear. I don't know why but I start getting emotional.

I sit next to Boni as she holds me. I tell them everything that happened. From Nathi pointing a gun at me to nearly being killed by his pshyco wife

Fifi: so you're telling me that that bitch
has been alive this whole time Me: yep

Boni : well, we need to send her back to the grave. She needs to go back to lesilo and leave you alone Dourine: so you're going to give up on your marriage just like that?

Me: Dourine, she tried to run me over, and he says he believes her that it was a mistake

Busi: Tshidi he's just confused. Think about where he's coming from. Tshidi this your time to fight for your man. He's told you he loves you. Trust him

Me: if he loves Me why does he believe everything she says? I can't for a man that isn't willing to fight for me

Fifi: Tshidi, men are stupid. They do stupid things. It's in their nature. It's up to you to rise above their stupidity and keep your family intact.

Me: I don't know guys. I thought I was going to take the bitch on. You know, but after today I'm not so sure. What if something happens to my baby, in my quest to find out the truth? How will I live with myself knowing I could've just left him and moved on with my children

Fifi: then hire a private investigator? I had a guy that helped me dig up a chick Siya was shagging. I'll send you his number. He's a professional.

The girls stay for a few hours and that alone makes me feel better. I don't know what the future holds for me and Nathi, but for now all I know is its time I take care of myself and move on. Sometimes no matter how much you love someone you have to love yourself enough to know when to quit.

51

Im guessing Nathi got the message, because im already on my flight to CT and he hasn't phoned.

I know I want him to leave me alone, but it doesn't make it easier. Ive gotten so used to his idiotic ways, that I kind of miss him.

I shift that stupid idea from my mind, and concentrate on my stress less week away. All I want is to spend time with my little Aya.

I'm sure she is going to be so excited when she sees me.

I hadn't told her that I was coming. I wanted to surprise her. I

just hope she doesn't ask me about Nathi. Because I don't have answers for her.

I arrive at the hotel and find the bathroom stocked with my favourite bath oils. The fridge has all my favourite juices and there's a huge bouquet of roses in the lounge. I open the note and it reads
" I love you"

I sigh and put the card back. My heart wants me to call him, and tell him I love him too, but I don't listen to my heart. Instead I listen to my brain, that's telling me to leave him alone. I take a shower and have an early night. Tomorrow I get to see my daughter, and I know she will be enough to get me through this week.

Nathi

Seeing the jet take off makes my mind race. I had hoped that Tshidi would've changed her mind, but her leaving makes me feel like the beginning of the end.

I haven't seen Thandi since the accident. I don't want to see her, but I know I have to get to the bottom of all of this. Everything that Tshidi said about her plays in my mind. What if Tshidi is right, What if she isn't who I think she is.

She hasn't stopped calling me, I haven't answered her, but I decide to stop hiding and listen to what she has to say

Me;

Thandiw

eHer;

Baby

Me; what can I do for you

Her; really Nathi. Is that the way
you speak to your wife Me;
Thandi im busy.

Her; I need you Nathi.
Please. Come home Me;
Tha

Her; Please. I'm so freaked out about the accident, and now
there is a wolf pack of reporters at our
house. Please. Just
come home Me; ill
see you now.

I leave the hotel and go to the house. I would like to call it home,
but lately it feels like its not.

When I get to the house I find the lights dimmed and
candles everywhere. This reminds me of the number of
nights I made love to Tshidi. she always had a thing for
candles

I put the lights on bright, as I see Thandi walking
down the stairs with a lace red Lingerie. Her; what do
you think?

I swallow, because I hadn't realized just how fit she was

Me; whats going on
Her; nothing. I just
missed my husband
Me; (sigh) Thandi, we
need to talk

She comes closer to me and I feel Goosebumps down my back
Her; yes. We do. But first.....

She kisses me and for a moment, I am weak. All I want to do is
take her upstairs, and relive the nights I had with her, but even
with her being here. Almost naked, I still Miss Tshidi.

I stop the kiss and she looks at me confused

Me; I'm sorry. I can't

Her; Nathi why are you
making things so difficult Me;
Thandi. I love her

I see something in her eyes change. There's anger in them.
There's hatred I never knew existed.

I feel something stabbing me from the front. She doesn't take
her eyes off of mine. The betrayal of the
knife going through my body hurts more than the actual blade
that she drove into me

Her; let's see how much you love her when you're dead.
Goodbye Nkosinathi. My mission is now complete.

She walks away and I fall to the ground. My hands are on the
knife covered in blood. The last thing I think of is Tshidi. She
was right all along.

Thandi

I couldn't leave that house fast enough. I can't believe I
kissed that fucker. I put on my clothes, and sneak out before
anyone even notices. I call Ntsiki and let her know that I
messed up.

I wasn't supposed to kill him this quickly. It was supposed to be much later. But the moment he spoke about that Bitch my anger started. I wasn't supposed to get jealous, I have been trained for the past four years. Jealousy wasn't supposed to appear. Instead I aborted my mission. Now I have to get back to Brazil before shit hits the fan.

Tshidi

The smile on Aya's face when she sees me is priceless. She has been sitting across from me this whole time eating ice cream at wimpy and she still doesn't believe that I'm here

Me; so how are you liking your new school

Her; it's the amazing mom. I get to see real live experiments, and the equipment they have is top of its class

Me; baby, are you sure you want to stay here. I mean you and I can go back to JHB, and you could go back to being in your old school

Her; mom. I like it here. I miss you, but I like it

Me; ok. What if I moved here to CT? would

you move in the house with me? Her; mhmm maybe

Me; Maybe? Aya

Her; if you and daddy move here, then yes. Ill move back in

Me; Aya, Daddys busy at the moment. I don't think he could move to Cape Town

Her; ok. But I hope he does

I decide to end the conversation there and there. I don't want Aya, knowing that something is wrong.

I spend the rest of my day with Aya. We pick up Olwetho in the

afternoon and we all go for dinner. I watch Olwetho and Aya, and I'm glad to see how well he takes care of her.

I take them back to school after dinner, and head back to my hotel.

I notice I haven't received any missed calls from Nathi. As they say the first 24 hours of an addict's rehabilitation is the most difficult. I've missed him. I crave talking to him. But I refuse to give in.

I have survived 24hrs without him, surely I can survive the rest of my life⁵²

My trip to cape town seems to be doing me some good. I only arrived yesterday, and already I feel like I am starting to move on. I sit on the beach watching the sunrise, and something about the stillness of this moment makes my heart happy.

This is the stillness I need in my life. I had once hoped that Nathi and i would concour this stillness together, but it's obvious now that this is a journey I need to take myself.

I wasn't really able to sleep lastnight. I had tried but sleep just never came. I wanted to talk to him and just hear his voice, but i again opted to listen to my head instead of my heart. And now here I am on the beach, staring into the never ending waters and praying that with time, I will be able to move on.

The walk back to my hotel room is rather short. Today I plan on looking at some properties that are for sale. I'm hoping to find a beach house that Aya and i can make home. There's nothing really keeping me in JHB. My boutiques run like well oiled

machines. My staff make sure of it. I could fly down to JHB once a week, just to check on things, but other than that I don't see why I can't move. I don't really participate

much in the day to day running of the shelter. I've hired people who are far more fully equipped to run the organization. My job is just to ensure that the financing continues to come in.

I soak myself in a nice warm bath. I'm actually really grateful that Nathi made sure that my favourite oils were available. The vanilla smell of the water reminds me of the countless times we sat in the bath talking about useless things. He would lean back and I would sit in between his legs with my back to him. He would always find something stupid to say. In those moments we didn't think about sex, or spanking, but in those intimate moments were times where I thought I knew for a fact that he loved. Those were some of the best times we had. It makes me wonder if it was all a lie? Was Nathi really using me to cure his heart? Was he looking at me and seeing her? When we made love, did he get turned on because of me, or was he thinking about her? These are all questions that I will never get truthful answers for.

So I push those questions out my mind and concentrate on finding myself a new home.

I've looked at 3 houses already and damn is Cape Town overpriced. Not to mention the beach houses. They cost up to double what my house in JHB would cost. Which is a problem, since I don't plan on taking any money from my separation/divorce with Nathi. I've invested most of my money in my boutiques and despite making a huge profit, I still wouldn't be able to afford these houses.

I sit with my laptop at a nearby restaurant and I go through Property24 in hopes of finding a bargain home. Even if it

needs a few fixes here and there. I would fix it over a period of time

Him: what's a pretty girl like you sitting here all alone.

I look up irritated and there stands what I would consider a perfect looking man. He's the kind of man that deserves to be on the front page of the magazine. I can tell he is mixed race by the colour of his skin, and his hazel Brown eye.

I see my security detail step a bit closer, and I signal for them to stand down. The last thing I need is for them to cause a scene

Me: didn't your mother teach you never to talk to strangers

Him: she did, but i couldn't resist. No beauty like you should dine alone.

Me: that is the worst pick up line I've ever heard. Try another one on me. One that isn't as cheesy I see him smile.

Him: fine, how about we forget the pick up lines, and you agree to let me join you for lunch. Me: no thank

you. I'm actually enjoying the time alone.

Him: Thats a pity. I was hoping to get to know more about you

Me: all you have to do is Google me. I'm sure you'll find just about everything you need to know about me on there

Him: well, in that case I am going to pick up my broken heart off the floor, and hope our paths cross again in the near

future

He smiles, and walks away and leaves me to continue to look at these

Ridiculously priced houses. After lunch, I do a bit of shopping and then go back up to my suit feeling defeated. There is no way I am going to afford a house down here. Maybe it's about time I look at Apartments, or town houses.

The moment i walk into my suit I put my phone on charge and swift it on. It's been flat now for sometime, and I'm hoping to follow up on the designs I sent to the boutique be for I came here.

I sit and go through the e-mails on my phone. Most of them are work related. I don't answer any, because I'm lazy, but i make a promise to myself to reply the following day.

I hear a knock on my door and contimplat ignoring it, but decide to answer.

The sadness in the eyes of this man standing before me, makes my heart hollow. I've seen tools in a lot of ways, but this, this one is new.

Him: mam, I'm sorry to disturb you. But this is rather urgent

He doesn't look at me. Tools is ex army. He is trained to have manners. If he isn't looking at me, the something must be terribly wrong

Me: what is it tools?

Him: Mam, we need to get you back to JHB asap
Me:
Tools, did Nathi put you up

to this

HIM: No mam, but it is important that we leave now. The jet is already waiting for you
Me: I'm not stepping foot out of this hotel, until you tell me what the heck is going on
Him; it's Mr Khumalo man

The minute he says that, I

feel my heart cramp
Me:

what about him

Him: He's he's in the hospital

Me: Hospital? What happened

Him: were not sure man. Mr Ndhlovu found him this at his home. He had a stab wound just below the heart.

I feel like the wind has just been knocked out of my pipes. My head is spinning, and my heart race a at uncontrollable speed.

I don't bother taking anything from the room. I race down the passage towards the basement.

Tools is behind me giving orders to his men. Aya and Olwetho are already on a flight home. We've all been placed under protective custody. This is what Nathi referred to as code red.

The flight back to JHB drags on more than normal. If I could I would fly, but unfortunately I've had to rely on man made machines to get me there sooner. I haven't asked tools anymore questions. All I want is to be by my husband's side.

The moment we touch down in JHB, I am whisked away to what a small town out of JHB. I am confused as to why I'm here, but all I was told was these were instructions given by Siya.

We arrive outside of a vintage looking hospital. The security detail here is on another level altogether.

The only way to gain access to The main door is by the fingerprint security system. I don't really have time for this. I just do as told and wait to be taken to him.

I stand at his door, and my heart breaks. He is covered in wires. There are machines all over his body. He looks like he is asleep. Like he is going to wake up and look at me with those deep rooted eyes.

How did we get here? Why did I leave? How could I have given up on him so easily. What kind of a wife am I.

I sit next to him and take his hand in mine.

Me: Nathi.. why didn't we stick to our vows? Why did we do this to each other? Baby. Please. Don't leave us. I need you. Our children need you. What will I tell them if you die? How will I explain that if only we had fought harder for Each other that none of this would've happened? Come back to us. Please.

I sit next to him and think about the past couple of weeks. We went left so quickly, what if only in had told him about Thandiwe ? We could've been just fine. Maybe we could've discussed This like adults. Maybe i should've just agreed to be the second wife. Maybe we could've avoided all of this.

I sit with him for hours. Doctors keep checking on him but there isn't much hope. by the time Siya found him he had lost a lot of blood. They operated on him this morning, but apparently it was touch and go.. they have to perform another op on him, but they have decided to rather wait till he is

stronger.

Siya arrives and he looks
as beat up as I am Him:

Tshidi

Me:mhm

Him: I'm sorry. We should've dug deeper

We all let you down. We all just thought he was right about
her. He knew her so well. We never once thought she
would've been capable of this.

Me: it's fine Siya. It's not your fault. Nathi should've just
listened to me. If he had we wouldn't be in this situation at all

Him: you should go
get some rest. Me: I
don't want to leave
him

Him: Tshidi, he would kill me if he found you here looking as
tired as you do. Go rest. Ill give you an update should there
be a change

I think about what he said, and decide to go rest. I know for a
fact that should he wake up and find me looking like a zombie.
He would go all AXE on everyone

Me: please make sure no one gets in. I....

Him: Tshidi, we have been beefed up security all around. We
made the mistake of lightening our lose once. That's never
happening again.

Me : Have you found her yet?

Him: not yet. But we will. Which is why I've moved
everyone here. Things are about to get bad. Me: are we

safe here?

Him: yes. You and Aya, have nothing to worry about. All you have to do is to take care of yourself and Nathi, and i will do the rest.

I nod and not bother asking anymore questions. I just have to trust and believe that Siya will handle this,

I kiss Nathi's dry lips, and leave him with Siya. A part of me wants to rest, but a really big part of me is scared of leaving him. I would hate to have him wake up and for me not to be There.

53

Tools drives me to what looks like a modest home, in the same town that the hospital is in.

He shows me around. It's not the mansion I've become accustomed to, but i don't really care for comfort. All I care about now is whether the father of my child is going to wake up or I'm going to have to raise this baby all on my own

Thandiwe

Getting out of S.A. has been harder than I thought. The security has been almost impossible to breach, but as always Ntsiki has it handled. We're on our way back to Brazil much sooner than anticipated, Hugo is just going to have to understand. This wasn't my intention. I don't actually know why I got so angry with Nkosinathi, when he told me about loving that thing of his. By the time the plan to fake my death came along, I was already out of love. The last few days were the worst. Even having him touch me was horrible. But I saw how he looks at

her, that annoyed me, because I knew a few years ago he used to look at me the very same way.

The flight as always is long. By the time we land In Rio I'm already exhausted. All I want to do now is see my son.

The trip to HQ isn't what I would call fun. I already know that Hugo is going to be pissed. I just hope that he understands where I'm coming from.

I get at his office, I take a deep breath and open the door

The look on his face tells me he is pissed. He has a cigar in his hand and is looking at me like he is about to pounce

Him: what did I say to you when you left for this mission
Me: to only kill him once I've been given orders to do so
Him: and why did you decide to do as you want

Me: Hugo. Please. It's not the end of the world. Ghost and the rest of the team are still there for the going

Him: you see why I think you are stupid? Because you say stupid things. The whole point was for you to have these people trust you, and love you. They were supposed to trust you, and only then do we strike. But look now. They have disappeared off the face of the world. I Can't even trace them.

All because of you stupidity

Me: I'm sorry

Him: sorry? Now I have to start again

I walk around to where he is sitting. I know he's mad at me, but he is a man, and at the end sex always makes things better.

I sit on his desk with my legs a bit open.

Me: baby, I'm sorry. We will avenge your brother's

death I promise. It's only a matter of time Him: go get

yourself cleaned up. Make sure you're naked when I get

there

I stand up and notice how he still seems angry. I already know what that means. He isn't going to make love to me, instead he is going to make me pay sexually for messing up.

I head to his apartment and take a bath. I let my hair down and make sure I've lotioned every part of my body.

I take the towel and wrap it around my body. Hugo arrives and finds me as I'm about to sniff some coke. Him: don't. I want you aware

Me: Hugo please,

just one pull Him:

I'm not repeating

myself

I step away from the coke and stand in front of him and start to undress him. He's still tense, but I know once he gets lost in me, all will be forgiven. Once I'm done I take off my towel and stand naked in front of him.

Him: get on the bed

I try kissing him, but he

pushes me on the bed. Him:

Turn around

I do as told, and before I know it I'm screaming out in pain. He has me by the hair and is my anus without even using lube.

He thrusts in and out while I scream for him to stop. I know he is punishing me. It's not the first time but i just can never get used to the feeling

He doesn't ease up. Instead he starts going faster. He only stops when he is close to cuming.

He turns me around and i see blood on him. He wipes himself with a towel and wipes away a tear from my eye

Him: i didnt train you for you to mess up. The next time it

happens I will feed your son to the dog's. I nod, and he slaps

me

Him: I see you've become very weak since you've left. Since when do you cry? Me: I'm sorry Hugo. It's just

Him: shut up and come fuck me

so I can get to my wife. He sits on

the bed, and i sit on top of him.

He holds onto my waist and i start to move. I hear him growl and i move faster, before I know it he is

biting me as he cums and as always he leaves me hanging. He told me from the very first day that he only makes Rebecca, his wife come. I'm just his official mistress. He does the things that he can't do to his wife to me.

He pushes me off Him, and goes to take a shower. I sit on the bed, and wait for him to finish. When he is done he comes and stands in front of me.

Him: tomorrow you will be entertaining a few guests for me. Make sure your girls are ready
Me: how many girls do I need to prep?

Him: 12. All must be young

Me: ok

Him: don't mess this up for me.
Me: I won't

He leaves and bangs the door behind him. I sit on the bed with my anus burning. I need to take a bath, but first I sit and absorb what my stupidity led me to. If only I had not liked money and the flashy lifestyle, I would be home with Nathi and we would be a happy family with Siseko, instead I sold my soul to the devil, and now I am a wanted killer, and I know it's only a matter of time before Ghost gets to me.

After sitting in the bath for what feel like an eternity, I get dressed and ready for work. My driver drives me to the brothel, and the first thing I do is take a drink from the barman.

Him: you look far better than I expected

Me: have Harold line up the girls. I need to see the fresh meat that's arrived since I left

I go to my office and look through the files from the last few weeks I haven't been around. Knock knock

Me:enter

Harold: your girls are ready

I walk to our main hall and find about 39 girls standing there Me:

mhmm not bad

Harold: some of our best

I look at the girls and point out the 12 for the function tomorrow. All these girls are between the ages of 20 to 25.

I choose a variety from dark

skinned to dark skinned. Me:

the rest of you are dismissed

The others scatter and leave me with my selected 13. One extra for me.

Me: Harold. Get the girls to the spa. I want hair done, all of them must be groomed and ready by morning.

He nods and they all follow

Me: except for you

I point at the Sun tanned Brazilian

beauty standing in front of me Me: you

go up to my apartment

Harold looks at me and nods.

I leave just after them. For today my work is done. Tomorrow we have some new recruits which I will train, but for now I need to put my Brazilian beauty to good work.

I arrive at the apartment and find Nadia half naked.

She is wearing a beautiful lace lingerie. Her: I hope you

don't mind. Harold said I could have a glass of bubbly

Me: it's fine.

She drinks the remaining champagne in her glass and

looks at me with those puppy eyes I pull her to me

and enjoy the taste of the champagne from her lips.

Mhmm

She undressed me and I kiss her all over. I push her in the bed, and put her nipples in my mouth. We're both wet, and I just don't have the patience to wait. I haven't had some of this since I left a few weeks ago. I move up and put my p***y in her face.

She sucks me as I grind on her until I explode all over her calling her name.

I lay on my back trying to catch my breath. Ntsiki walks in and frowns when she looks at me. Her: I can't believe you had fun without me

Me: I needed to release some stress.

Hugo wasn't exactly gentle She looks
comes closer and I see her kiss Nadia.

Her: you still taste good.

I smile and leave her and Nadia to have some fun. I get myself cleaned up, then go to what some would call, my home. This is the one place where I can be with my son and keep him away from the stupid life I chose. If only I knew then that I was pregnant, I would've gotten out of the deal and stayed with Nathi. He would've been an amazing father, but then there's no use crying over spilt milk. What's done is done, my life is here now and that is just something I going to have to accept. It's not like I have anywhere to go back to. I've killed Sisekos father. He will just have to grow up here in Brazil.

Tshidi

I've tried sleeping but i mainly tossed and turned most of the night. It's only 6am and already I want to go to the hospital.

I get there and there doesn't seem to be much change. He is goin into surgery today, and for some reason I have a glimmer of hope.

Her: he looks so peaceful. Like he is going to wake up and say don't start with me Tshidi

I smile as Boni imitates his voice. She gives me a hug and looks at me In the eyes

Her: it's going to be ok. He'll come out of this. He's a fighter

Me: I hope your right Boni. I do t know

if I could live without him She just holds

me as I cry at the possibility of losing

him.

Hlokes walks in with what looks

like a team of doctors. He hugs

me and then looking his wife

Him: he's going into surgery. You ladies should go home. I'll call as soon as they're done Me: are you going to be there?

Him: yes. I'm not operating on him. But I'll be there to make sure everything goes well Me: ok

Him: it's a 8 hour operation. So I should be able to call you at around 9pm

I'm reluctant to leave him, but i leave with Boni anyway. We are dropped off at Rifiloes house. All the houses here are identical. The only difference is the furniture.

I see Aya running towards me, and immediately my heart smiles Her:

mommy you didn't tell me we were coming on holiday

ME: do you like it here?

Her: yes I love it. We're going

fishing now with uncle nails Me:
ok. You go ahead. I'll see you later

She takes Olwetho's hand and they run outside to see Nails.

I sometimes wish I was Aya, her innocence is what I could use right now. I'm glad they haven't told her about Nathi, the last thing I want is for her to have to worry. For now let me enjoy the company of my girls and hope that Nathi makes it through the day.

54

The op was a success. Those are the words I hear over the phone from Hlokes. It's 1:00am. He was supposed to call at around 9pm. He was busy taking care of Nathi during post op

Me: so can I come see him?

Him: not yet. You should get some sleep.

You can see him in the morning Me: but what if he wakes up and I'm not there

Him: we're waking him from the ensured coma in the morning. For now he needs to res Me: ok

Him: Tshidi, don't worry. I'm taking good care of him. I won't leave his side I promise I end the call and cuddle Aya some more at least I know he is going to be ok.

I'm up in the morning making breakfast for Aya, her and Olwetho have a private teacher coming to tutor them because they are missing so many days at school. We still haven't received an all clear from Siya to let them go back to school yet. Apparently things are going to get

heated and we all have to stay here till only God knows when,

After breakfast I'm driven to the hospital. I find Nathi still sleeping but with a lot less machines around him. I can tell that he is even breathing on his own.

I sit next to him and put my hand in his.

Me: baby, you did good. Hlokes tells me that your operation went well. You should be waking up soon. Aya keeps asking me when you're coming home, I don't have an answer for her, but i hope its soon. I want to tell her I'm pregnant but I'm waiting for you. I was hoping we could tell her together.

Imagine if we have a boy. What would we name him? I was thinking we should name him after you.

I don't know why I'm talking to him like this. I'm not even sure he can hear me. I'm about to take my hand from his when I feel him squeeze my hand.

I almost jump out my chair.

Me: Nathi. Baby, can you hear me?

He squeezes again. I press the panic button and a team of doctors come barging in. Me: he squeezed my hand

Hlokes smiled. He's waking up
He clears the room and checks his vitals and leaves me with him. I sit back down and talk to him some more.

I tell him about my trip to CT. Now I appreciated the small gestures from him.

I tell him about all the steps of our pregnancy. How soon we'll be able to tell the sex of the baby. I look up and I see his eyes are open. I stand up and stand next to him.

Me: you're awake

Him: you..... Talk..... too much

He speaks so slowly, but I don't care he's
awake and that's all that matters Me: you
scared me

Him: water

I sms Hlokes that he's awake and he comes rushing in

Hlokes: well, finally. I was wondering when
you would come out of lala land I see Nathi
smile faintly

Him: water

Hlokes: I need you to hold off on drinking or eating
anything. I need to give you a check-up first, then you can
drink something

Nathi slowly lifts up his hand and pulls a middle finger at
Hlokes.

We both burst out laughing. At least he
hasn't lost his sense of humour Me; while
you do your check-up I'm going to get
you something to eat Him: Tshidi
I turn around

Him: don't go. Please

In sit as Hlokes does his check-up. I
see Nathi flinch a few times Me:
you're hurting him

Hlokes: he can handle it.

He's been through worse

Nathi giggles a bit

Hlokes: I'm giving you an hour, after
that you need to let him rest Me: but

Him: Tshidi, he's out of the woods,
but he needs tons of rest. Me: fine.

I sit and stare into his eyes.

Him: I'm sorry Tshidi

Me: sshhhhh. You need to worry about getting better.
Nothing else

He nods and starts to doze off to sleep. I don't move till I'm
certain he is asleep...

I leave when Hlokes comes back
in to check on him again Hlokes:
you can come see him this
evening

Me: ok

Hlokes: Tshidi, go. I'll
make sure he's ok I
give him a kiss and
leave

Nathi stays in the hospital for another 2 weeks. Aya and
Olwetho are back at school, but we are still stuck here in
this ghost town. Apparently they bought this town and
revamped it a bit. It's used as a safe house for all of us.
The security is extra tight, and for some reason that gives
me comfort.

I've started a little veggie garden outside. At least it
keeps me busy. Nathi has been undergoing intense
physio, so I haven't seen him as much as I would've
liked, but thankfully today he comes home.

We haven't really spoken about what happened. All I was
told was Thandiwe disappeared the same night Nathi was
stabbed. But I'm not stupid, I know she did it, I just don't
know why.

I'm in the garden when Hlokes pulls up with Nathi. I put down plants and go greet.

Nathi is placed in the main bedroom, and is allocated a nurse to take care of him. Apparently I am not fit enough to do it as I'm pregnant. Mxm

Hlokes leaves and I show the nurse to her quarters, then go back to make sure Nathi is settled. I rearrange his pillows, and pull out extra blankets on case he gets cold.

Me: I've made butternut soup. Can I get you some

Him: Tshidi

Me: or you can have aim lasagne. I made some last night

Him: Tshidi , stop. I'm fine

I stand not knowing

what to do with myself

Him: come here

I shake my head. I don't know why I'm being all emotional, but seeing him home just makes me happy, but deep down I worried.

Him: Tshidi. Please. don't cry.

Me: I'm going to make

you something to eat He

kicks off the blankets and

stands up

Me: you need to get back into bed.

You're supposed to be resting Him:

I'm fine

Me: you scared me. I thought.....

Him: Tshidi, it would take more than
that to keep me from you

Me: are
you going to tell me what happened

I see his face change

Him: I was wrong. I
should've believed you

Me: why did she do it?

Him: I don't know. But I'm working on possible leads

Me: leads? Nathi don't tell me you are going to try finding
her

Him: Tshidi, someone wants me dead. They sent her for a reason, I need to find out why.

Me: no. Your not putting me through this again. She's gone Nathi. Let her be. It doesn't matter why she did it

Him: Tshidi, this thing is bigger than just Thandiwe. She was sent to kill me. I don't know why, but whatever the reason, it's way bigger than we think, that I'm sure of it

Me: so what happens if you find her? Him: I'll

cross that bridge when

I get to it

Me what do you mean? Nathi, if you find that bitch you have to kill her. She didn't hesitate when she put a knife in you. One inch closer and she would've reached your heart. You would've been dead Nathi

Him: Tshidi, we don't kill woman

Me: you still love her don't you? After everything you still love her Him: No.

Tshidi... wait...

I don't wait for him to finish, there's no use. He can stand there alone and make excuses. I'm done with this stupid conversation.

I walk back into the garden and continue with my planting.

I plant a few seeds but go back inside. It's gotten too hot and I've gotten hungry.

I take a shower, then take lunch up to Nathi. I try walking away after I've given him lunch, but he grabs my hand

Him: can you sit down and talk to me without walking away?

Me: what's the use? You're going to choose her over me like you always do Him; Tshidi, sit down

Him;
come
closer Me;
ha a
Him; Baby, please. just
sit so we can talk. I sit

Hi : Tshidi, I'm not choosing her over you. All I'm saying is that I need to find out what's going on, once That's done I'll be able to figure out what to do. All I know for certain is that this is far from over, and all I want to do is to stop them before they get to you or Aya
I don't know if it's the hormones, but all I know is that yet once again I am crying

Me: how did we get here Nathi? Why wouldn't you see her for who she really is? Look now, we'll never find peace all because you don't listen

Him: Tshidi. I messed up. It wasn't about Love. Yes I still felt something for her, but mostly guilt. I was just trying to figure out what I was feeling. My only regret is that I made you believe I didn't love you. Tshidi, I've loved you from the moment I met you. I know I have a stupid way of showing you, but baby, please can you forgive me? Give me a chance to make it up to you.

I look at this crazy creature in front of me, and for whatever reason the thought of being without him hurt me more than the pain he had caused me.

Me; Nathi if you ever, and I mean ever

I don't even get to finish my sentence. He pulls me towards him and kisses me. I press onto his wound by mistake, and he flinches. I try moving but he pulls me closer.

I know what I'm doing is crazy but I'm choosing to trust him. That's what love is all about right? Trust

55

I don't know what it is about this man staring at me that makes me feel so weak. I love him. That's all I know. He's put me through hell the past couple of months but laying here in his arms somehow makes

me feel safe. I won't lie and say that I've forgotten about what he's done, but I'm trying to move forward. Hopefully this leap of Faith won't bite me in the butt at a later stage.

Him: so I'm forgiven?

Me: ha a

I shake my head and he frowns

Him: what do I have to do? Tell me and I'll do it

Me: you can start by taking the

morning sickness from me He

bursts out laughing

Him: baby, if I

could I would Me:

mxm. You're

useless shame Him:

I love you

Me: yah, yah, I love you too

He kisses me again and as always I

get weak at the knees Him: I've

missed you

Me: don't you ever scare

me like that again. Him: I'll

do my best

Me: Nathi. Don't start

with me. If you dare Him:

I wouldn't dare

Me: good. Now come help

me with the dishes Him:

eish baby, but my wound

Me: what wound? 2 minutes ago you were kissing me like

a dog on heat, and now your wound. He laughs and

follows me slowly to the kitchen.

He washes the dishes, as I dry and pack them away.

Him: we need a dishwasher

Me: how long are we

staying here? Him: till

it's safe again

Me: where is this place anyway? When I came here with tools

I was so busy stressing about your ass, I didn't quite capture

where he was taking me

Him: all you need to know is that you are off the grid. It's

better you don't know the exact location I want to argue

but then someone knocks on the door.

Nathi: come in

Nails comes in with a laptop in his hand. He greets us but

doesn't say anything afterwards. He stares at

Nathi and they have some sort of unspoken conversation

Nathi: baby, can you

excuse us a bit Me:

what is it?

Him: maybe you should go to

Rifiloes house for a while Me: no

ways. I'm tired, I want to take a

nap

Him: fine. Go to the room

Me: nails, can I make you something to eat

Him: no thanks Tshidi. But I need to speak to

Axe, and I'm a bit pressed for time Me: fine...

starve to death then.

I leave them and go lay down. A part of me wants to ease
drop on their conversation, but hell, I'm too tired for that.

I must've dozed off, because when I wake up Nathi is
standing next to me getting dressed Me: and now?

Him: go back to sleep

I look at my watch and its 8pm, I slept
through most of the evening Me: Nathi,

where are you going?

Him: don't worry about it. I'll be back by morning

Me; you haven't even been back from the hospital for more than
24hrs, and already you're going out.

What happened to resting?

Him: baby, I'll explain when I get back.

I give him the I'm not stupid look. We both know he won't

say a damn thing about where he was. Him; ok. Maybe I

won't, but it's for a good reason. I promise

He takes a few pain killers, then gives me a kiss.

Him: want me to

tuck you in? Me:

no

Him: baby

don't pout

Me: you're

being a jerk.

Him: you know I can't tell you everything Tshidi. But just know that I wouldn't be leaving you at this time, just for the sake of it

Me;

mxm,

Him:

sleep.

Me: stop telling me

what to do Nathi Him:

when do you give

birth again?

I throw the pillow at him and he chuckles

Him: well, then I guess I'll just have to soften you up with a good session of love making. Maybe then you won't be so moody

I just stare at him. Honestly I don't have a comeback. What does one say when your husband acts like an idiot

He gives me a kiss on the forehead and pushes me

gently on the bed tucking me in. Him: sleep. I'll see

you in the morning

He switches off the light and I'm left alone wondering where on earth he is headed

Nathi

I get in the car, and I find nails and a few of the team waiting for me. It's been a while since I've been to HQ. Intact I don't like being there at all. It takes me back to the old me. The guy I thought I had packed away, but with the Intel that I received from Nails, I know I have no choice but to wake axe up from the grave and start baying for blood

I arrive at HQ and the first thing I do

Nails: do you want me to get the lie detector ready
Me: no.

We're going old school

He looks at me with eyes wide open

Me: today Nails. I promised Tshidi I'd be home by morning.
Him: are you

sure

Me: yes. And bring me my axe. No in fact bring a tool box and make her son is sedated

Him; Axe. Don't you want to maybe?

Me; Now nails.

Nails looks at me worryingly, but I pay no attention to him. He needs to relax. It's not like I'm going to hurt the boy. I just want to use him

Him: can I bring her in

Me: yes. Let's get

this going. He

brings her in

handcuffs Me:

Jesse baby

She looks up and frowns

Her: I'm guessing you have a good reason for pulling me out of solitary

Me: mhmm maybe. You know I haven't been myself for a while. I've been trying to be the good guy. You know, Mr nice nice

Her: and how's that working for you

Him: well, not so good. I ended up with a knife in me

Her: well serves you right. But I don't see why that has anything to do with me

Me: Jess, remember when we were in Ops training they taught us about our enemies. What was rule number 1

Her: Axe. Can you get to the point?

Me: Jess. Rule number 1, what

was rule number 1 Her: mxm,

I stand up and open the tool box

Me: I know you're familiar with the tool box method. The whole idea is to start small and then go big. But I'm not patient. So I'll stick to my axe.

Her: Axe, what do you want from me

Me: we give you one visit every 3 months. Those visits are meant for you to see your son. But I noticed the last two visits weren't from your nanny.

Her: so? I changed nannies. Wants the big deal

Me: nothing. But then if you strip the disguise of the so called nanny. Then boom. It's the lovely Thandiwe

I see her eyes get wide and I know I'm right

Me: now all I want to know is why

my dead ex is visiting you Her: I

don't know what you're talking

about.

Me: come on Jess. I don't want to hurt you. Ghost has already hurt you before. Just tell me what I need to know and I'll let you be. In fact I might even consider letting you out of solitary. Maybe give you a cell mate

Her: you must be really stupid if you think I would ever say anything because you promised me a cell mate

Me: ok. Which finger do you

want to lose first? Her: give

it your best shot

I look at nails, and he knows what to do

Me: I thought you would say that, so I figured I'd bring out the big guns.

Nails walks in holding her son. She stands up and looks at me. I know now that I've got her where I want her.

Her: Axe. No

Me: you know there was a time where I would've never stooped this low. But now. Now I would do anything to get my hands on Thandiwe. She tried to run over my wife, and well, that is not something I take lightly.

Her: Axe. Please. He's only 5 years old. He doesn't know about anything

Me: yah, and now he never will. Unless his precious mommy tells me what I want to know She doesn't say anything so I pull out a syringe from the tool box

Me: I'm sure I don't need to explain what this is. You already know. I take the needle and have nails come closer

Her: wait. I don't know what they planning. All I know is that she was set here by Hugo. He wanted to find out about Fernandez. I told her the truth. That Fernandez was killed my Ghost. That's it. I swear

Me: Jess. Where are they

Her: I don't know, all I know is Hugo has taken over after Fernandez disappearance. He's got connections with the Italian cartels. That's it is wear. Please Axe. You have to believe me.

Me: Jess, if you're lying to me. I will kill you. I will hang your Son. don't fucking play with me.

Her. I promise. On my son's life

axe, that's all I know Me: good

girl. Now go back to your cell

and behave. She gets up

Her: can I hold my son? Just for a minute. Please

Me: as you can tell he's fast asleep. Bullet gave him something to help him relax. He won't even know he was here

She nods, and I see tears streaming down he face. See on any other day I would've felt bad for her, but today not so much. the day the knife went through me, is the day my weakness for tears died.

I hand her son back to nails, then go to the office to go look up Hugo.

I work throughout the night. I know for a fact that Jess knows more than what she is telling me. But because she still has

something to lose, I still have her right where I want her. She is going to be my one way ticket to revenge, and she doesn't even know it.

56

I have no idea when Nathi came home, but all I know is that he is here and is snoring in my ear. Me; Nathi

Him;

Mhmm

Me; wa

hlodia

Him;

Tshidi.

shhh

Me; no shhh. You need to get up. You have to take your meds Me; mhmm

He opens his eyes and he looks lost a bit then drifts off to sleep again

I go freshen up, then go make breakfast for my snoring beast. He may think he's tough, but I need to ensure that he takes care of himself otherwise we will have to go back to the hospital, and that's not something I plan on doing. Not anytime soon

Me; Nathi wake up and eat, so you can take your pills Him; we should get you one of those sexy nurse uniforms. Me; don't start.

Him; Ill eat later baby. Im tired. In fact I think you should come

back to bed

Me: it's fine. You can die, I'm
going to my yoga session Him:
yoga? Since when do you do
yoga

Me: it's Boni's idea. She says it's a good way to stay fit during
pregnancy

Him: why would you need to be fit during pregnancy?

I don't want you starving my baby, Me: bye

I give him a kiss on the cheek and leave him nagging about me
not needing exercise blah blah

As always I'm late. I find the girls at park halfway through the
session. Boni rolls her eyes as I sit next to her.

I start with meditating for the first 15 minutes. Then join the rest
of the routine. I struggle a bit with the
positions but I don't dare give up. Boni would have my head if I
ever thought of it.

Half an hour later we are done, and to be quite honest I'm
glad. This yoga think is way harder than I thought.

Boni: you look like you've even running a marathon

Me: I feel like I have. Like honestly I would've rather been on the
treadmill.

Fifi: well shame, because going forward there's no more
running for you. You're going to do yoga only Me: you guys
know this isn't my first pregnancy. I worked out throughout

Aya's pregnancy, and she's 9soon

Busi: come. Let's go get you fed

Me: did Nathi put you
guys up to this

Dourine: no.

Dourine takes my hand and we all walk to her house. The girls cook breakfast while I am made to sit and watch

Boni: so you and

Nathi are ok? Me:

yes, we're fine.

Busi: I'm glad. This whole Thandiwe drama scared me.

Me: I'm just worried about Nathi. I can see he isn't going to let this go. Last night he left for the whole night. I don't know where he went. All I know is he said he had to take of , and by the look he had in his eyes I just knew that It had to do with Thandiwe

Fifi: can I give you advice?

She puts an omelette in front of me and signals for me to eat.

Her: Nathi is never going to let this go. He isn't the type. All, of them aren't. This wouldn't have happened if they were still in the force full time. Over time they started letting things go. Even security wasn't so bad. We thought we were finally normal, but this just proved that they still have enemies, and no matter how long, those enemies don't forget. So as much as we hate it, things are going to get rough. They are going to get busy, because with their current positions and now tapping back into the force they are going to need us to stand firm. It's going to be our job to take care of each other emotionally.

Me: Fifi, why do feel like you know something I don't

Her: I'm just prepping you. I can tell by the way things have gotten that they are going on mission soon.

Siya hasn't said it, but I know him. He's stressing, he has meetings left right and centre.

Me: (sigh) I just hope this thing get sorted sooner rather than later. The last thing I need is to have him go AWOL throughout my pregnancy

Busi: well, don't worry about that for now. Maybe things won't be so bad.

Boni: what I want to know is when we're getting out of here? I miss my house. I need to do my nails, I look like a hurricane

Me: where did they find this place anyway?

Fifi: it's an old town which had turned into a ghost town. There were hardly people living here. So the guys bought it a couple of years ago and redeveloped it. It was always meant to be our safe houses. It's not on any map. It's secluded and security is in sane

Me: I see that. The wall surrounding it just goes on and on

Busi: you should see the control room. It's

insane. There's cameras everywhere Dourine:

I'm just glad that the panic rooms downstairs all

lead to each other.

Me; Panic room

Boni; Yep. Nathi needs to brief you.

Me; is this normal mara? We sitting here having breakfast talking about ops and killing and missions as though it's normal

Fifi; maybe to the outside world but to us. It's normal

I sit with these crazy people as they go on and on about this

crazy town that we're in. I don't know why I feel uneasy, but something doesn't sit well with me.

Boni walks me home when I start yawning. I don't why but for some reason with this pregnancy I am always tired.

Him; I was wondering when you'd be back

Me; Boni just

walked me home

Him; you should use

the golf carts

Me; I like the walking. It will help me

Him; I need to talk to you

about something Me; can

it wait? I need a nap

Him; it can't wait

I look up at him and I see that he is serious

Me; what's wrong

Him; walk with me

I slip my hand in his and he walks me to our room. He takes me to the closet

Him; I know you are not going to be

comfortable with this, but we need to do it Me;

do what

Him; a bit of training

Me; Training? What Training

He pushes the clothes on his rack to one side and I see a door there

Him; type in your ID number and open your eyes so it can scan your eyes

Me; Nathi

Him; Just do it

I do as told and the door opens

Him; This is only for urgent situations. Do not open this if it's not a life or death situation

I just

nod.

Him;

come

We walk in and the lights come on automatically

Him; This leads to Rifiloe's panic room.

Her's leads to Boni's and so on

Me; what's this?

Him; here

He takes my thumb and places it on the thumb print machine and a small door opens

Me; Nathi

Him; its only for urgent times. I don't think you'll ever need it but I need to know that you can defend yourself

Me; so you want me to

learn to shoot Him; yes

Me; no. I'm not doing this. It's crazy

Him; Tshidi

Me; No Nathi. You promised me you would protect me. I chose to believe you. I refuse to do this Him; at least pick it up

I turn around and walk out. This is not something I'm going to be ok with doing. I don't care what Nathi says. I will not

I leave the basement and go back to our room. I have a good mind to lock him in there

I lay on the bed and cry. I don't know why, but I do. Nathi comes close and just stands there. He doesn't touch me. He just stands and hovers

Me; stop

Him; I don't know what to do. I don't know why you're crying Me; because I just am.....

Him; Tshidi

Me; (sniff) why did you do this to me? Why am I crying?

He just stares at me and smiles. He lays next me and pulls me onto his chest

He lets me cry and for whatever reason, he just holds me and I cry some more, till I don't have the energy to cry anymore

Him;
feeling
better Me;

mhmm

Him; so the crazy you is gone

Me; call me crazy again and I'll use one of those guns to shoot you

Him; (chuckles)

He lifts my head and makes me look at him

Him; I love you..... Even when you cry for no reason. I love you

Me; (Sniff) I love you too

I lay on his chest and take a moment to breath. I start to doze off to sleep, but Nathi's phone rings and disturbs me

Him; Nails

Nails; boss you need

to get in here Him;

what is it

Nails; you need to come in. it's urgent

Nathi drops the call and looks at me

Him; I've got to rush

Me; I don't want you to go

Him; Tshidi

Me; (sniff) (sniff)

Him; baby don't cry. I'll be back

Me ; But Nathi. You just got out the hospital (sniff) and now you want to play Mr Super Hero

Him; Ok. How about you sleep, and ill only leave once you're asleep

I nod and pretend to sleep. I know I won't be able to sleep, not when he's out there and I don't know what's going on.

57

Nathi

I know woman go through hell during pregnancy. I've heard the stories, but not once. And I mean once did I ever think that I would see Tshidi crying for the sake of crying.

I get to HQ and see the rest of the crew's cars parked in the basement. That alone makes me uneasy

I get to my office and find the guys being briefed

Me; sorry im late. Tshidi is going through the crying for no reason stage Ghost; I hate those moments.

Me; whats up? Why we all here?

Mthunzi; its bad

Axe. Really bad

Me; stop speaking in riddles and tell
me what the hell is going on Luzoko; Its
Tshidi

I feel chills go
down my spine
Me; what about

her
Ghost; Here. See for yourself
He gives me a file, and read through the test results.
I look up at Hlokes and he nods Me; this cant be right
Hlokes; I checked and
double checked Me;

Fuck
Luzuko; Im guessing you didn't know
Me; of course not. Do you think I would've married Tshidi
knowing she was Thandiwe's sister? I'm not
stupid

Ghost; You need to speak to Tshidi's parents. We need to know
more about this Thandiwe of yours.

Me; no. I need to speak to my wife about this first.

Ghost; you want to speak to Tshidi about this? Are you crazy?

Me; Yes. If she finds out before I tell her hell is going to freeze
over.

Hlokes; I honestly don't wish to be you right now.

Nails walks in and
looks at me. Me;
what is it now

Him; your
sister Me;
what about
her Him;

She's
outside

Me; what? Isn't she supposed to be in London?

Him; he security team lost her. And now she is standing out here

I take a second and breath. I don't know why Thoko is here, and quite frankly after the news I just heard, im not sure it's the right time

Me; I need you guys to keep this under wraps. I need to figure it out. No discussing it with your wives, we all know they can't keep secrets form one another

I leave them and go to reception to

deal with problem no 2. Me; Thoko?

She jumps up and gives me that big smile that I can't resist. She jumps up to hug me and I flinch

Me; careful

Her; what? What's wrong?

Me; nothing. What are

you doing here? Her;

that's no way to speak to

your sister Me; aren't

you supposed to be in

school?

She looks down and pouts

Me; Thoko... What have
you done now? Her;
nothing. I just missed
home

Me; I'm not stupid.

Her; fine. I'll go home to

mom and dad then She

tries to walk away but I

hold her wrist Me; come

I put her in the car and drive home

Her; so you're not mad at me

Me; how can I be mad at you when I don't know what you've
done

Her; why do I always have to be

the one in the wrong Me; (sigh)

how is school??

Her; fine

Me; fine? Thoko I pay in pounds for you to be able to go to the
best university money can offer, and all you can say about it is
its fine

She sighs and just looks out the window.

Which only irritates me even more. We get

home, and find Tshidi in the Kitchen cooking

Me; hey baby

She turns around and smiles, but kind of

frowns when she sees Thoko Her; hey
Me; this is Thoko. My sister. She's staying with us for a while

She widens her

eyes and smiles

Her; Hi Thoko

Me; Thoko this is my wife. Matshidiso

Thoko; Hi. Im sorry I couldn't make it to the wedding

Tshidi; its fine. Why don't you sit down and ill dish up for you
guys

Me; I'll show you to your room Thoko

I wink at Tshidi, and take Thoko to her room, its only then I
notice that Thoko didn't come with luggage

Me; where are your bags?

Her; I didn't bring any

Me; I won't bother asking.

Her; i thought you lived in Hyde

Park. Why are we here Me; long
story.

I leave her in her room, and go to the Kitchen. I know I need to
speak to Tshidi and tell her what I know,
but I don't think this is the right time.

Me; smells good

Her; It's your favourite

Me; so does that mean you're for dinner?

Her; nice try. I made steamed
bread and beef stew Me; you
are the best

Her; and don't you forget it

I move in closer and put my
arms around her waist Me; I

miss you

Her; I miss you too

Me; I'm sorry about Thoko.

She just showed up Her; Its

fine. She's your sister

Me; how you feeling?

Her; Im actually feeling

better. Im just horny I

swear I nearly faint when

she said that.

Me; maybe it's time I take care of that

I lean in and she stands on her tiptoes as I kiss her. She wraps
her arms around my neck and I lift her up and put her on the
counter. She spreads her legs and I stand in-between them.

For a second I forget that my sister is in the house, until I hear
her footsteps coming towards us.

I gently pull back and stare

into Tshidi's eyes Me;

thank you

Her; for what

Me; for giving me another chance

Her; don't screw it up

Me; I wont. I promise

Me: good, now move so I can dish up for you

Thoko: (clears throat) I hope I'm

not interrupting anything Tshidi: no

not at all. I was just about to dish

up

Thoko: do you need help

Tshidi: I'm good. You sit. I'm sure you must be tired from your flight

She nods and goes to sit down. I look at her and wonder what it is that bought her here. Thoko has always been the good child. Yes she's spoilt, but she has never given us any trouble, I just wonder if she was really home sick.

Tshidi dishes up and

sits to join us Her:

baby will you say

Grace

Me: sure

I say Grace and we dig in. As always Tshidi has outdone herself. I finish dinner and have a second helping. I look over and notice that Thoko hasn't touched her food

Me: Thoko. Why

aren't you eating

She
looks up at Tshidi

Thoko: I'm sorry Tshidi. I'm just
not that hungry

Tshidi: it's fine.
Would you like something else
instead

Thoko: no thank you.
Actually I'd like to go to bed

Me:
I'll get you a pair of PJ's

They both stand up and walk to the bedroom. I don't know
what it is with the woman in my life but they all have one thing
in common. The art of keeping me guessing.

Tshidi

I walk with Thoko and I can't help but notice that she seems very
down... I know she might just be tired,
but a part of me is telling me that there is more to the story than
meets the eye.

Me; here

we go

Her;

Thank

you

Me; there's spare towels and everything you
might need in your bathroom

Her; Thanks

Tshidi.... and I'm sorry for just rocking up. I

should've called

Me; nonsense, you're family
Her; do you think my brothers angry?

Me; no. I think he's just worried about you

Her; (sigh)

She walks out and for some reason I feel bad for her.

Nathi washes the dishes and tidies up, while I take a shower

Him; you didn't

wait for me Me;

you didn't say

that I must

Him; its fine. I need to

get going anyway ME;

going? Going where

Him; HQ.

I know Nathi has to work. I know he needs to find this dreadful woman, but at the same time he is neglecting me.

I get into bed and cover my head with the duvet. There's no use arguing about it.

Him; Tshidi

Me; go Nathi. Just go

Him; can you just talk to me please

Me; nathi. You said you're going. So go

Him; Tshidi. I'm just trying to find out what's happening. Can you just let me do that?

Me;

(silent)

Him;

Tshidi

He pulls the duvet off me and I feel my anger rising.

Him; can you just stop with the moods Tshidi.

What do you want me to do? Me; voetsek

Nathi. Ok Voetsek

Ok, I know I shouldn't have done that. I didn't mean it, and by the look in his eyes he looks pissed, but I don't back down.

Him; Makhumalo is that how you speak to me now?

I look down, I don't know what to say. I know I should apologize but my pride I the way.

He takes his keys and storms out. I let out a sigh and

wonder how the hell I am going to fix this. 58

Ok, so I need to put my pride aside and call him. I've tried sleeping but sleep isn't exactly cooperating.

Instead I've been tossing and turning for hours.

I try him but he doesn't answer. I have

no choice but to call Nails Him: mam

Me: Nails. Hi. It's Tshidi. Can I speak to Nathi

Him: sorry mam, he's I bit busy right now. He says he will call you back

Me; Nails. I know he is avoiding me. Put him on

the line, I need to talk to him. I hear Nails and

Nathi go back and forth but eventually he

answers

Him: Tshidi

Me: baby... I'm sorry...

please... please come home

Him: I'm busy

Me: baby... I shouldn't have done what I did. It was wrong. I know. I just don't know what's wrong with me. I feel like I'm not in control of my emotions. I feel like I'm a complete mess. I'm sorry. Please... please come home

Him:

silence

Me:

Nathi?

Him: I'll be there in 30mins

He drops the call, and I feel a glimmer of hope. I change from my boring PJ's into a negligee.

An hour later I hear him driving in. I sit on the bed, and wait for him to come in. I feel him behind me and my stomach drops. I just know he's still pissed.

Me: Khumalo

I stand up and turn around to face him. He doesn't respond. The look in his eyes tells me he is still pissed as hell.

I'm about to put my hands around his

neck, when he steps back. Him: sit

down

I sit down and look down. I hate it when he's like this. I can't even look at him

Him: we're discussing this once. After this you take a decision on whether you want to stay or leave. I look up at him and my heart starts beating faster

Him: you are a wife. My wife. I am your husband. You will never disrespect me like you did tonight. I won't have it. If you want to act like a child, then you leave my house. Now. I won't have a wife that behaves like some ghetto girl with no manners.

I look down. I can't bear to look at him, not when He is cutting me this deep

Him: Tshidi. You said you will stand by me. You said that we are in this together, and now all of a sudden you are telling me. Me Tshidi to voetsek. Since when do you talk to me like that? Where is my place in this marriage Tshidi? Because right now I feel like you want to wear the pants. You think you can swear at me, because you're pregnant and I'll what? Just sit and accept it?

Tjo. Ok. I've seen Nathi angry before, but this. This is nothing like the man that was here earlier. He isn't shouting. His voice is low and commanding. He's asking me questions I don't know how to answer

Me: Khumalo. Mtungwa. My love, I'm sorry. I honestly don't know what came over me. I'm sorry. Him: this was the first and the last. Are we clear?

I nod.

I stand up and move closer to him. I know he probably doesn't want me to touch him. I shouldn't be anyway, because he might just go all Axe on me, but his little talking to has just made me want to be in his arms

He takes a step back, but I keep moving closer. I put my arms around him and take in his scent. At least he doesn't push me away. At first he is tense, but after a while he relaxes and kisses the top of my head.

I look up at him and he kisses me on the neck. I lift my arms and hold him around his neck. Me: up

He lifts me up and I wrap my legs around his waist and walks to the bed Me: down

He gently puts me down and stares into my eyes. His eyes have softened. Gone is axe, and finally I have my gentle Nathi back.

Him: I've missed you. I thought I had lost you. I thought I'd never hold you in my arms again. Me: I'm here.

He smiles, and is ontop of me in seconds. We make love for the first time in months, and as always he doesn't dissapoint. He is slow and gentle. Just like the very first time we became one.

I go to bed feeling like a different woman. I may have been scolded but in the end I was forgiven. That's all that matters in the end isn't it.

I wake up the following morning with the sound of a woman vomiting violently. I think I'm dreaming but I realise that it has to be Thoko.

Nathi isn't in bed.

There's a note from him stating that he will be in parliament for the day. I put on a gown and rush to the room next door

I find Thoko on her knees trying to stop herself from vomiting.

Me: Thoko. What's wrong? What did you eat? I'll get you some water.

I run to the kitchen and grab a bottle and give it to her. She sits on the floor and drinks it I take a moment to let her take a breath

Her: I'm sorry. I didn't mean to wake you. It's just I can't control it first thing in the morning
Me: are you saying that this happens every morning.

She opens her eyes wide. She realizes she just let something slip. Then it dawns on me.
Me: you're pregnant

She looks down

embarrassed
Me:

how far along are

you? She shrugs

her shoulders

Me: have you

seen a doctor She

shakes her head

Me: does your brother know?

She gives me the are you stupid look

Me: you have to tell him. He'll

want to hear it from you Her: I

can't. If I tell, him he'll go ape shit

on me

Me: yes. He will, but you Can't exactly keep this from him. If you do and he finds out he will be even angrier

She stands up and paces the room

Her: I can't tell him. Not now. I need time. I need to figure out what I'm going to do. Please. Tshidi. Don't say anything. Not till I have decided

Me: Thoko. You can't ask me to keep a secret like this from

him. If he finds out I knew he would go crazy Her: please Tshidi.

Just let me tell him when I'm ready.

Gosh I don't know how the hell I got here again. How do I keep another secret from him when the last one I kept almost tore

us apart? At the same time I don't want to upset Thoko.

Me: where's
the father She
looks down

Her: it's another agent

I look at her like
she's crazy Me:

he's in the ops?

Her: yes. Yes friends with my brother. He's also based in London
Stand and start to pace with her. This isn't good. Not one bit.

Nathi I'd going to kill the both of them Me: what did he say
when you told him you were pregnant?

Her: he totally freaked out. He told me to have an abortion. I left
him and came back home

Me: damn

Her: what am I going to do Tshidi? How am I going to get Bhuti
to understand? He's going to fire him. Or worse, he'll probably
kill us

Me: Thoko, you need to tell him tonight. If you wait you risk
him finding out on his own. I don't think that is exactly a good
idea

Her: will you be there. Promise me you

won't leave me all e with him? Me: Thoko

Her: please sis Tshidi. Everyone says you are his soft spot. Maybe
if you're there he won't be to mad

I nod. I know she might think me being there will help, but i
have my doubts. I know for a fact that when Nathi finds out he

will go ballistic.

Me: ok. But first we need to get you to a doctor. We need to make sure the baby is ok. And maybe we can get you something for the nausea

Her: thank you

Me: I'm going to freshen up. Meet me downstairs so we can go for breakfast with the girls

She nods, and I leave and go take a shower. I let the water run over me and pray today goes better than what I think it will.

Thoko and I walk to Busi's house. I know Nathi said we should use a golf cart but honestly it's just 3km from my house. Plus a nice morning walk is good for the baby.

For the first time ever I am early. I

find Busi still cooking. The smell of pork almost makes me puke.

I introduce Thoko to Busi, and took my scarf and tie it over my nose. Busi smiles as Thoko helps her with the cooking.

Her; I hate pregnancy for
that very reason Me: I
can't believe I'm already
16 weeks

Thoko looks at me surprised and i semi smile. Boni and
Fifi arrive just as the food is ready Boni: look who's finally
decided to be early

Me: I try

Fifi: I heard Nathi tell Siya that you've
been driving him crazy. I stop eating

and look at her

Dourine: yah, Luzuko was laughing saying he phoned them
asking them how to stop you from crying. Poor thing. He
thought he was wrong

I smile as I remember how he
held me when I cried Me: it's
these hormones. They make
me maal

Busi: wait till you bet bigger. You'll be so horny

you'll jump him every chance you get I look up at

them embarrassed. How can they talk like this in

front of Thoko

Boni: what? It's not

like she's a virgin

Thoko bursts out

laughing

Me: can we meet and talk about

something other than men and sex They

all keep quite. I also try to come up with

a topic but dololo

We burst out laughing

Boni: since it's obvious we can't talk about anything else. I

might as well show you guys my latest toy She opens up her

hand bag and pulls out a small vibrator

Fifi: what is

that? Boni:

it's a clit

sucker

I gasp and nearly

choke on my grapes

Dourine: how does it

work?

Boni: why don't you go buy one and find out? Luzuko will thank you later

I honestly don't know why she shocks me anymore.

Fifi: I tried that cinnamilk combination
and well, you were right Boni: of
course I was.

Me: Cinnamilk?

Dourine: yes. You mix cinnamon and worm milk and drink

it an hour before Nathi comes home. I look up and see

Thoko smiling

Me; nna, I'm lactose intolerant. One glass of milk equals a night
of shit fest

They all laugh as I stand to help Thoko clear the table.

Thoko and I leave the girls once I get a message from Nathi telling Me he's on his way home. I know Thoko is worried but I try reassure her that it will be ok.

I ask Nathi to get take aways on his way home, because I'm not in the mood to cook.

Nathi walks in with the biggest grin on his face. Tools places the food on the table and leaves Me: and that smile?

Him: things are looking good. We've finalized the ministers for the missing cabins. Things are finally looking up

Me: I'm glad.

Him: where's Thoko?

Me: she's taking a nap. But ill, go wake her up so she can eat Him: you do that. I'll go take a shower

He goes to our room, as I lay out the take aways on the table.

Thoko sits across from Nathi and me and Lord does she look nervous.

I keep giving her a look but she doesn't say anything. Nathi on the other hand is busy going on and on about cabinet ministers and some funding that has come through from the USA.

I look at him and take in his smile. I know that a few minutes from now it will be gone. Me: Baby

Him: yes love

Me: Thoko has something to tell you

He looks at Thoko and his smile fades when he sees her start to cry. Him:

Thoko? What is it?

Her: (silence)

He looks at me and I take

his hand in mine Me; just

let her talk

Him:

Thoko

Her:

Bhuti

Him: what is it? Did you fail

schools or something? Her: no

Him: then?

Her: I'm I..... I'm pregnant

I feel Nathis fists clench.

Him: pregnant? How the hell did

you get pregnant? Her: Bhuti, it

wasn't planned. It just happened.

I'm sorry

Him: sorry? What is sorry going to do for me? Huh? I pay for you to study and you go and have unprotected sex with some idiot.

He stands up and nearly knocks the table over. He walks towards her and I jump up and stand in his way Me Nathi..
Calm down. She's already freaked out. You're making things worse

Him; Tshidi move

Me: Khumalo. Please...

Just let her explain He

gently pushes me out the

way

HIM: who did this to you Thoko? Who

Her: Bhuti, please. It was a mistake. I know you told me to stay away from him but, he was the only person I knew in London. And when Mam Matha died I was there to comfort him

I see Nathi lose it. He grabs her hand and pulls her towards the door

Him out. I want you out. How the hell could you sleep with

Sabelo? He one of my fucking agents. I know I shouldn't get

involved but Nathi honestly needs to calm down.

I stand in front of him and despite how angry he is he just looks at me

Me:

enough

hHim:

Tshidi

Me: no. Khumalo. It's enough

I look at Thoko who is life

really shaking with fear Me:

Thoko go to bed.

She jumps up and literally runs to her room

I pour Nathi a glass of scotch and

he drinks it in one gulp Him: a

baby Tshidi? She brings me a

fucking baby?

Me: she's made a mistake baby. All, of us make mistakes

Him: Tshidi he is one of my agents. He is my friend. She is 21 years old. How could he take advantage of my sister like that?

Me: Baby. Calm down.

She is scared Nathi. She doesn't know what to do. She needs you. Don't push her away.

He takes the bottle of scotch from me

and drinks from the bottle. him: I'm

going to kill him Tshidi. I swear. I am

going to kill him

Me: ok baby. But for now can we just go to bed.

He takes another gulp from the bottle, I know now that there is nothing I can do or say to make him less

angry. I don't even think that sex would help. So I just sit next to him and let him vent. Hopefully by

morning he would've accepted the fact that there is nothing to

be done about Thoko's pregnancy.

59

(Crop Top)

Nathi to calm down is something I honestly need to master. His temper is just on another level. He spent most of last night Dr I king and rambling on. I eventually fell asleep with my head on his lap, as he kept on drinking.

I do t remember even coming to bed. All i know is I'm awake and he's not here.

I get up and I find and sms from him telling me we''re moving back to the house today. I try phoning him but he's unavailable. I hope he doesn't do anything stupid.

I wake Thoko and tell her to get ready since we were leaving. I wanted to get out of herw asap. I miss my house, call me a snob but i had be come accustomed to the life that Nathi had given me.

Tools drives Thoko and i back to my house. The first thing I do is show Thoko the guest room. I would've offered her the guest house, but i don'don't think Nathi would like it.

I send him an sms telling him we're back home. He responds and tells me to make sure I listen to my security.

I decide to call him because I still haven't taken Thoko to the doctor. Him:

Makhumalo

Me: babakhe, you just left this morning and didn't wake me

Him: sorry babe. You looked so peaceful, I

didn't want to disturb you Me: where you

working from today?

Him: from Pretoria

Me: ok. Ahmm I need to take Thoko to see a doctor. Hlokes is in CT and he'll only be back at the end of the week

Him; she'll have to wait

Me: babakhe, she needs to go on prenatal vitamins, and we have to make sure the baby is ok. Him: mxm, yaz

Thoko is going to be pain in my damn neck

Me: Baby. That's your little niece or nephew that she's carrying. Do t you want us to make sure he or she is ok

Him: Tshidi, that's not my anything. She is carrying the seed of a traitor. I could care less Me: you do t mean that

Him: take her to see a doctor. But make sure your security team is there.

Me: ok, but baby can we not do the whole convoy thing? It's super embarrassing to stop traffic all because I'm in the car and our cars need to go first

Him; Tshidi the details of your security are the for a reason. I won't compromise on that. The only reason you guys are back in JHB is because we have extra security from Cuba

Me: ok. I was just asking

Him: the sooner you get used to who we are the better.

I shrug as he finishes our conversation on a coldish note. I know his coldness isn't meant for me, but None the less I feel it.

I go back downstairs and make a sandwich for myself and Thoko.

Her : what are you making

Me: Just a sandwich. Then we go to the doctor. I've booked an appointment. Her: Th a is sis Tshidi.

Me: how you feeling? I know things didn't go well last night

Her: I'm ok I guess. I'm just grateful you were there. If you weren't he would've probably kicked me out Me: he'll come around. He's just a bit disappointed because he wanted you to finish with varsity first. Her: I know. I just wish I had never met Sabelo. I was so stupid. I should've never agreed to date him

Him: the heart doesn't chose who it falls in love with Thoko.

Things just happen

Her: you know he hasn't phoned me once since I walked out when he told me to abort the baby Me: maybe he's just shocked. I'm sure once he's calmed down he'll come around

Her: Sis Tshidi, how do you always see the good in people? Me: the older you get the more you'll do the same.

Her: I don't know. Maybe I should just abort the baby. I could go back to school and still make Bhuti proud.

Me: Thoko. I don't believe that's a good idea. A child is a gift from God. I k ow right now it's difficult, but I'm here I'll help you. You could always finish you degree here, and our kids could grow up to be the best of friends

Her: you make it sound so easy

Me: come, let's go. Once you've seen the

baby you will change your mind. I grab my purse and we head to Dr Matlala's offices.

We first make sure that in fact she is pregnant, and well yes. She is 10 weeks already, which is only 4 weeks before me. The doctor gives her meds and we leave with her feeling so much better than when we arrived. After the doctors appointment, I decide to take her Her shopping. She's been using some of my clothes, not that I mind but I'm pretty sure she wants her own.

We shop a bit and I even get a few things for myself.

Her: how do you deal with all of these people taking pictures of you? Like you can hardly walk Into a shop without people falling over backwards to help you

Me: I'm still getting used to it. But I guess with time i won't even notice
Her: can we go get something to eat? I'm hungry again

Me: I swear you just read my mind

We both giggle as we hunt down a quite restaurant. Luckily it's still early for the lunch crowd, so we settle for the steakhouse.

We are given a secluded table in the very back of the restaurant. I thank the manager, as Thoko and i are served.

I actually enjoy having Thoko around. I know the circumstances of her arrival weren't great, but the more I talk to her the more I see so much of Nathi in her. She tells me of so many funny stories about how it's like growing up with 2 crazy older brothers. She tells me about how she once caught Nathi with a girl in his room, apparently she was able to make money from him in exchange for her silence.

On a normal day I would feel a bit insecure, but the way she tells the story makes me laugh more than it does upset me.

By the time we leave we are both exhausted. We get home and we both throw ourselves on a couch in the lounge

Her: I was thinking I should cook something for Bhuti tonight. Hopefully that will be enough for him to forgive me

Me: that's a good idea. Just make sure there's tons of meat

Her: I can't believe my baby is so tiny. I wish Sabelo was here to see the baby. Maybe he would feel differently

Me: give him time. You'll see.

Her: I hope so. I'm just glad you were there last night. If

you weren't I would've been kicked out

Me: Thoko, your brother loves you. He may be upset, but it doesn't mean

he doesn't love you. Her: yah, I know that, but I'm happy

that he found you. You're a complete opposite of his ex

I sit up and look at her

Me: how so?

Him: well, it's just that my brother was always blinded by her. He saw no wrong, but me, I knew better. She had a thing for money. She always wanted fancy things, and well, as you can tell Bhuti isn't the extravagant type. He finally put his foot down when she wanted a new house. She had decided that the house that he build for her from scratch wasn't good enough anymore, but he flat out refused. Then a week later she fakes her death. Mxm

Me: that's some hectic shit

Her: you have no idea. I'm just glad she's out our lives

I just sit and fake smile. I don't add or deduct anything from the conversation. You never know with inlaws. Today they're with you, tomorrow their throwing you in the deep end.

I'm woken up by a knock on the door. I didn't even realise that I had fallen asleep on the couch. I look up and see Thoko is also sleeping.

The knock goes off again and come to my senses and go open for whoever is messing with my nap. I open the door and find a man sweating and breathing like he has run a million miles.

I look up and see Tools standing behind him.

Me; and then?

Him; Mam. I'm sorry. I know I should've called. But she just left. I was an idiot. I should've thought this through

Me; I'm guessing you're Sabelo

He nods, and already I know that his being here is going to be a problem. If Nathi arrives now, all hell is going to break loose.

60

I've been staring at this thing in front of me trying to figure out why he thinks it's ok that he is here? This man knows Nathi. He knows Nathi will kill, him if he finds him here.

Me: Sabelo. You need to go. Nathi is going to arrive here any minute, and we both know what that will happen should he find you here.

Him: please. I just need to talk to Thoko. It was a mistake. I didn't mean it

Me: i hear you, but right now is not the time. Let me talk to Nathi first. Maybe we can come to a conclusion.

I think he is going to go but he doesn't. Instead he stares at me.

I see Nathi's car drive in and already I know shit is about to hit the fan.

I close the door and go wake Thoko up. This is her mess and she needs to fix it. Asap

Me: Thoko.
Wake up

Her: mhmm

Me: your boyfriend is here, and Nathi just drove in

I see her jump off the couch and run to the door. I follow and hear what sounds like commotion.

Nathi: so you think you can disrespect me in my own house? Huh? It's wasn't enough that you fucked my sister, now you come to my house? My house?

Poor Sabelo tries to explain but Nathi is having none of it. The only reason Nathi hasn't killed him is because there is a small water fountain between them.

Me: Nathi.

Him: both of you inside. Now

Thoko and i both don't move. Instead I walk towards him. I know I shouldn't, but i do anyway. I stand right in front of him as I see Sabelo running to the gate

Me: it's enough.

He wipes the sweat from his

forehead with his Palm. Him:

how could he Tshidi? My

house? Nxa,

He walks towards the door and I see Thoko race inside. He just shakes his head and walks to the bar and pours himself a glass of whiskey. Neat

I sigh because in all , honesty, I'm too drained for this. I want one, just one peaceful night without us fighting. Is that too much to ask?

I take his laptop bag to the office, then go to the bar and sit next to him. He doesn't look up, he just pours another glass and knocks it back.

Me: I'm tired Nathi. Like really really tired

Him: Tshidi. Not now

Me: no. You listen and listen carefully.

I see his eyes shoot up. I know he's a angry but so am I

Me: don't look at me like that. I won't have you terrorizing Thoko. I get you're upset but there's nothing to be done. She's pregnant. Get over it. I want peace in this house. I want to enjoy my pregnancy without you trying to kill someone.

I see a small smile

Him; youre bossy

Me: I'm serious Nathi. You need to make things right with Thoko. Stop being such a bully. Plus it's not sexy

His smile grows

Him: so you find me sexy?

Me; no. Not when
you're being an ass

Him: don't lie. You
know you want this.

Me: well you're not getting any of this. Not till
you've made things right with Thoko. Him: so
you're manipulating me into this

Me: yes. I am and that's that

Him: I like it when you challenge me, but we both know I'm
going to get what I want

He winks at me and I know it's my cue to run, because he had
that stupid grin on his face again. It's hard to believe a minute
ago he was ready to kill someone. Now all of a sudden he is all
playful.

I try running but he catches me in no time. I'm giggling and
laughing as he tickles me all over. He only stops when he sees
tears coming down my cheeks from laughing

Him: I'm hungry

Me: Thoko was supposed to cook but we both fell
asleep. I'll have to order takeaways Him: takeaways
two days in a row? Ha a baby. I need real food.

I look at him and frown. Gone is playful Nathi. Instead he
is replaced by the shaka Zulu Nathi. Me: Nathi I don't
feel like cooking.

He leaves me at the bar and goes to Thokos room.

I see her walk out and head to kitchen. I sigh because i know he told her to go cook. I was actually hoping we would just go get take out.

I see him follow her to the kitchen. I walk upstairs to my room and give them space. Hopefully they will talk and sort things out.

Im woken up by Nathi getting into bed. I swear this pregnancy is going to be the death of me. I'm forever asleep

He moves closer and takes me into his arms. Me: did you guys talk?

Him:

mhmmmm

mm. Me:

and?

Him: shhhhh sleep

I don't know why I'm turning into this obedient wife, but i feel my eyes get heavy again, and i drift off to sleep.

Its seldom that I get to wake up in Nathis arms. I'm surprised he isn't working already. I know it's Saturday but usually for him its just another day.

I go to the bathroom to freshen up, then come, back to bed.

Since I can't fall asleep again, I put on the tv and watch some boring tv. Him: you're up early

Me: I was hoping we could to out for the day. I'm tired of being cooped up in the house Him: it's not exactly a good idea

Me: and why not

Him: we've got a lead on Thandiwe. Its not ideal to be out. I'd prefer for you to be here Me: hm

Him: the team leaves for Brazil

tomorrow. I'm going with them I look

at Nathi. He can't be serious

Me: Nkosinathi. U

can't be serious Him:

I wanted to tell you

lastnight,

Me: I can't beleive you're doing this. Nathi I'm pregnant. I

can't have you leaving me here by myself Him: Tshidi, I need to find her. Until I know why she did what she did, we won't be able to move on

I shake my head and try getting out the

bed, but he pulls me closer Him: we said

no walking away

Me: that was before you decided to abandon me

Him: Tshidi. Try understanding. If we don't track Thandiwe down. We will live in constant fear. I won't have peace of mind. I will always wonder.

There is honestly no use arguing. Nathi had made up his mind, and well quite frankly nothing i do would change that

Me: how long will
you be gone? Him:

I'm not sure. A
month maybe

Me: a month? Nathi no. You're not leaving me here alone for a
month. Never

I see his face get hard. I know he's frustrated, but I don't care.
He can't be leaving me and thinking its ok

Him: I'm not going to discuss this with you further. I know it's
not ideal, but it's what I have to do. So please just stop with
the whining

I look up at him shocked. Did he just honestly tell me to stop
whining?

I take the remote and put the tv louder, non use saying anything
further. He had made up his mind.

I spend most of my day sulking. I know it's silly but this is my
man we're talking about, and i won't get to speak or see him for
a month. How does he think that is ok.

He got tired of my sulking and went to Siya's house. Thoko
has locked herself in her room, while I've been sitting here
crying and watching titanic.

Nathi walks in just as rose realizes that Jack froze to death for
her. I cry louder, and he just stands there not knowing what to
do.

He takes the remote from me and switches off the movie. I
stop crying and give him a death stare Him: baby you

shouldn't be watching that if it makes you so emotional

Me: first I'm whining, now I'm emotional? If you're so unhappy why don't you leave ye? Him: Tshidi.

Me; No Nathi. You are just like Jack. You want to die and leave me all alone. I hate you for that I can't stop the tears from streaming down my cheeks. I wipe them but they keep coming.

I see Nathi run his Han over forehead.

He sits next to me and takes me into his arms as I cry some more. I don't know if I'm crying because of him or Jack. But it feels good to let out some of the pain.

When I finally stop crying I look up at him and he has a smile on his face Me: I'm

hungry

He laughs and looks at

me relieved Him: and

what would you like to

eat? Me: beanutbutter

and apples

Him; huh

Me: cut the Apple and bring the

tub of peanutbutter Him: Tshidi.

Are you sure

I

nod.

Him:

ok.

He goes down stairs and comes back with my snack

I open the peanut butter and dip my apples in it and eat. The look on Nath's face tells me I'm crazy, but to me this tastes amazing

Him:

better?

Me:

mhmm

I see him let out a sigh of relief

Me: what time do you

leave tomorrow? Him:

8pm

Me: (sniff) (sniff)

Him: ha a MaKhumalo. Not again. Please

Me: but baby, who's going to cuddle me? And how am I going to be ok, when you're all the way across the world

Him: ok let's
make a deal?

Me: mhmm

Him: I'll try calling

you everyday. Me:

mxm

I spend the rest of my day in his arms. He managed to calm me down and now all I care about is spending as much time with him possible. I just hope that despite not knowing what awaits him in Brazil, he'll be home in no time and we will be able to move on with our lives

I hear voices downstairs. Damn it I

must've dozed off again. I hear

Nathis voice first.

Him: you must have a death wish. Didn't I tell , you to stay away from my sister? Sabelo: boss, I messed up I know that. But I'm trying to make things right

Him: does she know that you are married?

Sabelo: it's complicated boss, I didn't think I'd ever fall for Thoko. We just hung out because I was in London while Carmen is in Mozambique. I didn't once think it would lead me falling in love with Thoko. Him: Sabelo. I don't care what happened. All I know is that it's done. I want you as far away from my sister as possible.

Sabelo: Axe, dude, please. She's carrying my child.

I hear a vase fall and i run downstairs. I find Sabelo pinned against the wall. Nathi has him by the throat and is about to punch him

Me: Nathi.... stop....

I see the first punch and

Sabelo fall to the ground. Me:

Nathi... no

Sabelo tries getting up but Nathi kicks him down.

Him: stay the fuck away

from my sister. Sabelo:

boss

Him: if you value you're job you'll leave now. And never look back. Your mission in Iraq starts on Monday. You had better be on that plane, or else hell will break lose.

Sabelo struggles to get up. Tools helps him and they leave.

I stand there frozen. Is this really the man I fell in love with?

He looks at me with a hard face but his eyes deceive him. I know he regrets what he's just done, i just hope that this won't put a strain on his relationship with Thoko. The last thing we need is for this family to be decided.

61

Because I'm in no mood to fight with him for what he's just done. I decide to let him be i go back to our room and try getting some more sleep.

I'm surprised when I see him walking in behind me. Him::I'm

sorry you had to see that

Me: how's

your fist?

Him: fine

Me: mhmm

I get into bed and put
the duvet over me. Him: I
was hoping we could talk

Me: Nathi it's almost midnight, what could
we possibly need to talk about Him: I miss
you. I miss us. I miss us before this whole
nightmare started

I lift my head from under the duvet and see that he is serious. I
know exactly what he means. Before all of this craziness we
were good. But at the same time you can't stop life from
happening

Me: come

I open the duvet and he comes and lays his head on my my lap

Me: Nathi. Life doesn't always listen to what we want.
Things won't go according to how we plan. There's nothing
we can do about it.

Him: Tshidi I know that, but i just feel defeated. Like everything
around me is such a mess. Thoko is pregnant with my friends
baby. who also happens to be married. Thandiwe is somewhere
in Brazil doing God knows what. You are pregnant and forever
crying. And i just don't know what to do

I look down at him and see that he really is lost. I've never seen
him this vulnerable.

Me: Khumalo, no matter how hard you try, you can't control everything. Yes Thoko is pregnant. There's nothing you can do about it. So let it go. As for your wife or ex or whatever she is, you'd better find her and make her pay for what she's done to you. And well when it comes to me there's nothing to be done about my emotions. You did this to me.

I see a faint smile and i know he's coming back

Him; I didn't hear you complaining, when we were making that baby

Me: that's because I was under your spell, and

you know I can never resist you His smile

reaches his ears and i know he's back.

Him: maybe I need to remind you of

why you can't resist me. He sits up

and has me under him in seconds.

Me: I'm Still fully dressed you know

Him; I'm aware of that madam. But we both know nothing is going to stop Me from getting what I want

I giggle as I feel his hand go up my pyjamas. one swift move he

takes them off and I'm laying there naked Him;mhmmm no

panties. I'm glad you listen

His lips are in between my legs before I can even catch my breath. His tounge does its magic and in no time I'm holding

onto the sheets.

He comes up and his lips are on mine. Tasting my juices from his very lips drives me insane. I'm on top of him and pushing him inside.

He lets out a groan when I start to move. His hands are on my butt and my head on his neck. I start moving faster and the tighter he holds me. In no time we are both collapsing calling out one another's name.

I stay in his arms and him still inside me. I don't want to move. I want this feeling to last forever. Yes. I'm crying again, but this time it's different.

Him: Tshidi... what is it

Me; what if something happens to you again? What if she tries to kill you. Nathi I can't lose you. Not again.

Him: shhh nothing is going to happen to me I promise.

Me: you have to come back to us Nathi. You have to promise me you'll come back Him; In 4 weeks time I'll be back and we'll be able to move on with our lives. I promise.

I feel him get hard again. I haven't moved. He's still inside me.

His lips are on my neck in seconds. This time though it's different. He is gentle. His hands move around my back, while I move back and forth slowly. He has my breast in his hand while he caresses my ear with his tongue. My tears fall on his back as I cum, with his name in my mouth. He follows and stares into my glossy eyes.

Him: nothing and no one would ever keep me from you.

He wipes a tear from my eyes and lays back. I lay on

his chest, and drift off to sleep. Him: Tshidi, wake up

I open my eyes and close them

when I see the light on Him:

come on baby. Wake up. We

need to go

I look at my phone and see that's its 4:00am

Me: where the hell

are we going Him:

you'll see

He grabs the duvet and throws it on the floor. He pulls me out of bed and pulls me towards the shower.

He climbs in with me and switches on the water. He cleans himself up and i just stand there admiring his body.

Him: you need to stop

staring at me. I smile

and hug his soapy

back

Him: I'm going to miss you

Me; not as much as I'm

going to miss you. I let go

and start cleaning myself

up.

We get out the shower and he passes me my lotion

Me: where are we going?

Him; you'll see when

we get there Me:

what should I wear

Him: jeans and sneakers

I go to the closet and pull out a pair of ripped jeans

and opt for my white Nike sneakers. It's a bit chilly

outside, so I put on a sports jacket as well.

Him:

ready?

Me:

yep

I grab my phone and we leave for the unknown

I see us take the mulderstrift offramp and i wonder where the hell we're going. I don't bother asking because I've been asking since I got in the car and he still hasn't said anything

Him: we're here

I look out and all is we

is still darkness Me:

and where is here?

Him: come. You'll see
We walk out and only
then does it sink in. Him:
you game?
Me: I'd be stupid not to be.

We walk closer to where I see about 5
men standing waiting for us. We're given
a bit of training before we're allowed in
the balloon.

My heart jumps into my throat when the hot air balloon first
leaves the ground, but once we're up in the air, I am fascinated
by the sunrise

Nathi hugs me from behind, as we both admire the beauty of
God's creation.

I feel his lips next to my ear. He breathes and i

feel goosebumps down my back Him: was it

worth waking up that early?

I nod and feel him tighten his arms around me.

Him: sunsets happen every morning. Sometimes it's difficult
because of the rain, but no matter how cloudy it get the sun
always finds its way into the sky. Tshidi, it doesn't matter
how long I'm gone, or where I am. You are my home. My
heart. I will always. Always come home to you.

I turn around and wrap my

arms around his neck. Me: I'll

be here waiting for you.

He hugs me and for the first time since he told me he

was leaving, I feel my heart at ease. After the hot air

balloon ride. We go to a near by lodge and have

breakfast near the river.

Nathi seems to have planned everything to the tee. It

reminds me of how romantic he was when we started dating.

Who knew that 13 months later we would be married and expecting.

Me: thank you for this. I enjoyed myself

Him: I wanted to see you smile.

You've cried so much lately Me:

what time do you need to be at HQ

Him: 6pm, I need Time make sure

everything is ready before I leave. Me:

are any of the guys going with you

Him: yes, Mthunzi and Luzuko. Siya and Hlokes are staying

to make sure the country is doing well Me: mhmm

Him: I'll be back

before you know it.

Me: I know

He looks serious for a moment.

Him: Tshidi, remember how mad I was when I found out about Thandiwe? I nod

Him: I'm sorry. I should've tried seeing things from your perspective. I should've known that you would've never kept such a secret if you didn't love me. I get it now. It took me a while, but I get it. Because if I had to keep something from you just to keep you happy, I'd do it. In a heart beat .

He carries on eating. I'm still a bit shocked. Why would Nathi even bring that up when we were passed that? Why is he apologizing when I've already forgiven him.

Me: baby, is

everything alright?

Him: everything's

fine. I just..

Me: you just what?

Him: I just need you to know that I love you. I know I've done some stupid things in my anger, but please just don't ever doubt my love for you.

He smiles and for some reason we move on

from what we just discussed. Him: ready to

go?

Me: yes

Him: I've got one more stop

before we have to go home Me:

ok

We get in the car, and start driving
back towards the city. We park at
the hospital and i look at
quizzically

HIM: I want to see my

baby before I leave. He

caresses my tummy and

smiles.

Him: plus I want to know what we're Having

We walk to Hlokes rooms, and we defined

him already waiting for us, Hlokes; you

two look all lovely dovey

Him: why the jealousy

Hlokes: Boni isn't

talking to me Me:

why what did you

do?

Hlokes: why do you have to

presume it's something I did Me:

because Boni doesn't just get

mad.

Hlokes: just lay down and let's look at your big headed baby

I do as he says and decide to leave the boni issue. I'll call her

later to make sure shes ok.

The picture on the monitor makes my heart smile, the baby looks bigger Than the last time i saw him

Hlokes: do you want to
know the sex? Nathi:

yes

Hlokes: there... it's a boy

I look at Nathi and i see nothing but joy.

Hlokes: the baby looks healthy.

Everything is in order Me: will
you print out a scan for me

Hlokes: no problem.

I get cleaned up, and I'm confronted

by a huge hug from Nathi Him: thank

you so much... I've always wanted a

son.

I hug him back and just smile. I know how

Zulu men are about their heirs We leave the

hospital with Nathi in the greatest mood

ever.

Him: have you thought of any names

Me: no. Nothing so far. Baby we've

literally just found out the sex Him: I

always knew it was going to be a boy

Me: oh really

Him: yes. Now I have a boy and a girl.

What more could a man ask for I roll my

eyes as he moves his head to the sound of

Stevie wonder.

We get home and he goes straight to Thokos room. I walk passed and hear them giggling. I decide to let them be. It's about time he made up with her. Instead i make some popcorn and go to the cinema downstairs and watch my all time favourite "save the last dance "

Nathi and Thoko join me and we all just sit and enjoy the movie. The only bad thing about them joining me is that they finish my pop corn. Mxm

If only I could stop time from moving I would do so in a heartbeat. Seeing Nathi all packed and ready to go makes me want to cry, but i do my best not to

Him: MaKhumalo, please listen to your security

detail. Tools knows what he's doing I nod

Him: do you remember the safe room coordinates

Me: Nathi we've been through this a million times. I know Him: I'm going to miss you're smart mouth

I smile

Me: and I'm going to miss your overprotective, controlling ass Him: take care of my baby

Me: I'll make sure we're all still well when you get back Him: good. Now give daddy a kiss so I can go

I throw myself in his arms, and give him a kiss goodbye.

Him: I love

you Me: I

love you

too,

He gets into his car and drives off. I sit in the drive way long after he has gone. I made it a point not to cry when he left, but now that he's gone the water fountain in me let's loose.

Thoko sits next to me and puts her hand in mine.

Her: well at least we've still got eachother. Plus he gave Me

his credit card. We could go shopping. I look at her and

laugh

Me: you really

are bad at this

She laughs

Her: well I know the one thing that

makes everything better Me: what?

Her:food. Lots and lots of food.

She stands up and reaches out her hand for me to stand. I take it and we walk back inside. I let Thoko order dinner, while I go to my room and say a prayer for my husband. There's no use crying. It's all in the hands of God now.

61

Nathi

Leaving Tshidi to hunt down my ex that I thought was dead but was in fact sent to kill me isn't exactly existing. I would much rather spend the time with Tshidi and our unborn baby. I almost aborted the mission when I saw her crying about me leaving, but then again she cries for everything latley.

Me: Skull, is the jet ready? Him:

yes boss

Me: Nails, how far are we on the report Him: give me an hour

Me: are our agents in Brazil ready Nails: yes.

I briefed them an hour ago. Me: and our cargo arrived safely

Nails: yes. Guns, bombs and your Axe's Me:

good. Let's get going.

I leave them and go call Tshidi. The flight to Brazil is long and i don't want her panicking when she can't get hold of me.

Her: Khumalo

Me: baby.. just phoning to let you know that we are leaving now. Her; have a safe trip.

Me: I will.

Remember to ...

She cuts me off

Her: yes, love, I will listen to Tools, and yes I'll make sure your baby is safe Me: good girl.. I'll speak to you when I land

Her: ok. Do you have your cross with you? Me: around my neck as always

Her: good. Now go... I'm trying to watch this movie and you're disturbing me Me: I love you

Her: love you more.

I end the call and we all leave for the airport. Mthunzi and Luzuko have already boarded when I arrive with the rest of the team. We take off and i put my hand around the cross that Tshidi bought for me at her church. She said never to take it off. I've kept it on since. I pray that her prayers will get Me through what's to come.

Tshidi

The first night without Nathi is hell, I am restless and for some reason I can't sleep. I toss and turn till my body gives in and eventually I fall asleep.

I wake up the following morning with joy in my heart. I haven't heard from Nathi, but i know he's ok. I get out of bed and go to the in-house gym to work out. I have been so lazy for the past few months.

The last time i worked out was a month ago when Boni made me do yoga. I've gained 3kgs since. And i know if I don't start eating better and working out I'll end up looking like a whale, and that is something I don't plan on doing, because all my weight goes to my ass, and already I've got a big butt, now imagine me with extra weight on.

I start with the treadmill and manage to only run for about 30 minutes. I leave the treadmil and go do weights. I conserntrate mainly on my arms and legs.

By the time I'm done I'm out of breath. I can't even walk back up the stairs to the kitchen. I sit on the stairs and gulp down my bottle of water.

When I finally get myself to the kitchen I find Thoko cooking. Her: I was wondering where you were

I sit on the counter and watch her making greasy food. Her:

you're eating with me right?

Me: hell no. I'm having fruit

Her: but sis Tshidi, I can't eat all of this

Me: I've gained 3kgs already. I tortured myself in the gym.

There's no way I'm letting myself end up looking like a whale

Her: fine. I'll get fat by myself

I cutt up a few apples and have
scoop up some penutbutter. I drizzle
some honey and indulge.

Thoko shakes her head but i don't
care, I enjoy my food Her: that is
wierd

Me: don't diss it till
you tried it Her: I'll
just take your word
for it Me: you'll just
have to

Her: what are your plans for today
except for eating wierd food Me:
church

Her: can I
come with?

Me: mhmm

I nod as I dip another Apple in
peanutbutter and eat. After eating,
we clean up the the kitchen a d go
get ready.

Since I've gained weight I decide to wear one of my maxi
dresses. None of my church dresses seem to fit me properly
anymore 🙄🥲

I do my make up and Thoko and i leave. As always we drive in
a convoy. It's actually embarrassing, but Nathi insists on it, so I
just sit and let the charade continue.

I arrive at church and Thoko and I go sit at my "designated" place. Some of my security detail sit with us while others scatter in the church. Not to mention the 7 that are outside.

The service begins and as always my spirit gets uplifted. The pastor speaks about trusting God. The worship team sings my favourite song and I'm on my feet worshipping. I know now that despite it all God is faithful. Every thing he promises he fulfils.

We read the book of Isaiah 41:10 AND there and then I leave it all on the alter. I know that the reason God made me come to church was to reassure me that I don't need to worry. He's got this.

Thoko and I leave after church and we are taken to my parents house for Sunday lunch. I sit with my parents and for the first time in a while this feels like home.

My siblings are warm and it feels like the past was scraped away.

Lerato: Tshidi, we were thinking we could do a weekend away. Just us siblings. No spouses I look up at abuti Thanto and he nods.

Me: when?

Her: in a few weeks maybe? We were waiting to see if you're husband would be ok with it first
Me: I'm sure he'll be ok with it

Thabo: where is your husband anyway?

Me: he's on some official business
somewhere in the world I look
down and continue eating. I hate
having to lie.

Mama: Matshidiso how
far along are you? I look
at her surprised

Mama: you don't think I wouldn't
notice you were pregnant? I smile.

Me: 4;months
and a half

Papa: boy or
girl?

Me: boy
I see my father smile

Him: I'm sure you're
husband must be excited

Me: he is natate. You
should see him fuss.

Him: it's always a father's joy when your wife is pregnant.

Thabo: ma, you know I can't seem to remember seeing you
pregnant. I always just saw you coming home from the
hospital with a baby

My mother chokes on an olive and we all stand up. My dad
pats her back and gives her some water. We all sit down

again and continue eating. My mother keeps coughing.

Papa: come. Let's get you to lay down.

My dad takes her to their room and were left with just us.

After eating and washing dishes. Thoko and i head home. We stop at milky lane to get ice cream. I end up getting a waffle as well. Thoko laughs at me.

Her: so much for your

healthy eating Me:

shush. It's not me its

your nephew.

We get home and the first thing we do is head for the couches to put up our feet. We both doze off almost immediately. I think it's because of all the food we've eaten

Nathi

We touchdown in Brazil and its straight to work. We have an operation set up just outside the capital. We're working out of one of our many safe houses around the world.

Me: Nails. The report?

He gives it to me and i go through it.

My team have located Hugo, but not Thandiwe.

Mthunzi: maybe we should pay Hugo a visit. Let him know we're in town

Me: no. We'll scare

her into hiding

Luzuko: Nails,

anything on Ntsiki?

Him: no nothing yet

Me: where there's Ntsiki there's Thandiwe. Find them

Mthunzi: Nails put up the locations of Hugos

whereabouts since Axe's stabbing. The screen

goes on and we have different locations.

Me: narrow it down the

the past 72 hours. nails:

that would be here

Me: that's where we start.

Luzuko: wait. Didn't Jess say

something about some cartel? Me:

yah, the Italian cartel, why?

Luzuko: Nails. Pull up the list of private flights from

Italy to Brazil since the stabbing Nails : give me a few

seconds

He puts them and we look at the flight plan.

Me: wait a minute. That flight number is one of ours,

Nails: it's the one that skull and hammer used when they came to S.A.

Luzuko: but what were they doing in Brazil? I

thought Hammer was based in London Mthunzi:

where is skull and Hammer now

Me: they left for Iraq an hour after we left for Brazil

Me: Nails. Call the pilot. I need to make sure they were on that flight

I pace the room. If this is what I think then I just

made a mistake by leaving Tshidi. Nails: boss.they've

gone dark. We can't track them

Me: shit.

Me: get ghost on the line. I want security at my house trippled.

I take my phone and dial Tshidi. She answers

just as I am about to put down Her: baby

Me: where is Thoko

Her: here. We were just taking a nap

Me: wake her up and get into

the panic room. Now. Her:

Nathi are you ok. What's going

on

Me: now Tshidil now

I hear her wake Thoko. They run up the stairs.

Me: Nails switch on all the screens

Around my house. Inside and out. The

panic room signal goes off and i know

they're safe.

Me: Tshidi you don't leave that room. Not till

****Bang**** bang*****

I hear bullets flying

outside the warehouse.

Her; Nathi... Nathi what is

going on?

Me: I love you. Don't leave the panic room till I tell you to.

I end the call as I grab a rifle from Nails. It's time i show these fuckers who I am.

Tshidi

Me: Nathi ... Nathi

There's no answer. He's

put the phone down I look

at Thoko and her face

echos mine.

Her: what do you think is going on?

Me: I don't know. He just told me to wake you up and for us to come in here. Then the next thing I hear is guns going off.

I see her eyes

water Her:

what is this

place?

Me: it's a panic room. It's the one place where

not even a bomb could get to us. I hear my

phone ring and i immediately answer

Me: Nathi

Him: hi Tshidi,

sorry. It's Siya

Me: hi Siya

Him: are you guys ok?

Me: yes, we're in the panic room

Him: I got the signal. I need you guys to sit tight. I don't

want you leaving the room, till I have the situation under
cotrol

Me: is Nathi ok?

Him: yes. He's fine. We just got an unexpected surprise, but he's fine. The team is fine I let out a sigh of relief

Him: the monitor's on your left are for the cameras In your house. The big screen on your right is the television

Me: how long are we supposed to stay in here?

Him: till your husband says it's safe for me to come get you. Me: ok

Him: there's a door in your right, that's the bathroom. The cupboards are stocked with dry food and liquids. The fridge is stocked with ready made food.

The couches are recliners, so they should be comfortable enough should you need to lay down. Me: ok

Him: Tshidi. Don't worry. We've done this a million times before. Nathi knows what he's doing Me: Siya... I just... I don't think I could live if....

Him: Tshidi. listen to me. You only know the one side of him. You know your husband. The father of your child. The man in Brazil is a man I trained. He is vicious and would do any and everything to complete his mission. Dont worry about him. You just take care of his baby. He'll handle everything else

Me ok...

Him: call me from the phone in the panic room if you need me. I'm disabling your signal on your cell phone for now.

He ends the conversation and i feel relieved. At

least I know for sure that Nathi is ok Me: He's fine

Her: Thank God

I switch on the monitor's. I see guards all over

the house. Inside and outside, I put on the tv

and Thoko hunts down something for us to eat

Her: well looks like my brother

stocked up recently She hands

me apples and peanutbutter

I smile. It's things like these that make me fall

more and more in love with Nathi. Nathi

I grab the gun from Nails and start firing.

We move to the back of the warehouse. The people firing at us are outside and the only way to catch them is by facing them head on

We use the back door and as expected they weren't expecting us. We fire from behind and before they know we have surrounded them.

We stop firing, when I see 2 on their knees in a form of surrender. Me: Nails.

Bring in these two for questioning

As nails moves towards them I see black car approaching. I think of firing, but then notice that is one of ours

Fuck

Sabelo and skull walk out and come towards

us. I point my gun at them . Me: you better

have a good damn reason as to why your

asses aren't in Iraq

Hammer: boss, I've been trying to explain since I

came to SA, but you wouldn't let me Me: is this

about my sister? You aborted a mission all because

of my sister?

Him: no. Of course not. Just hear me out

Me: Nails. Take these two in for

questioning as well. They look

at me shocked

Hammer: dude, I get you're pissed about Thoko. But I'm here on official business, not personal business. Me: why the hell should I trust you when you're in bed with my enemy?

Hammer: if you just hear me out. I could explain. I put down my gun.

Me: get inside.

Me: Nails... have the team clean up this mess. I want the dead bodies delivered to Hugo

I walk in with skull and hammer. I don't know why I'm giving them the benefit of the doubt, but i am

Me; you have 5 minutes to explain yourselves. If I'm not satisfied with your answers then you're both dead.

Skull: so you know since diamon mission in Kenya, we've been tracking the involvement of the Italian cartel

Me: yes and

Skull: we found links between them And Hugo. We went undercover and Hammer was able to work his way into befriending Pablo. After befriending him, we were able to acquire some information. About Hugo and Thandiwe

He pulls out a folder

Me: that still does t explain why youre here?

Hammer: we are still undercover. Pablo has a meeting with Hugo this afternoon. Hes bringing in some new girls for Hugo's brothel. And I'm attending.

I look at nails,

ME: So how did they know we were in Brazil?

Hammer: They followed you. We didn't interfere

because we didn't want to blow our cover Me: you had

better be telling the truth. If I find out

Hammer: Nathi. We've been friends for our entire lives. I know I messed up with Thoko. But this unit is my everything. You know I would take a bullet for you any day.

Me: well, we'll see

Me: what time is

the meeting? Skull:

In 2 hours

Me: where ?

Him: at his brothel in Rio

Me: Nails I need you in the security system. Don't take over. Just hover in the background. Him: sure boss.

Me: and you two need to stop going dark.

Skull: the cartel are very vigilant. We couldn't take the risk of them picking up a signal from us Hammer: one

more thing

He pulls out another folder

and gives it to me. Him: it's

my pleasure

I open the folder and find pictures of Thandiwe. I look through them and find an address

Him: I managed to get Nadia undercover. She's working as one of the girls at the brothel. It's run by Thandiwe

I look at him shocked. Thandiwe running a brothel is something I never thought possible. Not in a million years.

My only question is why didn't Sabelo submit this information prior

Him: I know you don't trust me. But Axe, after your stabbing I wanted to find out why maT would want to do this. I've known her my whole life it just didn't seem right. So after I linked Pablo to Hugo, I was able to find her.

Me: you two better get going. I don't want them suspecting why you're late

Me: Nails, I'm going to Thandiwe's apartment. Make a plan to disable the cameras surrounding her.

Hammer: use the stairs.

Me: keep Hugo busy, till I have

Thandiwe. I'll keep in touch They

both nod

Me: you only disable the mission once you have

confirmation from me that Thandiwe is in S.A. They both

look at me with wide eyes

Skull: I though the mission was to kill her

Me: no. I need to figure out a few things first.

I gear up and leave, just after skull and hammer leave. I told Nails no back up, but i can spot My agents following Me. Nxa,

I arrive outside Thandiwes apartment building. I use the service entrance, and climb up the stairs. I have a ear piece in my ear with nails on the other side telling me what to expect.

Nails: yo're in the clear.

Me: you sure

Him: yes, the guards are changing shifts. Now's you're chance.

I open her door slowly. I can hear her in the shower. She's singing the same song she always sings when she's in the shower.

I close the door behind me. And sit on a chair in the dining room.

I hear the shower go off and her stepping out. She closes the

shower door and starts getting dressed. I hear her walk towards the lounges then and only then does she spot me.

I see her freeze. I put a finger on my mouth signalling for her to keep quiet.

I've thought about this moment for a long time. I thought about how I would feel when I saw her. How I would react. Would I still have feelings for her.

I stand up and walk to her. She is trembling. Her eyes are wide and her lips are parted. Me: fancy seeing you here

Her: Na..... Nat..... Nathi..... I. I

Me: shhh. The last time we spoke you put a knife through me.

Did you honestly think you could kill me? She doesn't respond.

I hear the door to the second bedroom opening. A small figure walks out. He looks at me and then at Thandiwe.

I look at Thandiwe. This can't be,

it's impossible. How? Him:

mommy who's this

Her: boy boy. Say hello to your father.

The little boy looks up at me. I'm frozen. I have no words. I wasn't expecting this. The sad part is there is no denying that He is mine. He is a complete replica of me.

63

We stand in silence for a few minutes no one

moves. It's like my body is frozen. Eventually I

come back to my senses. I feel my anger burning

me from the inside. How could she?

I want to kill her. i want to fucking grab her neck and watch her take her last breath. But how? How do I do that with my son staring at me

Her: Siseko this is your father

Me: why Thandiwe? Why did you do this? Why

keep him from me for so long? She doesn't

answer me.

Me: Nails... is it clear to leave

Him: not yet boss. Give me a second. I

need to distract the guards Me: is the

car waiting

Him: yes.

Luzuko is

driving Me: you

have 2 minutes.

Him: roger

I take out an injection

from my bag. Me: boy

look at me.

He looks into my

eyes. I kneel down.

Me: I'll see you when

you wake up

I inject him and he flinches. Thandiwe gulps as he

almost instantly becomes comatose I put him on the

couch, and when I turn around she has a gun

pointed at me.

Her: I'm not letting

you take my son Me:

really?

Her: Nathi stop. You come any

closer and I'll shoot I walk

towards her

Me: why don't you

Her: I'm warning you. Another step and

I'm in front of her. Our

faces are touching Me:

you'll what huh?

Her: we both know you won't kill me.

Me: not yet I won't. But soon enough I will

Nails: boss it's clear. You have

a 3min window max Me: good

I grab Thandiwe and inject her as well. She may be right about
Me not killing her but i sure as hell ain't leaving her here.

Me: Nails. Get Mthunzi in here.

I grab my son and walk out

as Mthunzi walks in Me:

bring her with

We're out of Thandiwe's building in less than 2 minutes.

Me: Nails, make sure the jet is ready. I'm flying back

today. I'm not taking any chances Him: yes boss

Me: send out a signal to Hammer and Skull as soon as we take
off. I want Them to continue undercover. They are not to kill
anyone. Not till I give them the go ahead

Him: sure boss

Me: I'll meet you at the airport. You and the

agents have an hour to be on the jet. Him: noted.

I sit at the back of the car with my son in my arms.. He looks like a younger version of me. How on earth am I ever going to break this to Tshidi.

I get to the jet and by some miracle my

team arrives just as I do. Me: load up

and let's get the hell out of here.

They do as told. In no less than

20minutes we are in the air. I let out

a sigh of relief.

Tshidi

I start to get anxious. We've been in here for a full 24hrs.

I'm starting to hate the food here and everything

else that comes in the cupboard. I get off the

couch and decide to call Siya.

Him: Tshidi. I can't talk. I'm at
HQ I'll call you back

Me: is
Nathi ok? Did anything
happen to him?

Him: he's fine. They're actually on their
way back. Just sit tight for now. He ends
the call before I can continue questioning
him.

Her: what did he say?

Me: he couldn't talk... but he did say that
Nathi was on his way back

Her: that's a
good thing

Me: I
guess so

Nathi

The first thing I do when we land was head straight to HQ.

I had Mthunzi take my son with him to his house. I needed a
few days to figure out how I was going to tell Tshidi.

I handed Thandiwe over to one of the agents. For time
being I planned on keeping her in a cell. I'll decide what to
do with her at a later stage.

Me: Nails. Please process Thandiwe before you leave. Maybe
sure she is in solitary. I'll start questioning her in a few days

Him: sho boss

Me: great work guys. It's a wrap for now

Me: oh, before I go. Nails I need you to have extra eyes on Skull and Hammer. I want to know their every move.

I leave HQ and head home. To be honest I'm dreading facing Tshidi. I don't know how I am going to tell her that I have a son. what if she doesn't want him? Can I really turn my back on him?

I arrive home and find my house covered with guards. I had totally forgotten that Tshidi was still in the panic room.

I let some of the guards off duty and

go face my darkest fear. Tshidi

Thoko and i eventually fell asleep again in this stupid room.

I honestly missed my bed. I missed my husband

and Lord knows I missed fresh air. I hear someone

put in the codes to the panic room. I instantly

wake up.

I look at my watch and its already morning. This

marks day 3 in the panic room. The door opens

and i see him standing there. Our eyes meet and

i jump up.

I'm in his arms in seconds. He holds me and squeezes me tight.

Me: oh thank God... you
had me so worried
Him:
shhh, I'm home... no need
to cry

He holds me at arms length and
wipes away my tear.
Him: come
on.. let's get you guys out of
here.

He goes to Thoko and
wakes her up gently. She
smiles and jumps to him

Him: have you been behaving?

Her: don't worry, I'm not pregnant with another baby
if That's what you're worried about. I leave them and
go to my shower. I haven't felt so dirty In my life.

I stand under the warm water and let it sooth me. My heart is
finally at peace. My man is home and is unharmed. What
more can a woman ask for?

Nathi comes in and stands behind. He puts his arms
around me and i turn around to face him.
Him: how's my
baby?

Me: your son is doing great. I felt him

move earlier for the first time
He smiles

Him: that's

my boy Me:

I've been

thinking. Him:

I'm listening.

Me: since this is your first born. We should maybe have another baby soon afterwards. You know so they don't have a big gap

Nathi:

hmmmm

Me: is

that a yes

Him: yes

I hug him.

Me: at you ok?

Him: I'm fine. I'm just tired

Me: well, let's get cleaned up so we can have you rest.

He nods. I can sense that something isn't sitting well with him. His smiles do touch his ears, and his eyes are all over the place. Plus knowing Nathi he should've jumped me the moment he saw me naked .

We get out the shower and we get dressed in silence. I don't

plan on going anywhere so I just put on one of my plain dresses and sandals.

Me: can I make you

something to eat? Him:

no thank you, I'm not

hungry Me: how did

the mission go

Him;(sigh) ok... I guess

Me: I can see something is bothering you.

Do you want to talk about it Him: (silence)

Me: Nathi... ?

Him: I found

Thandiwe Me:

is she dead?

Him: you don't have to worry about her. She's out of our lives...
for good

Me: I'm sorry baby. I know how difficult it must've been for
you. But with her now out of the picture we can finally move
on with our lives. Just you, me and our son and Aya

He doesn't look at me. He sits on the bed

with his hands over his eyes. I sit next to

him..

Him: she

wasn't alone

Me: huh

Him: when I found her

she wasn't alone Me:

was she with a man?

Him: no. I couldn't care

less about that. Me: so

what is it?

Him: she was

with my son. I

take my hand

out of his.

Me: Nathi.. I'm sorry you're confusing

me. What do you mean? Him: she has

a child. He's 5 years old. He's mine

I stand up. I can't sit any longer because I feel like my gut is in my throat. This can't be right, he said she couldn't have children

Me: how do you know it's yours? It could be anyone's

Him: Tshidi he looks exactly like me. There

is no denying that he's mine. Me: how long
have you known about this

He looks up at me

Me: and don't you dare lie to me. How long

have you kept this from me? Him: Tshidi, I

just found out. I had no clue prior to

yesterday. I swear Me: this can't be

happening.

Him: Tshidi, I know it's a lot to ask, but i need you to

accept him. He is innocent in all this. I look at Nathi

like he's crazy. Is he honestly expecting me to bring up

that witches child?

I take my handbag and leave him standing there. I

need to get out of here. I need fresh air. Him: Tshidi.

.....MaKhumalo where are you going

Me: Nathi I need a moment. I need air. you're suffocating
me right now

Him: Tshidi you can't leave. It's still not safe.

Me: Nathi just let me be. please I just need a momemt

He looks at me disappointedly

Him: I'll give you space. but you can't not leaving this house.

He walks back inside and leaves me in the driveway.

I take a deep breath and try to stop myself from breaking down.

I go into the spare bedroom and breakdown. I don't know what to do anymore

What have I done in my life for me to be punished like this? All I've ever wanted was to be happy, and just when I thought I had found happiness. Now I have to play mommy to a child who's Mother I despise.

64

I've been laying in this bed for hours. I haven't eaten. I keep trying to figure out how and why this is happening. I know that this is something I have to take and move on with, but it doesn't make it easy. Not after everything we've just been through. Just when I thought Thandiwe was dead, now she flipping lives on through her son.

I hear someone open my door. I turn around and find Thoko with a tray in her hands Her: Sis Tshidi.

Bhuti Nathi said I must bring this to you

Me: Thank you

Thoko Her: Sisi

is everything

ok? Me:

everything's

fine.

Her: I'll be in the cinema

if you need me Me:

thank you.

She leaves and i don't even bother eating the food. I've lost my appetite completely. To think I was so excited about having him back. Only for him to come back with a fucking child. Nxa,

I must be tired from all the events of today. I end up falling asleep in the spare bedroom. When I wake up its dark outside. I must've slept through the afternoon.

I close the curtains, and take the tray of uneaten food downstairs. I stop on the stairs, when I hear giggling voices.

Him: no daddy.... I'm ticklish stop daddy

I feel my heart beating at a rate of a million. Did I Nathi really just bring that child into my house? Couldn't he just give me a few days to get used to the idea.

I'm shaking I'm so angry I end up dropping the tray, and the food just splatters all over the floor. Nathi appears as I try picking up the broken glass from the floor.

Me: shit

I cut my hand with the glass.

Him; you need to be more careful. Sit I'll clean this up.

I get up and leave him there with the broken glass. I go to

my room and take out the first aid kit. I rinse my hand in warm water, then wash over it with detol.

Him: how

deep is it

Me:

(silence)

Him: let me see

He takes my hand and i pull it away. I see the look in his eyes change to irritation and then anger. I look down and carry on cleaning my wound. When I'm done i wrap a bandage over it.

Him: so we're going to play this immature game of yours where you give me the silent treatment and I'm expected to chase after you like a hopeless dog?

Me: (silence)

I leave him in the bathroom and go change into my PJ's He follows me into the closet and paces the room

Him: Tshidi tell , me what to do? Tell me?

Because I don't know what to do. Me: (silence

)

He grabs my gown from my hand and throws it on the floor. He stares at me. I can see he is at his breaking point. I know if I don't say anything now he will lose his shit

Me: why is
he here?

Him: what?

Me: why did you bring him here

Him: Tshidi where am I supposed to
take him? This is his home. Me:

hmmmm

Him: So what was I supposed to do? Was I
supposed to throw him away Me: (silence)

Him: Tshidi from the moment I met you I accepted Aya. It
made no difference to me that she wasn't my blood. Why can't
you do the same

Lord knows this man didn't

just bring Aya into this Me: are

you seriously going there?

Him: Tshidi I'm just trying to get you to see.

Me: see what? Listen here Nathi. I never once asked you to do
any of the things that you do for Aya. When you came along Aya
and I were just fine. So don't you dare make it seem like you
were our fucking saviour

Him: what did I say to you about

the way you speak to me? I keep

quite

Him: Tell me Tshidi. What do I need to do to gain an ounce of
respect from you? Do I have to beat you? Must you fear me in

order for you to respect me?

Me: Nathi

Him: Tshidi don't make me chose between you and my son.

Me: Nathi, you could've given me a few days. It's not like I was expecting this

Him: and I was? Tshidi I found out yesterday about him. I'm just as shocked as you are. What do you want me to do? He had nowhere to go.

I sit on the bed and sigh. This is

honestly an impossible situation. Me:

what's his name?

Him: Siseko

Me: it's a nice name

He sits next to me and takes his hand in mine. We sit in silence. I don't know what to say or do. I just don't have even the slightest idea. What if he hates me? What if he rebels and causes A drift between me and Nathi?

Me: i guess we'll make it work

I see him look me in the eyes. I don't know what else to say.

He stands up and goes downstairs. I guess this is the part where I have to meet this Siseko child.

I drag my feet downstairs. Nathi is in the kitchen and Siseko is in the lounge watching cartoons I walk towards him and he notices me. He jumps up and comes towards me.

Him: mommy

I look at him confused. Did this little gremlin just call me mommy Me:

Siseko.., I'm

He steps back

Him: you're not my mommy

He shakes his head. His

eyes start to water Him:

then why do you look like

my mommy?

I am dumbstruck. I don't know what to say. How do I explain that when I don't know why I look like her. But what I do know is I don't like the look on his face. He looks sad. Disappointed even.

I sit on the carpet in front of him

Me: Siseko, you're mommy has gone away for a little bit. I know you'll miss her, but if you like I could be you're friend till she comes back.

His tears start to flow

Him: when will my

mommy come back?

Me: soon

Him: I want my Dragon teddy.

I look up at Nathi... he shrugs and carries on in the kitchen

Me: tell you what. If you can be a good boy for me. We

can go buy you another teddy tomorrow He shakes his

head and starts screaming his lungs out.

Nathi comes rushing in and

looks at me for answers. That's

it I'm done. I'm not dealing with

this gremlin.

I stand up to walk away. Nathi will just have to deal. It's his child anyway.

I start to walk away but my motherly instincts get the better of me. I take a deep breath and go back to the lounge

Him: Sisieko... Siseko stop it

Siseko throws himself on the floor and rolls around crying for his dragon teddy. He's kicking and screaming like little monster.

Nathi looks at me distraught.

Him: Tshidi do

something Me:

what?

Him: I don't know. You know these things

I look at the look of horror on my poor husbands face, and my heart breaks.

I take breath and ask God to allow me to hold this child without strangling him for his mother's sins

I sit on the floor and pull a kicking and screaming Siseko onto my lap, i hold him in my arms. At first he tries to resist.the little gremlin even scratches me a bit, but eventually he gives in.

I rock him back and forth as I sing ton him

"Hush, little baby, don't say a word. Mama's gonna buy you a mockingbird. And if that mockingbird won't sing, mama's gonna buy you a diamond

And if that diamond
ring turns brass,
Mama's gonna buy you
a looking glass

And if that looking
glass gets broke,
Mama's buy you a
billy goat

And if that billy goat

won't pull, Mamas
gonna buy you a cart
and bull

And if that cart and bull turn over,
Mama's gonna buy you a dog named Rover

And if that dog named
Rover won't bark
Mama's gonna buy you
a horse and cart

And if that horse and cart fall down,
You'll still be the sweetest little baby in town"

Nathi looks at me as though I have lost it. But he doesn't dare
say anything, because in the end Siseko has his arms around me
and is fast asleep

Him: please tell , me that thing he did is

never gonna happen again Me: shhh,

you'll wake him

Him: what do we

do now Me: now

we put him to

sleep He doesn't

move

Me: Nathi take him and put him in our room

He takes Siseko from me and places him in the spare bedroom

Me: if he wakes up and is alone he might have another tantrum. Why don't you let him sleep with us for a few nights. Just till he's used to having us around?

Him: but how will we (clears throat)

Me: I don't plan on giving you some for years so this shouldn't be a problem.

I roll my eyes and go back downstairs. I'm too hungry to argue with him about why his gremlin needs to sleep with us.

I dish up for myself and start eating. He

comes back down and stares at me. Him: you

didn't dish up for me

Duh

Me:

no

Him: and yet MaKhumalo you're eating food prepared by me Me: uzoba strong

Him: what am I not going to do with you

I finish my pasta, and go wash my plate. I leave the pots and pans he used to make the pasta. He can wash that shit up himself

He just stares at me. I want to walk out the

kitchen but he's standing at the door Me; please

can you move

He doesn't move

Me: Nathi I want

to lie down Him:

(silence)

His eyes burn into me. I can tell he's still upset. Problem is I don't know what about. We've had so many arguments in the few hours that his back that I just don't have the energy to deal with again. All I needed was for him to give me time to get my head around his little gremlin instead of bringing him here on the very day he told me about him.

Me: Nathi please move

Him: Tshidi tell me what to do

Oh God not this again. Can't Nathi just leave me alone

Me: do about what Nathi? You're already done what you wanted to do with no disregard for my feelings. So as always Tshidi understands. Yes your son will stay here. Yes I will raise him as my own. Because that's what a good little Christian girl does. I will just have to forget that his mother tried killing me. I will just have to forget that his mother lied about me kidnapping her and i ended up with a gun to my head, and being thrown around like a rag doll. Perfect Tshidi will have to forget that his mother put a knife in you hoping to kill you. Yes perfect wife Tshidi will just have to forget because this is the fucking

life I chose. I chose to love you and me loving you has hurt me over and over. So yes Nathi don't worry you're perfect second lady wife will accept your new heir and will make sure he is treated like a Prince. All I needed was a bit of time, and you couldn't even give me that. Because what Nathi want Nathi gets. Tshidi will just have to deal,

NOW MOVE

I let out a deep breath. He moves out my way and i go to the cinema. No use trying to sleep anymore. Sleep is long gone. I might as well drown myself in sweets and popcorn and watch some lame ass movie.

Sigh

Tomorrow is

another day65

(Short. Please dont blame me blame my hubby. Hes been acting all clingy today. But ill make it up to you



I don't know how I got In this bed, but here I am in my bed with Nathi wrapped around me like seaweed.

The events of the night before have me feeling somehow. Instead of watching a movie i ended up praying. I spoke to God and asked him to help me accept Siseko.. I know he has no faults but when you're whole life is planned out and then out of nowhere comes a child, a whole human being, that you now have to take care of. It's not exactly a carnival, but at the same time i can't have my house turning into ww3.

I hear my door open. I keep my eyes closed as though I'm asleep. By the sound of the footsteps I know its Siseko.

He stands right in front of me. I don't open my eyes. I just wait. He stands there for a few minutes and doesn't say anything.

Finally after what feels like a decade, I feel his little warm hand on my face. He brushes my cheek and then moves his hand. I let out a deep breath, and open my eyes. He smiles at me and doesn't say anything. Me: morning
Him:

morning

Silence

Him: you look like mommy.

Even whe you sleep. Oh God not this again.

Me: let's go make
you breakfast He
shakes his head

Him: Auntie Thoko already gave me porridge

Me: ok.....

Him: you said we are going to

get my Dragon teddy Me: yes,

but the shop's aren't open yet.

Him: but i want

to go now I take

a deep breath.

Me: Siseko. How about you come cuddle with me and your dad for now. Then we can go to the shop's when they open

He looks at me for a long while as though trying to contemplate what I am saying.

After what feels like a decade, he lifts up his hand as an indication for me to pick him up. I let out a sigh of relief and pick him up and place Him between me and his father.

He lays facing me. He just stares at me. Doesn't say anything. Just stares.

I look back at him and notice how he looks just like Nathi.

His nose, eyes and even his dimples. Him: I like that song

Me: what song?

Him: the song you sang to me. My

mommy sings it to me. He smiles

and somehow I can't help smiling

back.

Me: I'll sing it for

you anytime Him:

can daddy sing?

I shake my head

Me: he sings like

a crocodile

Siseko bursts out

laughing. Nathi: I

heard that

Siseko covers his mouth but

continues laughing Nathi

faces us and starts to tickle

Siseko.

He kicks and screams with laughter and i take

that as my cue to go shower. I'm about to step

out the shower when Nathi steps in.

Things are still a bit awkward between us. But I'm in no mood to rehash the events of yesterday.

Him: you done already?

Me: yes. I need to go out
for a few hours. Him:
where to?

Me: the mall. I need to get a few things for Siseko. I also want to see if I can get him some furniture for his room and i need to go past a few pre-schools to see which one is best for him. Then I need to go see Nails and figure out if he can trace a birth certificate for him, so we can add Him to the trust.

He looks looks at
me speechless.

Him: Tshidi... I

Me: all, I needed was time. I would've never asked you to forsake your own blood. I try moving him to the side so I can get out but he doesn't move

Him: I'm sorry.... I know I've put you through a lot. I just...

Me: Nathi. I love you. And I'm patient with you. I try as much as I possibly can to make you happy. I know Siseko came as a surprise. I know the manner in which I reacted wasn't great. But for you to bring Aya into it hurt me deeply. For you to tell me not to make you chose between him and i, just confirmed that as always I will come second in your life. First it was with his mother, and now that she is dead, I come second to her son. I've never made you feel insecure of your place in my heart Nathi. Not once.

Him: Tshidi.... I'm sorry.. everything just happened so fast. I didn't intend to hurt you. I know Siseko came as a surprise. I didn't know how to deal with him, I don'teven know how to stop him from crying. All I wanted was to get him out of Brazil.

I didn't think about the results of my actions. I'm sorry

I'm honestly still hurt by the whole Siseko issue, but there's no use crying over spilled milk. The only good thing that came out of this whole thing is that I won't ever have to lay eyes on that dreadful woman again.

I smile for the first time since this whole thing happens. I put my arms around his neck and he pulls me closer.

he kisses me and my knees go weak. Him: I

missed you

Me: really?

Him: like really really missed you. I

even missed your moodiness Me: yah, whatever

Him: have you been taking care of my son?

Me: of course I have.

Him: he's getting bigger. You're stomach isn't as flat Me: I've

been thinking of names

Him: as long as it's not

Sesotho names I look

at him

Me: why can't he have a Sesotho name?

Him: my son is a Khumalo. He will have a Zulu name Me: but

Him: his name is going to be

Lethukuthula Khumalo Me: but

Him: we're naming him
after my grandfather Me:
do I even have a say in the
matter?

Him: no

I give up. No use even bothering to discuss this, a decision has
been made, and I'll just have to deal. Sometimes we just have to
choose our battles. This one is just one I'm not willing to fight
about.

Me: in that case. Kiss
me so I can go Him:
just a kiss? I want more
than that

He doesn't even give me a chance to say anything. He's got
me against the shower wall and is on his knees in between
my thighs before I can even protest.

The feel of his tongue on me is enough for me to forget about
everything that we've been fighting about. How is it that this
one man can make me so angry one minute and the next
have me calling his name as I come from a desperate orgasm.

By the time we step out the shower the water has gone cold.
We both get dressed and with stupid smiles on our faces,

Him: I have to go to HQ today. Will you be alright with
Siseko? Or should we leave him with Thoko? Me: I'm sure
we'll be fine. I'll take him with me.

Him: ok. But the
guards go with you.

Me: ok

I take Siseko and we leave. The first thing I do is buy him clothes. Then we go look for furniture for his room. I let him choose which things he wants for his room, and like any typical boy he goes for Spider-Man.

By the time we're finished I feel like a million pounds. My feet are swollen and I'm hell of a nauseous. We get home and I hand Siseko over to Thoko. I'm starting to regret pushing myself so hard.

I lay on the bed and try resting but for some reason my heart feels like it's beating too slow. I yell out in pain when I feel a sharp stab of pain in my chest. This can't be right. Something is wrong I can feel. I yell for Thoko and she comes running up the stairs.

I'm holding my chest. I'm getting more and more dizzy. Me; phone

Nathi.

Those are the last words I remember saying.

66

(short. Sorry

work is hectic)

Nathi

I have been sitting here for hours and still no one can tell me what the hell is going on. I've had doctors tell me to leave my wife. Hlokes himself can't tell me what's happening.

When I got home after Thoko's call. I found Tshidi on the floor with her hands on her chest. She was in and out of consciousness. I've never been this scared in my entire life. I just want someone to tell me she's ok.

I see hlokes coming.

Me; Tell me she's ok

Him; we're still running tests

Me; that's what you said hours ago. Hlokes. What is wrong with my wife?

Him; we don't know. We're trying to figure it out.

But I need to ask you a question. Me; what

Him; if we have to take a decision on who we save

between the baby and Tshidi. What do we do? Me; You

save my wife. You do everything and anything to save her

He nods

Me; I'm serious Hlokes. If I lose her I have nothing. We can

always work on another baby. I can't. In fact I won't lose my

wife. Not today. Not ever

Him; got it

He leaves and I sit and ponder about what I just did. What if Tshidi loses the baby? Will she hate me for choosing her over our Son?

I take the thought and put it at the back of my head. I have to do what Tshidi would do. Tshidi would tell

me to have faith. Yes. Faith... That's what she would say

The first 24hrs pass, and still no one can tell me what is wrong with her. I've had no choice but to phone both our parents.

Tshidi's mother and father arrive first. I explain what happened. her mother looks at her father and they have some sort of unspoken conversation,

Me;
what is
it? Her;
nothing

I take a deep breath. I don't want to be disrespectful, but I have a feeling they know more than they let on

Me; Ma. I is there
something I need to know

Her; no.

Me; Ma. If you know something that I should know
then I think it's my right as her husband Her; it's just
that

She looks at her husband
and then at me Her;

Tshidi is adopted

Me; I know that. But what does that have to do with her health

They both look at me shocked.

Her; How did

Me; I have my ways. Now tell me what's happening with my wife

Her; we don't know. But when she was growing up she had times where she would be have tantrums. Or when she would feel down for no reason.

When we took her to see a doctor. We were told that it's a thing that happens between twins. If the one is down, the other feels it. Its just that its never been this strong.

I look at her...

Me; excuse me

I leave them to go make a call. I had been so absorbed with Tshidi, I had forgotten that my Team were torturing Thandiwe for more information

Nails answers on the second ring

Me;

Nails

Him;

Boss

Me. Stop the torture. Tell them to stop

Him; Boss we are lose. Just give me another hour, I'll have everything we need Me; Nails.

Stop now. Don't continue

Him; ok... you're the boss

I end the call and rush back inside. I find Hlokes talking to Tshidi's parents.

Me; how is she

Him; she's stable. But we're

worried about her heart Me;
her heart?

Him; she seems to have developed a
rare form of heart failure. Me; heart
failure

Him; it must've been somethings she's had for a while. I'm
surprised it didn't come to light during the
abuse with Msizi. But I guess it
was just a matter of time. Me;

What now?

Him; well we've stabilized her and the baby. But we need to get
her a heart donor ASAP

Me; will the baby be able to survive the op?

Him; no. we might need to deliver the baby before we do the
heart surgery. For now she just needs to
keep well. I'll have her under intense supervision until we find a
new heart for her.

Me; how long could that take

Him; we're looking. Problem is it has to be an exact match

Me; so you're telling me unless we find
a heart I'm losing my wife Him; axe. We
will find one.

Me; can I see her

Him; yes. But just for a little while. Then we need to let her rest

I leave Tshidi's parents and go in to see her.

I find her with wires all over her. She looks so frail.

She sees me and smiles faintly

Me; Hi

beautiful

Her; hi

Me; you gave me quite a fright

Her; I'm fine

Me; don't ever

do this again Her;

I'll try not to

I sit on a chair by her bed and take her wire filled hand in mine. I

take a second to breathe. I don't want

her seeing me like this.

Her;

Nathi

Me;

baby

Her; I'm fine. I'm going to be fine

Me; I know

Her; you have that

look on your face ME;

what look

Her; Nathi. What are you hiding or what are you up to

Me; nothing. I'll see you later.

I stand up and leave. I need to think.

I head to HQ. I know what I'm thinking is wrong. I know I

shouldn't. But this is my Tshidi. I have to make

a decision, im not losing her

Me; nails... keys

Him; boss?

Me; I want her
out of solitary

Him; mhmm

Me; fatten her up. Make her healthy. Make
sure she drinks enough water He looks at me
concerned

Me; make her happy. I

want her heart. 67

Tshidi

It's been two days without seeing Nathi. I've been trying to call
him but he doesn't take my calls.

My Parents have been sticking to me like warm honey and my
siblings keep trying to feed me.

The girls have come to visit a few times, but we couldn't
really discuss anything because my parents haven't left me
alone for even a second. My mother even insists on bathing
me. Like really

Her; Tshidi open
your mouth Me;

Ma. I can feed
myself

Her; stop being

stubborn and just eat I

roll my eyes and open

my mouth

Her; that's better... and don't roll your eyes at me young lady.

Me; (giggles)

Her; how you feeling?

Me; Fine... don't you want to go home? I'm sure you miss your bed

Her; I'm fine right here... now open wide. I don't want you starving my grandchild

I nearly roll my eyes again, but this time she smacks my hand before I can even do the first roll
Me; Maaaa. That hurt

Her; you were about to roll your eyes again
Me; yahh I was

Her; you remind me so much of your father
Me; ma. Dad is right here

My dad laughs and she rolls her eyes and continues to stuff porridge down my throat.

I smell Nathi before he even walks in. My heart sinks almost immediately. My mom gives me a strange look.

Him; Sanibonani

My parents both greet back. I just keep quite.

He walks over to me and my first instinct is to hug him, but I don't. This man has disappeared for more than 2 days while I've been sitting in the hospital, and now he decided to come back looking like a sex God and I'm supposed to melt. Nxa

He kisses my forehead and I

feel our baby move Him;

How you feeling?

I don't answer him. I just stares into his eyes. I don't know what I'm feeling. I'm angry, I'm hurt, I miss him and I just want him to tell me that everything is going to be ok.

He stares back at me. Doesn't say anything. He just mirrors me. We have one of our many unspoken conversations. He knows how I'm feeling without me even telling him. I know he's scared by just looking at him.

My parents don't interrupt us. They just swiftly walk out. I don't even notice, until we both snap out of our daze when my nurse walks in.

Her; Mrs Khumalo how
are you feeling Me;
fine.

Her; would you like to take a bath
Me; I've already showered

and eaten breakfast She

looks at me shocked and

walks out.

Him; I know you're mad at me

Me; where were you

Him; I had some business to handle

Did this man really just sit here and tell me he had business to take care of while I sat here being struck by needle after

needle?

Me; mhmmm

Him; Tshidi.... I was

just.... I was Me;

don't bother

Him; Tshidi...

I feel the baby kick and I put

my hand over my belly Him;

what is it?

Me; nothing. He's just been

moving a lot lately Him;

that's a good thing isn't it?

Me; mhmm I guess. I just want to go home now

Him; not till we've

found you a heart Me;

about that....

Him; give me a second

He stand up and answers his phone. I can't hear the conversation but whatever is being said seems to be good news because he breaks into a smile.

Him; Good. You have a week. I

want this done ASAP He ends

his call and gives me a bear hug

Me; and

that

Him;

nothing.

Me;

Nathi?

Him; Tshidi?

Me; what's happening?

Him; nothing. I'm just happy.

Me; ok

Him; my parents are on they way

Me; that's nice. But when

do I get out of here Him; we

have to find you a heart

first,.

Me;

about

that Him;

what is it

Me; Nathi I don't want a heart

He

freeze

s Him;

what?

Me; I don't want to deliver this baby early. I want us to keep the baby in as long as possible and let me

die peacefully. I don't want to go in

and out of surgery. Him; Tshidi...

You're having the surgery

Me; Nathi... think of the baby

Him; that is exactly what I'm thinking about. What do you want

me to do with a new born baby on my

own?

Me; Nathi you'll have my parents and yours.

He interrupts me obviously annoyed

Him; I'm not having this conversation. I'm going to work. I'll see you later

He takes his keys and walks out slamming the door. I let out a huge sigh. I don't know why I thought this would be easy. I should've known he would act like this. He isn't seeing the bigger picture. Instead he just thinks I'm doing this out of selfishness because I don't want to fight, but the truth is I don't want my baby to be born too early. I want Lethu to live in place of me. I could never live with myself if anything happened to him and I survived. That would be my worst nightmare.

68

Nathi

Tshidi must honestly be crazy if she thinks that even for a second that I'm going to let her die.

She honestly is crazy. It must be those damn meds that they are pumping into her. Which is why I need to get Thandiwe's heart ASAP.

I arrive at HQ and go to Thandiew's cell. We've decorated her room and put in a comfy bed and nice sheets and duvets. She eats healthy food and the bruises are starting to fade. I've even made sure she has a masseuse on hand.

She sees me
and smiles

Her; hi baby

Me; mhmm

Her; I just had lunch. I had wrap it was amazing

Me; I'm glad you enjoyed it

Her; Thank you for decorating my room for me. It

reminds me a lot of our room at our house
Me; how are you feeling

Her; better now that I

know that I'm forgiven Me;

I've got a gift for you

Her eyes

light up

Her; what

Me; here

I hand her photo frame of our son and she smiles

Her; I can't wait till I get to go home

and we can be a family Me; me too.

But first you have to do me a favour

Her; anything

Me; I need you to sit tight for just a week.

After that you will come home Him;

anything for you my love

I kiss her on the cheek and leave her smiling. I close the door behind me and shake my head. If only she knew that in fact a week from now she would be dead.

I leave HQ and go straight to Hlokes's house. I need to discuss the report that he called me about this morning.

I get to his house and I'm firstly greeted by Boni

Her; Hi Hi Mr

Khumalo Me;

Hi Boni

Her; Come in... I've

made lunch Me; oh

that's very kind,

but I

She pulls my hand towards the dining room

Her; You're wife gave me strict instructions to make sure you eat

Me; yes mam

I sit next to Hlokes and dig in. I don't think I actually realised how hungry I was till I saw the food

Boni dishes up for us, and thankfully leaves with

Owami to go and check on Tshidi Me; now that

we know that Thandiwe is a match. How much

longer

Him; I'm running tests in the baby. Once I'm 100% sure that the baby can handle being born early

Me; Ok,

Him; but you realise I need Tshidi's go ahead before I can operate on her

Me; no you don't. I've told you what you're going to do and that is exactly what you will do. Tshidi is in no state to make such decisions

Him; Dude, Tshidi is fine. She is more

than ready to make decisions Is top

eating and feel my heart pounding

Me; Bullet. I want my wife to have that surgery. I'm handing you a heart on a silver platter, what more do you want

Him; Nathi, Tshidi has just as much a say as you do, and as my patient I have to make sure I act in her best interest at all times.

I stand up and take my keys. I'm not listening to this bullshit for even a second more. I will not let Tshidi do this.

I want to go home but it doesn't exactly feel like home, because my mother has taken over. I don't want to go to HQ because I don't want to see that wicked woman so I go to the only place I feel close to Tshidi without actually being with her. I go to church.

I sit at the very back of the church. I don't pray, I just sit and wonder why God is doing this to me. Am I such a bad man that I deserve to be punished over and over again? Why couldn't he just let Tshidi and I be happy? I know I was wrong for keeping secrets, and for reacting the way I did when I found out about Thandiwe, but do I honestly have to lose Tshidi as payment for all my sins?

I don't know how much time has passed, but over an hour later I go back to the hospital.

I find Tshidi watching some ratchet reality tv show

Me; have
you eaten

Her; Hi

Nathi

Me; do you

need anything

Her; Yes

Me;

what

Her;

you

I look up at her

Her; I need you to stop trying to protect me, I need you to be here with me, I need you to stop trying to be a super hero and just be here. I need you to be here with me

I think of the past week and how things just changed from bad to worse and somehow I end up making things worse

Me; I'm sorry

Her; Nathi

ME; Tshidi I don't know what else to do. I'm out of options

She opens her arms and moves over making space for me. I hesitate at first but I honestly miss her too much. I lay next to her and put her head on my chest.

Her; feel this

She takes my hand and puts it on her belly. I feel Lethu moving. His kicks are strong just like he's mother's slaps.

Her; he always kicks when you're around. I think he knows that you're here

Me; Tshidi

Her; that's why I want you to promise me that you'll think of our baby before making any decisions

ME; Tshidi

Her; Shhhh. Let's sleep

I hold her as she sleeps. I keep my hand on her belly and think of what she has asked of me. I know she thinks she is doing what's right for our baby, but I won't let her die. Not ever

Tshidi

A week passes and Nathi has still not mentioned the issue about my heart. I think he is finally accepting my decision of choosing Lethu over me.

I've spoken to Hlokes and he is well aware of my decision. I'm hoping when the time comes he will be my doctor more than be a friend to Nathi

Both our parents have been here since ive been in hospital. His mother cooks way too much food, while my mother bakes too much cakes.

Thoko and Siseko have both gone down to KZN. Nathi is going crazy with his parents living with him. He says I need to get better and come home. I don't think he really understands that I'm not going to be coming home. See I'm not afraid to die. Death for me isn't scary. It's my way of going to my maker, my only fear is Aya.

I know she will have Nathi and my parents, but how will she cope without having me, but at the same time how do I lose Lethu because of myself. isnt it unfair

Him; a penny for your thoughts

I smile as he walks in with what smells like fresh muffins

Me; that
smells good

Him; chock

chip

ME; oh my God.... Give me

He smiles and hands me a still very worm muffin. I take a bite and I melt it's so good

Him; how are you feeling

Me; amazing. I don't see why I'm still here

Him; i just saw the scans of my little man. He looks more and more like me with each passing second

Me; oh please. My son looks nothing like you. He is a spitting image of me

Him; well I guess we'll find out soon enough

Me; Nathi I'm only 6 and a half months. That's hardly soon

The minute I say the words I swallow them.

Me; Nathi

Him; baby

Me; we spoke

about this

no we didn't.

Me; But

Him; you better eat up. Your surgery is tomorrow.

I throw my muffin at him. If I could I would get out this bed beat the hell out of him.

Him; I'll take that as you're not happy

Me; I swear Nathi

Him; I'll see you later. Take care of my son

He leaves me yelling and screaming at him. He doesn't understand this. He doesn't understand what it will do me if my baby doesn't make it. He doesn't understand.

Hlokes rushes in as the mad woman in me continues to unleash. He puts something in my drip and in no time I'm dozing off to sleep.

69

I Leave Tshidi and go to HQ. Bullet and the team are already there when I arrive. Me; nails we

ready

Him;

yes boss

Me;

good

I leave him and head over to Thandiwe She smiles when I walk in

Her; I was wondering where you were

Me; I'm sorry I'm late

Her; its ok. Just get me out of here

I take her hand and we walk out. She stills the minute she sees Hlokes

Her; what's going on?

Me; I'm sorry but I have no other choice

Nails injects her and she stares into my eyes as she is taken into the ambulance.

The team and I follow the ambulance. We arrive at the hospital and she is immediately prepped for surgery. I sit in the passage as I wonder if I'm doing the right thing

Him; She's settled

Me; good

Him; are you sure

about this? Me;

yes

Him; you know once we start we can't reverse

Me; yes

Him; ok. So I'll get the team to start medicating her. When she's lost all consciousness we will proceed

with the final step of

removing her heart Me;

ok

Him; Dude

Me; now Hlokes. Proceed. I'll be with my wife

I leave him and go to Tshidi's room. I know to some I may be heartless, but this is something I have to

do.

I get to Tshidi and she is thankfully fast asleep. I sit with her and end up dozing off

I'm woken up hours later by the sound of feet in the room. I look up and see nurses walking in and out

Her; sorry sir. We didn't mean to wake you

Me; its fine

Her; The Dr wants to see you

I give Tshidi a kiss on the cheek and leave

Hlokes; we're ready for Tshidi, we're starting with caesarean then we will do the heart surgery

Me; how's Thandiwe

Him; as soon as I'm done with the caesarean, I'll get Dr

Manasa to start with the removal of the organ from

Thandiwe. We'll need to keep Tshidi in an induced coma till

we can place the heart in her

Me; tell me the truth. Do you think she'll make it

Him; yes. I'm going to do the best I can to keep them both

alive. But for now get ready. In another hour you'll be a father

I freshen up and immediately then head back to the hospital. I

am in the room when is surgery on Tshidi starts.

The moment they pull my little man I hear a little wail. Hlokes

shows him to me and I smile. I want to hold him, but he is

whisked away so quickly.

I follow him and I am in absolute awe as I see the nurses put

machines and wires all over my baby. But as expected Lethu as

Tshidi calls him as an absolute fighter. In no time he is settled

and is sucking on his thumb.

I go back to check on Tshidi and she is already in recovery. She

is in the induced coma because tonight we have her heart

surgery.

I just hope that after all is said and done, I will be able to say I made the right decision.

I leave Tshidi and go over to Thandiwe's room. She has already been prepped for the surgery which begins in exactly 15 minutes

I sit next her and as much as I hate her. I hate that this is how she goes. To think there was a time I would've given myself for the very woman in front of me, and now here I am getting ready to switch off the very machine that is

keeping her alive Hlokes

walks in as I wipe a tear

away Him; its time

I nod

I stand up and stand next the machines.

Him; we need you out of here the minute the machines start to beep. We only have a few minutes to get the heart from Thandiwe

Me; ok

I put my hand on the machine, but I don't pull the switch.

I look at Thandiwe and then at Hlokes. He nods and I pull the switch. My heart leaps to my throat as I walk out with the medical team rushing in. I feel a cold shiver down my back.

There's no turning back now.

I've taken so many lives before, but all those times it was due to being provoked or me just doing my job, I never in a million years thought I would be taking the life of a woman that I thought at one stage was the love of my life.

It's funny how life can change because here I have killed her

for my new wife who also happens to be her sister.

I walk towards Tshidi's room and I see doctors running in and out. I speed up and find Hlokes trying to revive her. I feel the air in my lungs leave me. What the hell have I done?

I try coming closer but things start to get fuzzy. I feel my security team pulling me away. The doors shut and I am stuck in the passage facing the one thing I thought I could never face. Losing Tshidi.

I don't know how long Hlokes is in there but by the time he comes out I feel like I am a dead man walking.

Him; we're moving up her op. I need to get that heart into her as in yesterday

Me; do whatever needs to be done. Is she ok

Him; she's stable, but I need to move as in yesterday

Me; Hlokes...

Him; you should go home and rest. It's a long procedure. I'll call you if anything
Me; I'm not leaving Tshidi

Him; ok. At least go into my office and rest. You look like a Ghost.
Me; thanks.

But I need to see Tshidi first

Him; she's being prepped for Surgery. You'll see her after the op

He leaves me and I go to his office. I put my head on his table and make a pray. Tshidi needs to make it out of this alive.

I must've drifted off to sleep because Hlokes is waking me up

Him; You've been asleep for hours

Me; how did the surgery go?

Him; it went well.

Tshidi is in recovery

Me; oh Thank God

Him; Ill speak to you a bit later. I need

to go check on your son Me; can I go

see Tshidi?

Him; yes, but she needs to rest and for Gods sake go home and take a shower

He leaves and I rush down to Tshidi's room. I hate seeing her draped in machines. But at least so far she is responding to the heart and for now that's all that matters.

70

I hear my phone ringing. It's the middle of the night. I remember coming home to shower, I lay down for 2 minutes and I must've fallen asleep because now I'm being woken up by Hlokes calling me.

My heart immediately falls. Tshidi

Me; What

Him; You need

to get here Me;

whats wrong

Him; Its Lethu

I jump up from the bed and grab my keys. I pray over and over that this isn't what I think, but deep down I know I messed up.

I arrive at the hospital and run to Hlokes office. I don't knock. I just walk in Me; where's my son

Him; Nathi

Me; Hlokes where is my son

Him; I'm sorry. We tried everything we could

He continues talking but I don't hear him. This can't be happening. Tshidi will never forgive me

Him; Axe

Me; what happened

Him; his heart just stopped. We tried reviving him, but there was not much more to be done Me; shit Hlokes.

What am I going to say to Tshidi?

Him; Nathi. You need to calm down

Me; Calm down? My son Hlokes. My son

I'm not one to really break down, but the weight that I've been carrying isn't one I can stomach any longer.

I leave the hospital and drive straight to HQ.

Me; Nails. I

need my axes

Him; Basement

Me; I don't want to be interrupted

Him; boss. I

Me; don't

I leave him and head to the basement. I want to deal with the pain and this is the only way I know how. I spend hours in the basement. I do what I do best and that is zone out.

Completely.

Him; Boss

I turn around and find the basement in a mess. I've ripped through everything. Equipment is all over the floor all done with my axe

Me; get someone to clean this up

I drop my axe and head home. Its time I let the parents know

I get home and find both our parents having dinner. I greet and go have a shower. I get dressed then go back downstairs.

My mother dishes up for me but I don't eat.

Instead I just play around with my food Her; Nathi.

You haven't touched your food

Me; I'm not

hungry Her;

Hows

Tshidi?

Me; she's fine. she's responding well to the heat

Tshidis mom; Im so grateful you were

able to find a heart in time Me; me too

Makhumalo; Hows the baby

Me; the baby's dead

They all look at me with eyes wide open. I didn't mean to blurt it

out like that, but I just did.

I see both our mothers eyes start to water, and I immediately leave the room. I don't have the energy to deal with their tears.

I go to our room and shut the door, and just cry. It's as though Tshidi and I won't ever find peace. Just when things were starting to look up, now I have to deal with the fact that not only did I murder my wife's sister but because of my decision our son is gone.

Tshidi remained in the induced coma for over a week. I on the other hand had to spend my time organising a funeral for our little man.

I've spent a lot of time with him. I've held his little cold body and for the life of me I can't help but question this so called God. How do I tell my wife that I saved her in place of our son? How do I tell her that I did the one thing she begged me not to do?

Tshidi

Waking up wasn't as easy as I thought it would be. the more I breathed the weaker I felt... the only good thing about opening my eyes was that Nathi was there.

I faintly smiled. He returned my smile, but not with as much conviction. I tried sitting up but Hlokes told me to sit still.

Hlokes; Tshidi I need you to do a favour for me. I need you to blink twice if you can hear me I blink and even roll my eyes at him. He smiles

Hlokes; I need you to move your legs for me I wiggled my toes and he nodded

Him; your fingers?

I slowly pick up my hand and show him the middle finger They both laugh

Hlokes; good to see you haven't lost your sense of humour I giggle but I can't laugh too loudly because of my chest.

Hlokes; the operation went well Tshidi. You did great. Now I need you to rest I try talking, but he shakes his head

Hlokes; take things easily. I need you to take extra care of that heart. You're still very fragile
I nod

Him; good. Now I'm going to leave you with your husband.

Remember no talking. Just have one of those many unspoken conversations that you like to have.

I smile and he walks out.

Nathi sits next to me but doesn't say anything. He just holds my hand. I want to ask him about the baby but I decide to listen to Hlokes and just be still. Hopefully tomorrow I will be able to see my bundle of joy.

71

Tshidi has been doing well so far. It's been 4 days since waking her from the induced coma, she's been asking about the baby and Hlokes has told me not to upset her, so for now we just keep telling her to get better.

But today Hlokes has given me the go ahead to her. I've been sitting here on her bed as her mother helps her take a bath.

Hlokes has a team of doctors on hand, in case she doesn't take it well, but he says that he is certain she will be ok.

They come out the bathroom and she is dressed in nice warm PJ's. I remember those from the first night I spent at her house. To think that it's exactly a year since we met, and already we have come across obstacles that are meant to kill us, and yet here we are.

Her; my scar looks horrible

I see tears in her eyes. Her voice is low, but I hear her

Me; it's your war scar. You should be proud of it

She gives me a look that puts a smile on my face. Her mother helps her into bed and I help fix her pillows Her; am I going to be able to see Lethu today?

I feel my heart drop into the pit of my stomach

Her; I'm feeling better Nathi. Please tell Hlokes. Even if it's just for a minute

Her mother looks at me.

Me; Tshidi.... Lethu He

Her; I promise Nathi. I'll just see him for 5 minutes and then come back to bed.

Me; Tshidi

She looks up at me. Our eyes lock for a moment and immediately she knows Her; No

Me; Tshidi

Her; No. NATHI.... NOOOO..... I TOLD YOU

Me; Tshidi I know.

Her; NO NATHI.... You did this to me. I told you. I told you... Why don't you ever listen to me?

ME; Tshidi calm down...

Her; Calm down? Calm down? How Nathi.... You killed my child. How am I supposed to be ok with that?

Me; Tshidi

Her; OUT.... Get out Nathi..... Now

I stand up and look at her. For the first time since meeting

Tshidi I see nothing but hatred in her eyes Tshidi

I try calming down but the sharp pain my chest keeps getting to me. I put on the gas mask and take deep breathes. I can't believe he allowed this to happen. I told him I couldn't live without my son.

I see Hlokes and a team of Doctors running in. I don't remember much after that. All I know is that now I am awake and all I feel is Hollow. I feel lost. I feel like death robbed me.

Nathi sits next to me. His head is my bed. I for one do not understand why he is here. I specifically told him to leave and yet here he sits

He feels me move and immediately jumps up. He looks at me with hollow eyes

Him; you're awake

I look away. I can't look at him. He reminds me of what I have lost

Him; Tshidi I'm sorry. I've messed up

Me; you

should go

Him; Tshidi

Me; Nathi. I can't look at you, I told you (sniff) I told you I wanted Lethu to live. But you yet again took decisions for me. Decisions you had no right taking

Him; I thought I was doing what's best for us Tshidi

Me; How? By taking
my son from me? Him;

Tshidi

Me; go Nathi... Go to wherever you want to go. I never want to
see you again

Him; Tshidi please. we
need to discuss this Me;
there is nothing to
discuss.

Him; I'm sorry

I look away because I can't bear to look at him being broken. I
don't want to feel sorry for him, when he is the one who did
this. My child. He's gone. All because of Nathi

He stands up and is about to walk out, but he turns and looks at
me

Him; the funeral is tomorrow. It's only going to be us and our
parents

I look away. This can't be happening. Why would God want to
hurt me so badly? What have I done in
this life that would warrant me to lose my child?

I sit in the hospital room crying. I haven't eaten or even
wanted to eat. All I wanted was to hold my baby. I wanted to
smell him. I wanted to see him take his first step. I wanted to
hear his cry. How does one get over that?

I don't know when but all I know is Nathi is here again
He takes my hand in his. He doesn't say anything, but for the
first time we cry together. I want to be angry at him. I want
to scream at him, but for now all I can do is mourn the death

of my baby. A baby that I will ever be able to raise.

Nathi

Seeing the pain that I caused is something I don't think I will ever be able to come back from. Tshidi has been crying since telling her about Lethu. She hasn't spoken too much. Even when we buried him, she just sat and cried. She didn't see him. She didn't chose a casket, nothing, she just cried.

I wanted so badly to take the pain from her, but this was something I just couldn't take from her.

Today is her first day back at home. She is in our room and still looks gloomy.

It's been over a week since we've buried Lethu. She doesn't speak much. She mostly just looks out the window. It's like she is at another universe altogether.

I dish up the soup her mother has made for us and take it to our room. I find her exactly where I left her an hour ago. On a rocking chair next to the window.

She is in such another planet she doesn't even comprehend that I am in the room with her.

I place the soup on the side board and go stand in front of her.

Me; Tshidi you
need to eat Her;

silence

Me; Tshidi

She looks up

slowly Her; I

want a

divorce

The look in Nathis eyes will forever haunt me. He looks like I've just killed a part of him. I didn't mean to really. But I'm just too broken to ever consider playing happy family again.

I dont know what to say or what to do. I just want someone to remove this paint in my borrowed heart. I want to hold my son. What did we do to ever deserve such pain?

He doesn't respond to the bomb I just dropped. Instead he looks me dead in the eyes and says "not in a million years"

He walks out leaving me to my miserable self. I don't know what to do or say. Nathi has hurt me beyond repair, and honestly I don't know if I'll ever get over losing my son.

I eat the soup that he's bought up for me. I eat it and then take my meds. For I second I consider just taking all the pills at once. Maybe if I was dead I would be able to see my baby. But then a picture of Aya flashes. I think I'm dreaming but then she comes running towards me.

She hugs me and i hold her a but longer than I would normally. I look up at her with tears in my eyes. Me: when did you arrive?

Her: just now. Daddy wanted to surprise you

I hold her again and for the first time I feel my heart smiling. Her: daddy says you had an operation

Me: yes my love. But it's nothing to worry about Her: is it sore?

Me: no. Not

anymore

Her: I've
missed you

Me: I've missed you more. Maybe you
should come back home She shakes

her head smiling

Her: I love my school. Plus the science lab is the best in the
country. No ways I'm leaving all that Me: Aya you do know
that you're just in grade 3 right? You don't have to put so
much pressure on yourself

She rolls her eyes at me.

I smell him before he even walks in the door. My heart
immediately drops into the pit of my stomach Him: Aya.

Olwetho is downstairs

Her; oh yah. I've got a project that

he's helping me with She jogs

downstairs with a smile as big as a

mountain itself. Him: have you

taken your pills?

I nod.

Me: thank you for brining Aya home

He looks down at his feet

Him; how long are you
going to hate me? Me: I
don't hate you

Him: Tshidi I can see it in your eyes. You can't even look
me in the eye. If I touch you you freeze. Me: it's not like
that

Him: Tshidi I'm sorry. I'm sorry I didn't listen. I'm sorry I did
what I wanted. I was just so scared to lose you. I couldn't face
telling Aya that you were gone. How were we supposed to
move on without you? Me: but Nathi

Him: no Tshidi. We need you just as much as you needed
lethu. It's not fair for you to blame me. I fucking blame
myself enough

Me: I don't know what to think Nathi. I just want my son. I
wanted you to respect my wishes. But seeing Aya I don't know
how I thought I could leave her, and at the same time I'll never
see or hold my son. I'll never get to hear his cry. Nothing

Him: I know Tshidi. But his death a was beyond my control. I
would've given my life for his any day. But I would do this all
over agAin. If I had a choice Tshidi I would still chose you. I
know it's cruel, but i would rather die than have to lose you.

He moves closer. I immediately tense up. He holds my
hand I flinch. He notices and a wave of disappointment
fills his eyes. He takes a step back and clears his throat.

Him: I'm going out
for a few hours. Me:
where to

He gives me an inquisitive look. I don't know why I'm asking him. An hour ago I asked him for a divorce and now here I was asking him where he is going.

He doesn't answer me. Instead he just walks out.

*****Nathi*****

I don't know where I'm going. I don't want to see the guys. They have pity written all over them. All I want is to breath. I've been holding my breath in for so long. Now I just want to be left alone.

I drive for about an hour. I find myself parked at pub. It's Friday night and some how the crowd has come out in numbers. Drinking wasn't what I planned on doing whe I left home. I just wanted to leave the house and take a break, but now that I'm parked here a drink doesn't feel like such a bad idea.

I message my security team and tell them to stand back.

I don't want to see them. I just want to have a drink in peace.

I walk into the pub and the atmosphere is on another level. It's the normal Friday crowd. The young professionals out to have a good time.

I grab a seat at the bar and signal for the barman

Me: your finest whiskey on the rocks

and keep them coming He nods and

pours me a drink

He hands me my first one and i knock it
back without thinking twice. Me: another
one

He obliges and i knock back yet another one.

Her: if you don't take it easy, you'll leave here crawling on both
knees

I look up and see a woman I've never met before. She's not
just beautiful. She's a creature of beauty. Her dark skin is
absolutely flawless.

Me: it's been one
of those days Her:
wanna talk about
it?

Me: no thank you

She smiles and swings the other way to face her friend.

The barman hands me another drink and this time I savour the
taste. I think of Tshidi and the past few weeks. We've missed
our anniversary and our birthdays. Who knew so much could
happen in just a year? And now we're headed to our second
year together and already she wants a divorce.

I knock back my 6th drink and still I'm
not as numb as I want to be. Her: this is

my favourite song

Me: that's nice

Her: that's the part where you're supposed to ask me if I want to
dance

She gives me a warm smile and somehow I can't stop myself

from smiling back.

She stands up and takes my hand pulling me towards the middle of the dance floor. She puts my hand behind her back and puts hers around my neck. She has beautiful dark eyes and somehow they feel like they're pulling me in.

We slow dance without really saying much. Her:
you haven't asked me my name

Me: you didn't really give me a chance to
Her: well it's Mapule

Me: I'm Nathi

Her: nice to meet you Nathi

Me: what's a girl like you doing dancing with a troubled man like me

Her: well. I can see that you're troubled. Maybe I have a thing for troubled guys.

She winks at me and puts her head on my chest. I don't move her. I just allow myself to be in this moment.

Mapule and I have drink after drink together. The conversation flows. She isn't exactly the shy type. She's fun, energetic and has a wicked sense of humour.

Before we both know it it's already 2am. The bar is closing and her friends have left.

Her: it was nice
meeting you Me:
how are you
getting home Her:

I'll uber
Me: don't worry about it. I'll drive you

She smiles and takes my hand as I walk her to my car. She jumps in and sits in the front. She has a short skirt on and i get to see her thighs.

I compose myself and
drive her home. We get
to her gate but she
doesn't move

Her: would you like to come
in for some coffee Me no
thank you. I should get
going

Her face drops

Her:I'll see
you around

Me: not likely

Her: in that case I deserve a kiss goodbye

Me: Mapule. I can't ... I know I led
you on, but I'm married Her: I

didn't hear you say happily married

Me: it's complicated

Her: well in that case here

She takes my phone and

puts in her number. Her:

call me If you ever need

me

Me: thanks

She climbs out the car and i drive away. A part of me wants to turn back and drown myself in her. But a bigger part of me regrets the night as it is.

Tshidi

It's been hours since Nathi left. I've

made supper and Aya is in bed. I've tried

falling asleep but i can't seem to keep

Nathi out my mind.

I hear here his car in the driveway. I look at the time and its already 5am.

I get in the cover and manage to doze off to sleep almost

immediatley. I have no energy to fight with him about his

whereabouts especially since I've asked him for a divorce.

Which I know is crazy but a part of me feels like we've drifted

too far to work things out, but deep down past all of the rubble

I still love him as much as I did for the very first time.

73

(im so sorry)

I sit on a chair besides Tshidi's side of the bed and I just stare at her. I can tell she's pretending to sleep. I don't say anything. I

just sit and wait for her to acknowledge me.

Eventually she opens her eyes and just stares back at me. I

know she's mad just by looking at her. Me: I nearly sleep

with some random girl

Her eyes shoot open. Her pupils dilate and her teeth

clench. I don't know why I blurted out what I almost did.

But I just don't think I could've carried yet another secret.

Her: get out

Me: I'm not going anywhere

Her: now Nathi. For your own sake get the hell out my house

Me: Tshidi, I refuse to leave. I refuse to keep apologising. I

nearly slept with that girl because she fucking listened to me for

2 seconds. You can't even let me get a word in. All , you do is

blame me for what? For saving you?

She gets out the blankets and tries to storm out but i beat her

to the door. She's not walking out of this one. We will fight. We

will break the doors. But she won't leave this room without a

resolution

Her: Nathi

Me: Tshidi when you walk out that door your don't come

back. When you wAlk out we're done She stills Instantly.

Me: we vowed to be in this together. You promised me you

would never leave. Till death do us part Tshidi. That's what

you promised, and now here you want to leave. Why did you

lie

Her: Nathi

Me: no Tshidi.

You lied to me

Her: I ment those

vows. It just

Me: what? You think Im not hurting? You think i dont wish my son had lived? Tshidi stop being so selfish and for once look at things from my point of view

I see her face fall. She has tears on her eyes. I move closer and wrap my arms around her. She tries to fight me off but i don't let hee . I hold her and for the first time in whY feels like forever she holds me back and we both just cry together.

Tshidi

Since finding out about lethu, I've never seen Nathi break down like he did. At first I didn't want him to even touch me, but i couldn't fight him off. I eventually gave in and we both just cried. I don't know how I've gone so long without him. I've been so selfish, I haven't even for a second thought about how he might be taking the whole thing. I'm sure he already feels guilty and my blaming him probably just makes him feel worse.

I don't know how we ended up in bed, but were

both here and i am in his arms. Him: I'm sorry

Tshidi. I don't know what I could've done to save

him.

The way he says this breaks me. I can tell how guilty he must feel.

I look up at him and see just a shadow of the man I fell for. His light in his eyes has dimmed. His hard voice is that of a mouse and his smile is non-existent.

I don't know why I hadn't noticed this. Have I really been that absorbed in my sorrow that I couldn't see that he needed me?

Me: Nathi I'm so sorry I blamed you for what happened with lethu. I was just so hurt that he was gone.

But I should've never blamed you. It

wasn't ever your fault. He looks

away

Me: I don't know how we're going to move on. So much has been said and done. How do we just move on

Him: maybe we should take some time away. Go to the beach. Just breathe

Me: Nathi you haven't been to work in 8 weeks.

Do you think you need to go back Him: don't

worry about that. I'll handle it

Me: ok

Aya barges in and runs jumping onto our bed. She pushes me and Nathi apart so

she can lay in between us. Her:

daddy, I'm supposed to be in class in

exactly 3 hours Me: you go I go back

so soon?

Him: she's got exams coming up. She

can't afford to miss school Her: I'm

going to shower. Daddy please hurry

up

She jumps out of bed and rushes to her room.

Him: I'm going to get ready, you need some sleep. You haven't slept all night. I've got a meeting with Ghost right after I drop Aya off, so you'll have plenty of time to sleep

Me: ok

Him: sis Mavis is downstairs making breakfast.

Make sure you take your pills Me: Nathi go.. I'll

be fine

He kisses my forehead and gets up to go shower. I don't say anything about the little bomb he dropped about nearly sleeping with some bitch.

I plan on addressing that as soon as he's back. But for now I need sleep.

I've dozed off before he's even out the shower. I just vaguely remember getting a kiss from Aya. After that it was lights out for me.

Nathi

Once Aya and Olwetho are safely in the air to CT, I leave HQ and go to Siya's house.

I know just by the way he sounded that he was aware of my actions from the previous night.

I arrive at his house and go straight to his office. He's already waiting for me. He has the whole team there.

Me; fellas

Him; dude what the fuck were you thinking? You know you can't just go around doing stupid things like this

He throws a picture of me

and Mapule at me Me; shit

Him; I had to have the entire team working round the clock to fix your mess

Me; dude, I'm sorry ok. I just need some space and somehow I found myself in that bar with that girl, but nothing happened. I promise

Him; you owe me R5Bar. That's how much we've spent to keep this under the radar

Me; you know im good on it

He laughs and I know he's over his little rant.

Him; now that that's done. I think we need to all set up a Strat meeting. It's time we move to the second phase of our

presidency.

Me; about that

Him; what

Me; I was actually planning on
stepping down as vice Him; you
must be joking

Me; I'm serious. Tshidi and I need time away. I was thinking of
taking her to my house in France for a
while

Him; what's a while

Me; I don't know. Till we are back to where we were before the
whole Thandiwe mess

Him; I cant have you stepping down. Ill have Mthunzi fill in for
you. You have 3 months for both of you to lick your wounds.
After that you both come back and you carry on with the vows
you made to this country.

Me; fine

Him; good. Now go back to your wife. I don't want her hunting
me down with a knife for keeping you to
long

They all laugh and somehow i feel better than I did when I
walked in

I leave the office and head to the car. As I walk past the
lounge I see all the ladies there having tea. Me; Ladies

Them; Hi

Nathi

Boni;

Hows

Tshidi

Me; shes getting there

Rifiloe; she isn't taking our calls. We were hoping to see her

Me; she's been a bit distant from everyone. Im taking her to France for a few weeks. Maybe after that she will be back to normal

Busi; I heard about that bitch from the bar. If you dare hurt Tshidi Nathi. I swear we'll kill you

Dourine; how could you? You know if Tshidi saw

those photos it would break her Me; ladies, can we

not do this? I didn't sleep with the girl.

Boni; mxm

I walk out of there so fast. I know if I stay any

longer they will probably eat me alive. I arrive

home and I find Tshidi in the bath. I walk in and

find her staring at her scar Me; its not as bad as it

looks

She looks up at me and I know

she doesn't believe me Her;

you're just saying that

Me; baby you need to leave that alone. It doesn't take away
your beauty. You're still the same beautiful

Tshidi I fell in love with

over a year ago Her;

who was the donor

I look down

Me; I don't know. I

asked not to be told

Her; well I guess that's

for the best.

I let out a sigh of relief. Hopefully this is the last time she will ask
about this.

74

Nathi helps me get dressed after he has redressed my mound.
He insists on cooking dinner for me. It's weird how he is the
one always taking care of me. 1st it was the time Msizi beat
me, then when he kidnapped me and now after my heart

operation. Is it normal for a couple to go through so much in just a year? We didn't even get to enjoy our honeymoon period.

Him: a penny for your thoughts?

I look up and he's got a bowl of spaghetti Bolognese in his hand. I hadn't realized I had been daydreaming for that long.

I take the bowl from him and instantly my mouth waters. Him: you seemed deep in thought

Me: I'm

fine Him:

talk to

me.

Me: I've just been thinking about the past couple of months. Him: (sigh)

it's been one hell of a ride

Me: yah

We eat our dinner and watch TV. We don't say much. I think we're both just drained.

I'm about to get up and take our dishes to the kitchen when his phone rings. He takes it out but doesn't answer. He looks at the caller ID then puts it on silence.

I look at him expecting an answer but he doesn't say anything. Instead he just looks at the TV.

Me: and that?

Him: nothing

important Me:

what do you

mean?

Him: Tshidi. It's just the girl from the bar. I have no idea how she got my number

I feel my blood boiling. I instantly sweat. That bitch doesn't

know me. No one messes with me when it comes to Nathi.

Me: give me the phone

He looks at me but doesn't hand it over. This

man must not test me. Not today Me: Nathi give

me the damn phone

Him: Tshidi relax. I'll deal with it

Me: if you don't give me that damn phone I swear Nathi I'll flipping kill someone

He smiles and actually laughs at me. Honestly this man has

lost it. He actually wants me to lose it Me: nxa

I grab his bowl and try walking to the kitchen. I need some space from him before I kill him, but he grabs them out my hand and puts them on the floor.

I try getting up but he pulls me onto his lap.

He has this stupid smile on his face and honestly I don't see anything funny.

I shifts me around until I'm sitting squat position on his lap facing him. He takes both my hands and holds them because I'm trying to fight him off

Him: Tshidi stop...

He says this but he continues to laugh, which just annoys me even more, but unfortunately for me he's way stronger than me, so I calm down and just look at him.

Me: let go

Him: baby... you don't have to be jealous. She isn't a factor
Me: did i say she was a factor? And no I'm not jealous

Him: ok... ok I'm sorry my love. I promise you I'll tell her to stop

Me: so now you want to speak to her? What love potion did she use on you?

Him: baby... the only woman I love is you. I don't think it's possible to ever love a woman as much as I love you.

I melt. Nathi always knows what to

say to make me feel better
Me: you

better deal with her before I cut off

your dick

He laughs out and I feel his manhood growing from underneath me. I take that as my cue to get off Him.

Him: where do you think you're going

Me: away from you and

your growing python
Him:

it's been a while

Me: I know

I lean in and for the first time in two months I have a glimmer of hope. I kiss him and give him a reminder of what

we haven't shared in a while

He tries to take off my

top but I stop him Him:

I'm sorry.. I didn't mean

to rush you

Me: I'm fine. I just don't want to take off my top

Him: I still think you're beautiful

Me: please Nathi... I can't.. I don't

want to see that scar Him: ok

I lean back in and we continue where we left off. The hunger in me to be one with him is too much. I

.cant wait for him, I'm already wet, all I want is him inside me.

I unzip his pants and he pulls them down. He doesn't take off my panties. My dress is already up to my hips. He moves my panties to the side and I lower myself onto him.

I gasp for air as he fills every inch of my body.

I look into his eyes and he reflects every emotion that I'm feeling.

I put my head on his shoulder and just take in the love I have for him. The love that scares me. The love that makes me want to kill a woman just because she showed Interest in him. The intensity of this moment. Its beautiful, but itr scares me too. It makes the butterflies in my stomach roam around at a crazy pace. I need him. I have to have him. Living without him is not an option.

He kisses my shoulder and I dig my nails into his skin. I start to move slowly. His hands are on my buttcheeks helping me. I feel myself start build and I ride him faster. He pinches my butt and we both go over the edge calling out each other's names.

My heart beats at a pace of a Zulu drum as I try to control my body which feels like I have just been electrocuted. My legs shake and I slowly dig out my nails from his back.

I look him in the eyes and I know that even if I tried. Nothing can possibly come between us. The same electricity we use to hurt each other also manages to pull us together.

Him: I love
you Me: I
love you
too

I don't want to get off Him, but we both need to get cleaned up. I get off and we go upstairs... We sit in the bath and I lay my head on his chest.

Him: I was thinking we should go to France

Me: I thought when you meant go away you were referring to cape town

Him: we have a house in France and you haven't even seen it. I think we need to get out of S.A. for a bit. Go somewhere where no one knows who we are. Have the honeymoon we've always wanted

Me: sounds tempting

Him: Aya closes school in a month. She can come straight to France when she's done with exams Me: what about

your job

Him: I told you not to worry

Me: well it looks like you have
this all planned out Him: yep.

Just say the word

Me: it would be nice to get out
of here for a while. Him: I take
it that's a yes

Me: no the condition that you
block that girl from the bar Him: I'll
get nails on it

Me: good. In that case France here we come
I splash him with a bit of
water and He tickles me. Me:

ok, ok, I'm sorry

Him: behave

Me: when do we
leave Him:

Thursday ok
with you?

Me: yes. It gives me enough time to do my hair and go
shopping. These braids need to go asap Him; I was also
thinking that we need to see a councillor. You know,
someone who can help us get through everything that
we've been through.

Me: I don't know
about that Him:
what do you
mean

Me: I just don't know how ready I am to see someone. Can we

play it by ear

Him: yes? But I just think that we need to start on a clean slate.
Let out every fear and emotion so that if we move on, we really
move on.

Me; ok

Him: thank you

I lay in his arms now in our bed. My head is on his chest and to be honest there is no place that I'd rather be. I know I still have unresolved feelings. I'm still angry at how he did things, at how controlling he is.

But hopefully with France we can truly move on

with our lives with no more secrets. 75

Waking up the following morning all I felt was a load off my shoulders. It's like I was carrying so much darkness inside of me, and now slowly all of that was fading. I look around but Nathi isn't in bed with me. I make the bed and head the bath. Once I'm done bathing and taking care of my wound I head to the kitchen to make some breakfast for myself. I've lost so much weight in the past 8 weeks and to be honest I think I look good.

Him; morning

I look up and Nathi is standing at the door

looking all sports model worthy ME; hi

Him; you look all nice and fresh. That's a pity.. I was hoping to get you all sweaty

He puts his sweaty arms around me and

I try tashing for the door. ME; Nathi

euww.. your literally dripping with

sweat

Him; all the more reason to take a bath with me.

Me; no can do. I'm going to do my hair

Him; but I miss you

Me; Nathi.. keep that thing that's pricking me away from me.

He lets go but turns me around to kiss me. I get a little taste of his salty lips and that alone makes me want to rip his pants off. But because of my horrid hair, I stop myself. I pull back slowly and he frowns at me

Him; I thought I had you there for a second

Me; nearly, but I'm more interested in doing my hair.

You'll get a nice taste of me in France Him; but that's tomorrow

Me' I know. You need to learn to behave

Him; ha a baby, that's just torture. Plain old torture

Me; well poor you

I see him pout and he leaves and goes to the bedroom with the biggest frown on his face. I giggle because of how much he looks like Siseko.

The minute that thought crossed my mind, I erased it. I don't want to even think of him.

Nathi comes down just as I finish making breakfast. He's still pouting but quite frankly I don't care.

I lay out his breakfast for

him and we dig in. Me; so

how long are we going to be

in France?

Him; as long as it takes for us to fix our marriage

He looks down and continues eating. Jeesh, like really. He's sulking over my body parts.

Me; have you spoken to Nails about that Tramp

Him; yes, he's blocked her

Me; let me see

I reach for his phone but he

grabs it off the table Me;

Nathi

Him; no Tshidi. I told you I would take care of it and I have. Why can't you believe me?

Me; stop preaching and give me the damn phone

Him; Tshidi you do know that there is such a

thing as Privacy in a marriage I look up at this

Judas in front of me and already, I can feel my

anger boiling

Me;

Privacy?

Him; yes

PRIVACY

Me; well in that case I guess my PRIVATE PARTS are off limits.

I stand up and leave him in the kitchen. If he wants to be shady then I can be just as shady. Nxa

I fetch my bag from our room, and I head to the kitchen to wash the dishes before I leave. I already have a roach named Nathi, I don't need

any more roaches all over the house. I find

Nathi still eating and sulking at the same

time

Him; where are you going

Me; its private and confidential

Him; Tshidi... im serious

ME; so am I

Him; youre

being unfair

Me; how?

Him; Tshidi my phone has my work on. Some of the things you know you aren't allowed to see. Why

cant you

accept that?

Me;

Mhmmm

Him; Tshidi what happened to you trusting me? I told you I

would handle Mapule, and I did just that Me; if you say so

I shrug my shoulders and turn around

and carry on with the dishes . Me; ok, im

off

Him; ill drive you

ME; im good. You can relax

Him; ok Tshidi.. im sorry you cant look at my work.

Gosh since when are you so jealous? Me; since you

started wanting to sleep with Random bitches

Him; Baby I didn't tell you that for you that for you to use it against me. I told you that because I didn't

want there to be

secrets between us

Me; is she pretty

Him; yes.

I punch him in the arm. I punch and then his chest. I have no idea why this idiot is laughing

Him; you asked mos. So why are you beating e up about it

Me; Nathi you'd better behave. If you know what's good for you, you had better get that thot out your head before I kill her

Him; You Tshidi are cute my love. But let me tell you something about yourself. You have no killer instinct in you. Not now, not ever

Me; don't test me Nathi. Make sure that girl stops. Don't make me handle her

Him; ok my nunu. I promise you. She will never bother us again Me; good now take me to get my hair done

He smiles and spanks my bum.

Nathi drops me at the salon and leaves to go somewhere. I switch from braids to a long weave with a fringe. I decide to also wax and do my nails as well. If I'm going on vacay to work on my marriage I might as well look the part.

By the time I'm done nathi is back and is already agitated that I wasn't done. I roll my eyes at him when we get in the car, because I don't understand why he offered to take me anyway. Plus he gets a red xross for not complimenting my hair. Nxa

Me; I still need to go shopping

Him; Baby noooo maan. Im exhausted. I thought we were going home after this ME; I just need to pick up few things. Baby we leave tomorrow.

Him; fine.

Where to

Me; Hyde

Park Him; k

I look out the window and smile. This ought to teach him to let me do me once in a while. He could be at home watching a soccer match right now with a glass of whiskey in hand, but noooo all because of his over protectiveness he is going shopping with me.

I buy a few items, some shorts and lastly I head to the lingerie boutique. He stands still at the door when he says where im going

I turn around

Me; and then

Him; im not walking in there

Me; and why not? Youre supposed to be helping me chose

Him; Tshidi I love you. I really do but I refuse to walk into that store

I take a step closer to him and give

him my best puppy eyes. Me; boo

boo please

Him; Ha a Tshidi.. what will the security team say when they see me walking into a womans underware shop?

I look at the guards and already I can see that they want to laugh. I give tools a hard look and immediately they look away.

Me; never mind them. They don't get to take off the very lingerie I plan on buying

I see a tiny smile and I know then that I have won him over
I leave the trolley with Tools and nathi and I walk in hand in

hand. I start at the very back of the store. Him; I like this one

He points at a black leather
and lace two piece Me; mhh
its not bad

Him; oh and this one

He points at a red
lace one piece Me;
see its not as bad as
it seems Him; now
lets go try them on.

He grabs onto my waist and I have to stop him before he
sneaks me into the fitting room and takes advantage of me

Me; whooow, slow
down cow boy Him;
look

He points at his manhoos and I see it bulging pants . I
actually have no idea why I made him come in here. I
should've known he would try to shag me
I look around and thankfully the consultant hasn't noticed his
craziness

Me; nathi behave

Him; how? All I do now is picture
you in all of this stuff Me; I think

you were right, you should wait
outside

Him; or we could buy the whole store and you can model these
for me in France

Me; don't be silly

Him; ok. But we're taking these

He takes the leather and the red lace sets;

gosh I need to get him out of here. I pull him to
the counter and he instantly freezes.

I look up at him questionably but I trace his eyes and notice
he is staring at some beautiful dark brown girl at the counter.
She must be about 24. She has the kind of flawless shiny skin
that you see on these Instagram models.

I punch him on the shoulder and he instantly looks at me.

Me; honestly Nathi. I'm standing right here. Nxa

Him; im sorry its just that I

Me; yah, I can see she's pretty but gosh do you have to
look at her like she is a fucking lolly pop Him; baby that's
Mapule

My heart instantly calls into the pit of my stomach. When he
said he nearly cheated I thought he was referring to some
random ugly looking girl. Not this chocolate goddess in front
of me.

Him;

lets go

Me; go

where

Him; we don't need these. We can stick
with the ones we have at home Me; Nathi

I give him "my don't try me look" and basically pull him to the
counter. I'm putting an end to this little
crush of his. ASAP

The minute we approach the little Mapule girl looks up and
smiles when she sees Nathi. Honestly its like the little thot
didn't even notice me

Her; fancy
seeing you here

Him; (Clears
throat) hi Her;
what can I do
for you

I look at the thot and wait for her to acknowledge me, but she is
blatantly ignoring me and that alon will send me into a frenzy

Me; we want to buy the store

She looks at me as though I'm crazy.

Me; call the manager, im
buyng the store, Her eyes
widen.

Her; ahmm sorry mam I didn't catch that

Me; well maybe if you stopped looking at my husband like a slice
of cake, you would've heard me

Her; I beg your pardon

Me; you heard me. Leave my husband the hell alone. Or else I
will personally make you like a living hell.

I take the lingerie and leave it on the counter. I don't want it anymore. Nathi hasn't said anything because he knows I would've jumped on him. nxa. This chick doesn't know me. I think it's time I call 911

76

Leaving the mall, I can see that Nathi is a bit annoyed by my little rant. But I don't care. He should've put her in her place instead of drooling over her

Me: I want
that store

Him: Tshidi

Me: I want it and you are going to buy it for
me, and i want that tramp fired Him; but
baby,

Me: fine, I'll do it myself then.

I dial Boni and she
answers immediately

Her: Khumbulekhaya

hello

Me: babe

Her: don't you babe me.

You've been ignoring me Me:

we'll talk about that. Now I

need a favour Her: name it,

Me: I need you to buy me a store. I'll send you the details

Her: oh, you're opening up
another boutique Me: no.
I'll explain tonight when I
see you Her: you're coming
over?

Me: nope. Y'all are coming
over. My place at 7pm Her: do
I need my tool kit

Me: not just yet

I end my call with Boni and stare straight ahead.

When we get home I make lunch for us, while Nathi goes to his
office and sulks.

I take his lunch to his office. I know he won't want to eat with
me. But being the wife that I am I won't let him starve himself.

I walk in in silence and place his
food on the side table. Him: take

the food back up with you

I walk past him and head for the door. If he doesn't want the
food then he must take it upstairs himself. I didn't roast that
damn chicken for him to tell me to take it back, nxa.

He presses the lock button on his desk and the door immediately
locks,

Him: Tshidi. I'm
talking to you Me:
unlock the door

I can see that he is angry. I just don't understand why. It's his

fault we're in this situation in the first place. If he hadn't been so memorized by that chick we would fine

Him: you've learnt to disrespect me now? You look past what I say and do as you please

Gosh the zulu man in him has decided wants to come out to play . Well I'm game. If he wants a fight then I'll give him one to remember.

Me: are you serious? He banna. Nathi you were the one drooling over that twit. I expected you to say something when she blatantly disrespected me, but instead you just stood there as though you were some love struck teenager

Him: did you give me a chance? No Tshidi, you immediately jumped to conclusions and completely embarrassed me.

Me: so you're embarrassed of me now? Ha? Then Nathi why don't you leave. If I'm such an embarrassment then you should go be with that twit.

Him: Tshidi if I wanted to sleep with her I would've. You saw how beautiful she is, any man in their right mind would've done so, but i didn't , because I am committed to you. because you are the only woman that I would kill for. What more do I have to do to prove my love for you?

Me: your love for me? What love Nathi?

All you care about is yourself. Him: myself?

Me Tshidi all i care about is myself?

He gets up and starts to pace the room. I can see now that he is at his limit. I didn't mean what I just said. I know he isn't selfish. The words just came out., and now flipping hell I can't take them back

Him: how do you call me selfish when I've made so much sacrifices for you? How am I selfish when I have a better relationship with your daughter than I do with my son? How am I selfish Tshidi? Tell me? Have I not put you above everything and everyone? I killed the mother of my child for you. And why? Only for you to degrade me in front of some girl? You are my WIFE and i expect you to act like it.

He is now standing right in front of me. His eyes are red with anger. He doesn't blink. He just stares at me.

Once again his words have cut me. How can he blame me for his relationship with his son? Its Not my fault that Thandiwe tried to kill him. Not one bit. It's obvious by how he's just lashed out that we still have a long way before we ok. That's if we'll ever get to being ok.

I take a deep breath and step away from him. I have tears in my eyes, but i refuse to let them fall. Me: please unlock the door.

My voice his hoarse and soft. Gone is the angry Tshidi. Right now all I am is hurt. Hiw did we go from arguing about the tramp to him telling me about Siseko and hus wicked mother

He walks to his table and unlocks the door. I walk out feeling worse than I did when I entered.

I go to our room and take a moment to breathe. I don't get how our argument from that girl went to his ex. Then it clicks. He is still in love with her. He killed her because of what she did to him, but he still loves her. what hurts me the most is the fact that I have never blamed him for Ayas fathers death.

I sit on the bed for a few hours. I have no strength left in me to deal. I need to sleep.

I text the girls and cancel our meeting. I don't want guests anymore. I just want to bath and sleep.

I step into the bath and let the water soothe me. I undress my bandage and clean the stitches, before dressing it again.

Once I'm done i get into bed. I dont bother packing. I don't even want to go to this France of his. I don't hear or see Nathi come to bed. When I wake up the next morning he isn't home.

I look for him and even try calling him but his phone is off. I go to the security control room and thankfully tools is up.

Me: hi tools. Sorry to bother you

Him: not at all mam. Is there something I can do for you

Me; yah, ahmm, do you perhaps know where Nathi is? I can't seem to get hold of him

Him: he left lastnight mam. I'm not sure where he is but i

can find out from his security team. Me: no. Don't worry about it

I give him a fake smile and walk back to the main house feeling defeated. Did I honestly lead him into her arms with what I did?

How could he do this to me. One small argument and he rushes to her. He was the one who said no matter what we have to stick together, and now he had abandoned me and gone to warm up another woman's bed.

He walks in 2 hours later looking every bit of the cheater that he is. Him: we leave in 2 hours. You should pack
Me: silence

I don't have the energy to answer him. What's the use of even going to France when he has already slept with her.

Him: did you hear
what I just said Me:

I'm not going

Him: yes you are. Now start packing

I look up at Him and my heart just breaks. How does he spend the night with her then come home and pretend that all is well.

Me: you were with

her weren't you? He

gives me a strange

look

Him: what are you talking about

Me: you left lastnight and you went to her. Don't

even try to deny it. I know you did Him: Tshidi

Me: don't even try denying it. I

know you were with her Him: are

you going to let me speak

Me: what's the use? You've ruined our

marriage Nathi. How could you He shakes

his head at me.

Him: fine. If That's what you want to believe then go right ahead. Ok Tshidi. Yes I sleep with her. Are you happy now.

Make sure you're packed for France. Don't make me drag you there without clothes.

He walks off and I'm left alone to face this disaster that I call a marriage.

77

I've been sitting here counting down the minutes till it's time to go. I haven't bothered packing because in all honestly I've lost the will to go.

Nathi's already packed. I'm just sitting here trying to

figure out where to go from here. Him: it's time to go

I didn't realise he was standing behind me. Usually I sense him before he even walks into the room.

Him: Tshidi have
you packed? Me:

Nathi. I don't
want to go

Him: I don't remember
asking you. Me: you
can't take me against
my will

Him: Tshidi please. Please don't make me
be this person towards you. Me: so you're
going to bully me into going to France

He wipes his forehead with his palm. I know he's irritated, but
I'm not going. I don't care what he says Him: I'm going to ask
you nicely one last time. Get in the car
Me: no

He comes towards me and I jump up. He takes my hand and
pulls me towards the door. I try taking my hand out of his, but
he scoops me up and carries me to the car, kicking and
screaming at him I try to free myself but he is 10 times stronger
than me and he hardly cares to stop.

Tools opens the door for us. And he puts me in the back seat
with him sitting next to me.

He locks the doors immediately and our driver takes off. I'm
breathing at a rate of a million. I'm so angry that he once again
takes a decision for me without me asking him.

I look out the window and make sure I move his hand from
mine. He has no right to do this. Why can't he just for once let
me be.

We get to the airport and our Jet is already waiting. Since we don't have a lot of luggage. We're in the air before I can even figure out an escape plan.

I sit on the one side of the plane and he sits on the other. We haven't said anything to each other since he kidnapped me.

He's on his laptop and I'm stuck here without even my cell phone.

The hostess brings us a menu of what they've got to eat, but i decline. I've lost my appetite, Me: I'll have a

glass of wine please. Red
Her: yes mam

Him: she'll have you're orange juice with the Chicken Cesar salad. Ill, have the same

The waitress looks at me and i give her one of my many fake smiles, it's one thing to fight off a girl thatsafter your man, and to fight with him, but i won't go off at him in front of his staff.

She walks away and he carries on with what he was doing. Me: So

now you control what I eat

Him: does everything with you have to turn into a fight? You know you can't have wine because of your heart. You know you need to eat healthy so you can take your pills. If Thats me controlling you then so be it.

He looks down at his laptop and i look out the airplane window. I think at how amazing we were in the beginning. How he made my heart skip a beat when he touched me.

How did we get here? How did we get to a point where all we do is fight. The hostess comes back and sets the food down in front of me.

Me: thank you

Her: it's a pleasure mam. Is there anything else I can get you

Me: no. Thank you.

She give Natni his food, and leaves.

I know I said I wasn't hungry, but now with the food sitting in front of me I'm suddenly famished

We both eat in silence. All you hear is our utensils. The air is thick with tension and that alone is enough drive a Sain man crazy

I finish my lunch and he gives me my pills. I take them from him and for a second our skin touches.

The electrical feel of our skin touching makes me gasp slightly. I know he felt it as well, because hes been standing here in front of me for the past 5 seconds.

He lets out a sigh and goes back to his seat. I stand up and he immediately looks up. Him: Where are you going?

Me: to take a nap

Him: were landing in Italy to pick up the councillors and then we're heading for France. Me: councillor?

Him: Tshidi can we not argue. We agreed we would work on our

marriage

Me: what's the use? All we do is fight. Then you go off and sleep with that twit

Him: is that how much you think I don't value this marriage?

That at the first sight of trouble I run off to the first woman I find and sleep with her?

Me: but you said

Him: no Tshidi. I didn't say I slept with her. I just said what you wanted to hear. I was at HQ lastnight trying to finish off some work before our trip. The guys were all, there as well. I actually don't know what else I need to do or say for you to understand that I love you.

Me : and yet you blame me for things. You blame me for Siseko. You blame me for his mother's doing. Like I had something to do with her decisions

Him: Tshidi I was upset. I should've never said those

things. I didn't mean them. I'm sorry Me: you blame

me for Siseko though don't you?

Him: I just.....

Me: say it...

Him: I just wish you would find it in your heart to accept him. I'm even scared to mention him in front of you because of how your face falls

Me: Nathi

Him: Tshidi I know it's hard. After what Thadiwe did to both of us, but i just hate that you are punishing him for his mother's sins. I would've loved to have him come to France with us. I would've wanted him to come with Aya, but i knew that you wouldn't like that.

I sit back down and take a minute to think about what he's just said. Have I really been this heartless? I think about his relationship with Aya and in all honesty he excels at his duties as her father. Why cant I do the same? I say I'm a woman of God but my behaviour the past couple of months say something completely different.

Nathi is back at his seat with his laptop. I can see just by looking at him that I've hurt hurt him. Deeply, but i just don't know how to fix this. In fact how do we fix anything that's happened latley? How do we forget the shit we've put eachother through?

Him: we're about to land. You should put your seatbelt on.

I do as told and in a matter of minutes we touch down in Italy. The doors open and for a minute I'm releived to have some fresh air.

The crew load the luggage of the so called therapist, and in no time he boarded. He isn't exactly what I expected.

Nathi stands up and goes to greet Dr Sutherland.

Him: Dr this is my wife, Matshidiso. Tshidi this is Dr Sutherland.

He's also the Dr that we use I the force. Me: nice to meet you

Doctor

Him: like wise.

I take my seat where I was seated and Nathi takes his. Dr Sutherland looks at the two of us with a displeased look in his eyes.

I look at Nathi and he looks

just as puzzled as me. Dr: why

are you seated so far from

one another We both look at

each other and no on

answers.

Dr: well this is worse than I thought. ok. Mrs Khumal so where is your place as a wife

Me: I beg your pardon

Dr: in your vows to each other you said you would stick by his

side through thick and thin correct? Me: yes

Him: so why are you seated currently

10 seats away from him I don't

answer him

Me: don't our sessions start when we actually get to France

Dr: what's if you don't make it to France? What if this plane crashes and you both die apart instead of with each other?

We both keep silence. None of us thought if that

Him: the both of you need my help and i am going to help you. But first you take you're rightful place by your husband. You are by his side. No matter what. You both stay by each others side.

He looks up at the

both of us. Him:

come on now. I'm

waiting

I move from my seat and go sit next to Nathi. I don't know how i feel about this Dr Sutherland dude. I hear Nathi take a deep breath when my hand touches his when I put on my seatbelt.

Dr Sutherland sits where I was seated and takes out a news paper.

I look up and my Nathi and his eyes reflect my very fears. They tell me he is as scared as I am. They tell me that we are in for one hell of a ride before things are back to normal.

78

We arrive in France hours later. We take a helicopter from the airport to our house In Saint-Raphael. I've see a few pictures of

the house here but they don't do justice to the beauty of this house.

The vintage French theme is stunning and different to the house in S.A..

Nathi shows Dr Sutherland to his living quarters. I don't go with them. I'm honestly too overwhelmed with everything. I just need one moment to breathe.

Him: I'll show you to our room.

I look up and he's standing right in front of me.

I hadn't realised he was back. He reaches out

his hand to me and for some reason I take it.

Him: do you want me to show you around?

Me: can we do that later. I'd like to shower and take a nap. Him: you ok?

Me: fine. Just exhausted

Him: you should eat something

Me: can I just have a moment Nathi? I'll eat and I'll do everything you want. Can I just take this one decision to bath and rest first?

He leads me into our bedroom on the third floor. I don't know why we didn't take the lift. This walking up millions of stairs isn't for me.

Him: this is our floor. I've asked the staff to a bit distant. I know how you are about your space Me: thank you

I enter our room and I remember that I don't have luggage. Hell I don't even have a wash cloth. Gosh this is going to be a long day

Him: I'll let you rest.

He turns to leave but i hold onto his arm. I don't know why but i don't want him to leave.

He looks at me lost? I know what I want to say but i don't say anything. I'm scared to be vulnerable. He wraps his arms around me and for a moment I feel like my old self again.

Him: Dr Sutherland wants to see us in the next hour
Me: ok.

.....is there a tumble dryer here?

Him: I don't know. The staff usually handle the washing

Me: I need to wash these clothes and dry them and wear them again
Him: come.

He pulls me into what looks like a walk in closet. I look around and it s stacked with clothes. Female clothes.

Me: please tell me these aren't your ex wifes clothes

Him: I give up. I Cant do this with you anymore. I can't even do something nice for you without you thinking I'm trying to hurt you.

Me: what? It's a valid question?

He walks out and goes to our bedroom. I look through the clothes and for a moment wonder how the hell he did all of

this. The one thing I can say is a lot of this looks like what I would buy. Plus it's the right size.

I take out short dress to wear. It's only 10am here and already the sun is blazing hot. I pull out a pair of sandals from the shoe rack and as expected they are my size 4.

I go to the underwear draw and find my normal silk and lace bum shorts, lace thongs and matching bras. The detail in all of this tells me that this wasn't Thandiwe's closet. The clothes in here all have a Tshidi feel.

I pick out a pair of lace panties, and leave the bra. The dress I picked is a boob tube and there is no reason for a bra. Plus it's way too hot.

I place my clothes on the bed and wait for Nathi to finish with his shower.

He comes out still dripping wet. He has a towel wrapped around his lower body. He walks past me and for a moment just a moment I admire just how good looking he is...

I snap out of my lustful thoughts and go into the bathroom full of steam. I Run the bath and as normal start with taking of my bandage. At first I kept the bandage on for the healing of the scar, but now it's just to cover the scar, and now since we are in France and there are no bandages I decide to just leave my scar. It's not like I can change it.

I take a nice warm bath. I wish I could take a long one but the last thing I want to do is piss Nathi and the Dr off by being late.

I'm out the bath and i go to the bedroom only to find the clothes that I had picked out replaced by a long maxi dress, instead of the short black one that I had picked out.

I take a deep breath in and out. He's even put a black push up bra to go with my panties.

It's a bloody good thing that he's disappeared from this room or else I would've flipping killed him. Nxa,

I wear his stupid dress that his picked out. I brush my hair but don't bother with make up. Him and the doctor will just have to deal with the bags under my eyes. I have no energy to cover them up.

I walk out the room and head downstairs. I find Nathi in the dining room having brunch. I already know if I don't he is going to force food down my throat, so i do myself a favour and dish up for myself. I sit opposite him and as always we don't say anything to eachother.

Dr Sutherland walks in and again

he looks displeased. We both

look up at him and stop eating.

Dr: Mr Khumalo what is your

role as a husband Him: to

protect my household

Dr: yes. I get that but if you are the head of this household why are you sitting at the side of the table and not at the head of the table?

Nathi doesn't

say anything. Dr:

well?

Nathi stands and takes his "place" at the head of the table. I am at his right and the Dr sits on his left. I don't get the point really, but i don't dare say anything.

I start to eat and Dr Sutherland clears his throat.

Gosh what now. I look up at him Him: will you

kindly say Grace for us?

I nod and

say grace

Him: thank

you.

He dishes up his plate and we all eat in silence.

Dr: so how long have
you been married Me: a
little over a year

He nods and we all carry on eating. When we're done i

stand to clear the table but Nathi stops me. Him: the staff

will handle that.

I leave the plate

and sit down. Dr:

let's move to the

kitchen.

I look up at him puzzled.

Dr: come on. The kitchen isn't going to kill you.

We follow him and the staff immediately clear the room. We walk into the kitchen and find a huge adsmelling fish not he table. I immediately cover my nose

Me: what the hell?

Nathi: Dr can we rather move to the dining room?

Dr: why? This is just perfect. This is how badly your marriage stincks. It smells so bad that both of you want to run and hide from it, but problem is there is no running.

Dr: Mr Khumalo this fish is rotten. It's rotten from the head all the way down to its tail. Just like your marriage. And do you know why that's so? Because the HEAD is rotten, and therefore the rest of the body also rots..., look at it. Look at his dead and soiled it is. Look at how dark the head is.

Dr: come with me.

He leads us to the lounge and i immediately gasp for air.

I sit on one chair and Nathi sits on the other. The doctor gives us a stern look and I immediately stand and sit next to Nathi.

Dr Sutherland moves his couch and sits infront of us.

Him: Mr Khumalo before we go any further let me explain something to you. Your first duty is not to be the protector of this family. Your role is to be the HEAD of this family. If you as the HEAD are rotten then your NECK which is your wife will be rotten.

He keeps quite for a minute and we let what he's just said sink

in.

Dr: The duty of a man is to head his household. But the duty of the wife. His neck is to show him direction. Mrs Khumalo you are just as to blame for this stinking marriage as your husband is. If you had helped show him direction you would be in this crash would you? Now both of you need to take responsibility, you have both hurt, wronged and killed each others souls. Which is why you are both going to hate me. I am going to push you to face your fears. By the time you are back in S.A. your marriage will be stronger. But just know that before Sunshine, there is always a storm.

We both nod. Neither of us have words. We're both shocked

Dr: now that we have that out the way. I am going to leave you to have the rest of the day to yourself. your first task of the day is to do something that you both enjoy. Weather its movies or going out.

Whatever it is you do it. You don't discuss any of the issues that you are facing. You dont fight. For just today you put that aside and do something you both enjoy.

Tomorrow we're going

hiking. Be up at 5am. With

that He stands and leaves.

Neither Nathi or I move. I think we're both shocked. Who is this man and what the hell is he going to do to us? If there's one thing I can tell you is that I am shit scared.

I look at Nathi and he looks as shocked as I am. He takes my hand in his and we both let out a sigh.

This is the first time that he's touched me like this and I don't feel my body freeze or tense up. I guess this is one step in the right direction.

Nathi: do you know what you want to do? Me: no idea

Him: what's the one thing we both enjoy doing? Me: having sex

We both burst out laughing. It's funny really. But it's true Him: I've missed you

Me: we can't talk about that.

You heard what he said Him: ok so what do we do?

Me: mmmm let's go watch a movie

Him: let me guess you want to watch a love story? Me: yep

Him: ok.

Me: will you drive us?

Him: we have a theatre down stairs. We can connect to the internet and watch whatever you'd like to watch

Me: do we have snacks

Him: the house keeper stocked up. Let's go check.

We walk into the kitchen and its as though we dreamed about the fish. There is no smell. It's all been cleaned up. Thank God.

We look through the cupboards and thankfully we find what I would call the goodie draw. It's a draw filled with all , the good unhealthy stuff.

I grab the microwave popcorn, and some chocolate to go with it. Nathi puts the popcorn in the microwave, while I make us smoothies.

We both go downstairs and we come to an agreement to watch war room.

Half way through the movie his phone rings. He looks at the caller ID and puts it on silence.

I take a deep breath and try not to jump to conclusions. It's probably someone from work calling. I have to beleive that.

79 🙄:(

After watch in war room we were both numb. Everything about that movie resonated with me. We left the cinema both emotionally and physically tired and since we are both going hiking tomorrow we decide to have an early night. I think between the Jet lag and the Dr Sutherland. We both need some sleep.

I go to my closet and pick out a black negligee and a matching gown instead of the Normal cotton PJ's. I know we're a bit off from one another, but I want to still look good. Even of it's for bed.

Nathi is in bed with his laptop by the time I come out. I was hoping we could cuddle. But I decide to let him be. Last thing I want is for him to think I was nagging. Or to start an argument about work.

He knows I hate it when he brings work into our bedroom. Plus we are technically on vacation. It would be nice for him to leave work and concentrate on us.

To my surprise when I get into bed, he puts it aside. I take off the gown and put my head on his chest. He switches off the light and we both drift off to sleep.

I nearly die when I hear the alarm going off. I so want to sleep in but I know Dr S will have my head.

I switch off the alarm and Nathi and go join Nathi in the shower. There's no time to be modest.

He's a bit surprised to see me getting in the shower with him, but I don't care. I just do my thing as he continues to stare.

I see his manhood get thick but I don't dare address it.

I shower at record speed. He touches my bum but I smack his hand away. Me: there's

no time

Him: I'll be quick

Me: nope. That means at least

20minutes that we don't have. He

shrugs and I walk out with a towel

wrapped around me.

I dry myself quickly and put on some cream. I put on some gym gear since we're apparently going hiking. I prush my hair and walk out the closet to go have breakfast. I need to make sure I take my pills before going on this hike.

I dish up some fruit salad and yoghurt for myself. Nathi joins me a few minutes later. He sits at his designated head of the table.

Me: do you want me to

dish up for you Him:

please

Me: fruit or

farm house

Him: farm

house

I roll my eyes playfully because I know Nathi would never have a fruit salad for breakfast. It's just not his thing.

I dish up his breakfast for him and hand put it in front of him

Him: thank you

Dr S arrives while we're

halfway through breakfast

Him: morning

Us: morning

Him: you ready for

the day ahead Me:

aren't you having

breakfast first Him:

thank you. But I've

already had Me: ok.

We finish up and leave. We drive at least an hour

before we get to where we're going. Dr: Mrs

Khumalo how much do you trust your husband

I look up at

him Me:

not too

much Him:

why

Me: some of the choices that he's made has made me not to trust him.

Dr: well today you're both going to learn to trust each other.

Your first task is to let him blindfold you Me: blindfold? Why

Him: you need to relinquish control. Your husband is there to protect you. You need to let him in. He gives Nathi the blindfold.

Nathi comes towards me and reluctantly without even knowing it I take a step back.

The intensity in this one action shows my fears. I didn't expect to react like this. You could see the disappointment written all over Nathi's face.

Dr S; Tshidi look at me.

I look over at him with tears in my eyes.

Dr; this is Nathi. This is your husband. He's not here to hurt you. He's here to protect you. I need you to let him lead you.

Me; ok

Nathi; Baby... Trust me

I take a deep breath and step towards Nathi. He puts the blindfold over my eyes and I feel my heart racing. This darkness I don't like it. It reminds me of Msizi. It reminds me of the countless times he beat me. The countless times I would shut my eyes so I wouldn't feel him on top of me.

Nathi takes my trembling hand

Him; Tshidi.

Trust me I

nod

Dr S; Now Mr Khumalo you are going to both start a journey together. You are going to lead Tshidi up the Hiking trail.

You're going to have to tell her what you see. Tell her weather you're turning left or right. This should take you about an hour and a half. Ill meet you at the top

I can sense Dr S leaving and for some

reason I got more nervous. Nathi; are

you ready?

Me; give me a moment

Nathi; Do you want

some water ME; No. I

want to take this

thing off

Him; Tshidi. I need you to trust me. I promise you I won't let anything happen to you

I nod and we take our first step. The first couple of minutes aren't easy. But after a while I manage to calm down. I promised Nathi I would try, so I might as well.

Nathi; youre doing better

Me; yah, that's cause ive convinced myself you wont throw me over the edge

Him; I love you Tshidi

When he says that I feel my heart racing. I love him too but somehow I've put up this big fence around my heart, and I don't know if I'll ever be able to let him lead me but I know for the sake of this marriage I will have to try. Even if it scares me.

Me; I love you too. And to be honest it scares me Him; why

Me; because why me? You have the world Nathi. It's your oyster and you're with me? And it also makes me wonder if you regret ever making that choice

Him; (sigh) Tshidi I don't regret much in life except all my dishonesty and me being so controlling, but I

love you. More and more each day. And that's my truth

Me; then why do we have to go through so much. Why do we have to go through so much pain to be together? Why can't we be happy?

Him; Baby there's no relationship that doesn't hurt. There's no perfect marriage but if we both put in the work. We'll get there. Together

Me; promise me Nathi. Promise me you won't hurt me. That you'll be honest with me

Him; Tshidi. Give me your heart and I'll guard it with my life.

All I need is for you to let go. Let me love you. Please

Me; ok

We stand still and he takes off the blind fold. We're at the top. Dr S is there and he's looking at us

Dr; so how do you feel

Me; I don't know

Dr; The whole purpose of this was for you to realise that if you take hard roads together and you have no direction. You have

to trust that he will have your back. That he wont let you fall.

I nod

Dr; so Mr Khumalo don't you think its time you're honest with Tshidi... truly honest

I look up at Nathi concerned. What does Dr S mean by he needs to be honest. What secret could Nathi be keeping from me?

Nathi

I never once thought I would have to tell Tshidi this. I had promised myself that I would take this secret with me to the grave, But knowing that I could lose her if I don't tell her the truth scares me. At the same time I'm scared. I'm scared of how she will see me after I have told her the truth. What if she hates me and never wants to talk to me again?

Me; can we do this at home please

Dr S; I don't see why we can't do this here

Me; it's just that. It's a lot and I'd like to do this in private

Dr S; Mrs Khumalo. Is

that ok with you Her;

yes... I guess so

Tshidi hasn't taken her eyes off of me. She wants answers and I know for a fact that the minute I tell her the truth she is going to hate me.

The ride back to the house is pure torture. Tshidi hasn't taken her eyes off of me. I've been looking out the window the whole time. I have her hand in mine, but that doesn't stop my fears.

We arrive home and the first thing we do is sit on the 2 seater couch while Dr S sits across us.

Dr; in order for both of you to move on. Truly move on and make this work you will have to be honest with one another. There can be no secrets what so ever. I have given you both 3 very important tools that will help you move on from whatever this secret is. The first one is you both have to stick together no matter what. The second one is that you Mr Khumalo are the head of this family and you are going to have to make this work and lastly that Mrs Khumalo you are going to have to trust your Husband. He is the leader, you are his neck. Whatever he is going to tell you you have to take a moment to absorb before you react.

You both have to pay attention to one another and try understanding where the other person was coming from. After that is done we will then move to forgiving one another. Just bear in mind that forgiveness doesn't mean you will stay together. It might just mean moving on from one another.

Those last words make me scared. I don't care what, where and how but I refuse to lose Tshidi. that is never and I mean never

going to happen. Dr S;

are you ready Mr

Khumalo

Me; do I have a choice in the matter

Dr: Do you want to make

this marriage work Me;

yes. With everything in me

Dr; then you have to let go of your fear of Tshidi leaving you. if she leaves that's her right, but if she

stays she has to know that you will at all cost be honest with her.

I just nod. I don't have the energy to fight this. I might as well be honest but Tshidi must fool herself. There is no way I am letting her go.

I face Tshidi and her eyes look into my soul. I hate that I am about to do this but I don't have a choice.

Me; Tshidi. I know that this is a lot to handle. And I'm sorry. Really sorry...

Dr S; stop lying Mr Khumalo. Why are you sorry? Tell her the TRUTH. Stop the charade Me; but

Dr S; if you didn't believe this decision was the right one you wouldn't have taken it. so don't apologise.

Be honest

I take a deep breath

Me; Tshidi... Thandiwe (Sigh)

Her; Thandiwe? Thandiwe what Nathi?

The look in her eyes tells me she is not to be messed with.

Me; She's your sister...

Her; What?

Me; I mean she was your sister. I killed her and took her heart and gave it to you

I let out a huge sigh. I know it's selfish because I know Tshidi is hurting, but for some reason I feel like a load has been taken off my shoulders. Like I'm free

Tshidi takes her hand out of mine. She is breathing. Loudly. She hasn't said anything.

She

stands

up Dr;

Sit

Her; what

Dr; I said sit. You don't deal with things by running away

Her; did you not just hear what he said. Did you not hear what he said? Dr; Mrs Khumalo sit

Tshidi sits next to me.

Dr; Mrs Khumalo you need to breath. If you don't you will pass out. I know it's a lot to handle but breathe.

Dr S is on his knees. He has she hands in his.

Him; Let it out. Scream. Be angry but you don't move from your Husbands side. You are both a unit. Until such time as you both decide to leave each other. For now none of you leave this room. I am locking you in. You shout, you scream you attack you do what you need to do. But none of you leave this room without a resolution.

Her; you're not leaving me in here with him

Dr; he's not him. He is the head of your household. He is the very man that you trusted a few minutes ago. Open your heart. Let him explain. I'll see you both in a couple of hours.

Tshidi

I see Dr S walk out and I instantly move from Nathi's side.

Me; how long have you
known about Thandiwe Him;

Tshidi

Me; no. I just want the
truth. Nothing else Him; a
while now

Me; and you didn't find it necessary for you to tell me the truth
Him; no

Me; did you know
when you killed her

Him; yes

Me; when exactly did you have time to get her heart?
Because as far as I know you killed her in Brazil Him; I didn't
kill her in Brazil. I held her at HQ. I wanted to get more info
from her. But then you fell ill and I had no choice but to use
her heart

Me; and while you were making all these decisions Nathi. You
didn't think. Not once to mention this?

You again took away my right to make a decision

Him; Tshidi I was wrong. But I had no choice. Losing you wasn't
an option

Her; and now? Is losing me now an option? Because I want
out.. This marriage is fucked up. I don't want you near me

Him; Tshidi I did what I thought was best

Her; best for who? Not me. Nathi I have that witch's heart
beating inside of me. I should've been consulted on whether I
wanted her dirty heart in me. And where the hell do you get
that she is my sister? My parents would've known.

Him; Tshidi you were adopted. You and Thandiwe were
separated at birth. You went to a loving family, while she was

given to a couple that abused her

Me; no... Nathi... No. you're wrong. My parents would've told me

Him; I spoke to your parents. They were the ones that told me about her Me; so basically I am surrounded by liars. All of you are liars...

I try getting closer to comfort her but she pushes me away. I just want to hold her. Make her see things from my perspective but she has completely lost it.

She bangs her hands on the glass coffee table. She hits the doors but she can't break anything, so she comes after me.

Her; how could you do this to me Nathi... what have I done for you to keep hurting me like this

She punches and kicks and even tries to bite, but I hold her hands

Her; I should've let you die when she put that knife through you. You are evil. Just as evil as she is and I want nothing to do with you. Nothing at all

Him; Tshidi. please let me just explain

Her; explain what? That you are toxic. That everything you touch is toxic

Him; no. I couldn't think about losing you Tshidi, It scared me far worse than what I did

ME; well your nightmare has just come to life. I want out nathi. I want to be as far away from you as possible. I want to forget I ever evn met you

Him; Tshidi please... Im begging you... Ill do anything. Just don't leave me.

Her; let
go of me
ME; no, I
refuse

Her; don't act like you have a choice. This is my decision and I'm
telling you now. I will fight you till the

end. I want out and you will let me go.

Me; Tshidi you are my life... I can't function without you

Her; then you should've been honest with me. You should've made these decisions with me

Me; I Know Tshidi.. I know. But please I am trying to make this right

Her; well you should've tried that earlier. We're done.

Tshidi and I go back and forth for hours. She doesn't want anything to do with me. All she wants is out of this marriage, and no matter what I say she isn't backing down.

1

Time. They say it heals but I don't see it happening. I've been sitting here now in absolute silence with Nathi across from me looking like death's window. Everything that he has said has left me in a spiral of confusion. I want him to be my partner. I want her to see me as an equal. I don't care that he killed Thandiwe, hell I don't care that she was my sister. That shit I can deal with. Hell. The bitch tried to kill me. So whether or not she's dead makes no difference to me, and the fact that I have her heart is for me is some kind of a trophy. That bitch had no place in my world and one of us had to die and lucky for me it was her. The only thing I hate is that hate is that Nathi doesn't love me enough to be honest with me. I've only ever asked her for one thing. One thing and that was honesty. He made me open up to him, he made me break down all these barriers around my heart and why? So he could break me more than Msizi?

See for me all I wanted was a ride or die kind of a man. I didn't care weather he killed people for a living or if he was vice president. All I need is for us to have trust. Trust

is a deal breaker for me, and now we had nothing. He has kept me in the dark from the beginning and I have now had it.

I was kept in the dark by Msizi. I never knew when he would become a monster. He kept me and controlled everything, and then Nathi steps in and becomes my hero, only to decide to control and lie and scheme behind my back. It's like he freed me only to have me put back in the very same cage he let me out of.

Dr S walked in and I moved next to Nathi. Dr S took his place right in front of us. Dr; have you guys come to a conclusion

Us; silence

Dr; Mr

Khumalo?

Him; She

wants out

Dr; and how does that make you feel

Him; angry.

Dr; why

Him; because I'm at the very point which I was trying to save myself from. I did everything so we wouldn't drift apart, and now she hates me more than ever

Dr S turns and looks at me

Dr; Mrs Khumal so

you want out Me;

yes

Him; what does OUT

mean to you Me; it

means I need him to

let me go Dr; How

Me; I need him to leave me.

Dr; but he's not leaving you.

You are leaving him When
he said that my heart
dropped

Me; no. he needs to let me go
Dr; But he is saying to you that he doesn't want that.
MRS Khumalo I need you to stop using emotion when
you talk. Come

I

stand

up Dr;

sit

here

He moves me to a 2 seater couch

and makes me lie down. Him;

close your eyes

I do as told

Dr; Tell me what your core is telling you. Not what top of your heart says? Tell me what your CORE is feeling

Me; (sniff)

Dr; Tshidi. You are letting your emotions get the better of you. I want to know what you feel Me; I'm scared

Dr; scared
of what

Me;

scared to

feel Dr;

feel what

ME; fear

Dr; fear of what

Me; I can't do this.

It's too much Dr;

don't open your

eyes. Breath

Me; I'm scared because I feel like I'm going backwards.

That this marriage is really no different to my ex

Dr; how?

Me; Dr I really don't think I can do this

Dr; Tshidi you are stronger than you

think. Say what you are feeling Me;
Ahhm (sniff) I'm scared because I
know what he is capable of Dr; who is
he

Me; My Husband

Dr; what do you mean? Because I can tell that you are
running. You are looking for a reason to run. You don't
see him as your safe haven anymore. My question is
what

Lord this doctor doesn't know what he's doing. He
doesn't understand that this a dangerous place for me. I
don't want to be still. I don't want to be vulnerable. I just
want to be angry. I want to throw fits and hit things. I
don't. don't want to be in this specific position.

Dr; Tshidi you're nearly

there. Just blurt it out I

take a deep breath

He; he held a

gun to my face

Silence

Dr; don't stop. Tell me what that did to me

Me; it took me back. It took me back to when that
creature raped me. When he tore my stitches because
he was horny. It took me to the place where I feared the
very man I thought would protect me.

Nathi was my hero. He was supposed to be the one that
protected me. he made all these promises and then the
next thing I have a gun to my face. He threw me against
the wall like I was nothing.

Dr; sit up... let it out. Don't hold in the anger
and the emotion. Now you can cry I sit up and

for the first time since forever I cry. Really cry.
Dr; cry for the little girl who was married away to an
abusive man. Cry for the many times that he raped you.
Cry because he had taken away every aspect of what a
man is supposed to be.

I feel Nathi sit next to me. I don't know what I want.

I'm too raw, but I let his arms hold me. When ive
finally calmed down. Dr S is looking at us smiling

Dr; I know it doesn't feel like it, but you
have both made immense progress. Us;
silence

Dr; Tshidi so now that Nathi knows that he hurt you and
why you put up all those walls up, I need you to tell him
what you need. Not what your emotions want you to
need

I turn and look at Nathi. He takes my hand into his
Me; everything that you've told me is a lot. I hear you
when you tell me why you did what you did. But I need a
moment to absorb everything.

Nathi; what does a
moment mean Me; I
need time to

myself
Nathi; I don't want to lose you Tshidi

Me; I need to find myself. I
need to process everything

Nathi; how long

Me; I don't know yet. Let me understand. Let
me try walking this in your shoes Him; if that's
what you need then ill let you be

Me; Thank you

Dr S; now as a couple. As a unit I need you to tell
me what conclusion you have come to Me; we have
decided to take time from each other

Dr; how

long Me;

I don't

know

Dr S; ok. Both of you have this Month to yourselves.
Nathi you will move into the second floor. You are both
not to be in each other's way. You eat separate, you
sleep separate. No SEX what's so ever?

Me; whooo doc.

Nathi; yah a month is

a bit of a while Dr;

Nothing

Me; wait what is your definition of sex. Case we can you know (clear throat) without really you know Nathi; yah. I agree

Dr S looked at us and shook his head.

Dr; no sex, no nothing. You're both single for the next month. So go out separately. Go clubbing or whatever it is that single people do. But no sex, with each other or with anybody else.

You're still a unit, but for now you're a divided unit. Dr;

clear ?

Us; clear

Dr; good. Now both of you go eat and go to bed. We continue with your journey tomorrow. Dr S leaves and I put my head on his shoulder. Today has been one hell of a day

Nathi; I know I'm breaking the rules. But

I love you. Really love you Me; I know

you do... And I love you

We both go eat in our separate room, and even though we're both technically separated, I am at peace. Hopefully with time we will find our way to each other, or we will at least be able to let go peacefully.

Day 1 without Nathi

So yes... day one is mhmhm. I've been sitting and lounging all day eating junk. All I did since waking up was bath. After that I've just been stuffing my face like crazy. I have nothing else to do. I'm now on my 3 slice of cake and I think I'm officially diabetic.

At around lunch time I decide enough is enough. I tidy up my room and take the dishes downstairs. I decide to use the lift instead of the stairs, because knowing myself I would go to the second floor and tear his clothes off.

When I get to the kitchen I hear voices. A woman's voice. At first I thought it was the staff but I hear Nathi's voice and I'm immediately curious.

I know that Dr S, said that I need to steer clear of Nathi, but I sure as hell won't let any woman do as she pleases with my husband.

I fix my shorts and pop a chewing gun in my mouth. I take my phone and put on my headphones and pretend to be listening to music.

I tuck in my flabby stomach and take walk towards them. I pretend to not see them at first because in fact I don't like this yellow bone thing and how she's busy laughing at Nathi's stupid jokes

I take off my headphones and smile

Me; sorry... I didn't realise you had company

Him; its fine

I hand around for a second because I think he will introduce us, but when I see that it's getting awkward

I decide to put on my headphones, put on my fake music, and walk off.

See the old me would've freaked, but I have no choice now to suck up my feelings and go bask in the sun on the beach dreaming about all the things I should be doing to that woman in my house.

I sit on the beach listening to the soil and I take in the peaceful serenity of France. Its blazing hot, but still so peaceful.

Dr; a penny for
your thoughts? I
look up at him and
smile

Me; I'm thinking of ways to kill the woman sitting in MY living room, laughing at MY husband's lame jokes

Him; so you're jealous
Me; yes. If that's what

you want to call it Dr S

sits next to me

Him; so you don't want him, but you also don't want someone else to have him

Me; doc

Him; use you're CORE. Don't tell me what you want me to hear.
Tell me your truth

Me; I

love him

Him; yes

and

Me; and I'm scared of him

Him; and

Me; and I need him to stop being so controlling. I've been controlled my entire life. All I want is for Nathi to see me as an equal. Is that so hard to do

Him; tell me about Nathi. What did you see in him?

I smile.

Me; well... he was literally my Hero.... Sizwe had beat me again. Really badly. Nathi just pitched up. He undressed me. He bathed me without even looking at me sexually. He put me to bed and nurtured me back to who I am today

Him; that sounds like a real life superman

Me; that's only the beginning. He's been taking charge since then

Him; and that is bad

Me; yes and no... Yes I love it when he takes charge. I love it when he is a man, but I need him to understand that I am not the people on his mission. I am not his property to do with as he pleases. I want... actually... need him to see me as his wife

Him; why don't you tell him that

Me; how? I've tried but he doesn't hear me. He lashes out. He spends hours in the company of a woman who isn't me. And you know what I get? I get a heart of my long lost sister that I didn't know existed.

Him; and how does that make you feel

Me; lost.... I don't know what to feel.

Him; you're speaking on emotions again

Me; mmhh this I harder than I thought

Him; breathe... and no crying. Your feelings are valid. They don't need to be covered by tears. Tell me what your core is telling you

Me; ok..... I'm scared that I'm evil. That I should care about Thandiwe, but truth be told, I don't care. I'm grateful to him doing what he did. But my issue is that he lied. He schemed, he didn't trust me enough to handle the information

Him; have you handled all other information well

When Dr S asked me that,
the needle dropped Me; no
not always

Him; so do you blame him for how he reacted

Me; so it's my fault

that he lies to me Him;

No you're not listening

to me Me; I'm lost...

Him; listen.... Really listen to me

Him; You need to teach men how to treat you. You have been
so dependent on your spouses that you have not taught them
how to treat you.

Him; you are so used to backing down and crying, you allow
yourself to live as a victim. Stand up for yourself. Know your
worth. Know that you deserve to be treated at nothing less
than a queen. Let the victim in you go... don't let your ex
chain. You are free. Enjoy your freedom.

Nathi

Ok so yes... I was being petty. Im honestly just not sure on
how the hell I'm supposed to go a month without her. Tshidi
is everything to me and I just feel that this so called month
away might harm us more.

I asked Melissa over because I wanted to rattle Tshidi. I
wanted her to pay attention to me and now I feel like more of
an idiot than I did when I thought about this.

Dr S; can
we talk
Me; sure
I knock back another shot of whiskey

Dr; so tell me about what
happened today Me;
what happened

Dr; Mr Khumalo, you have
asked me to help you. Me; I
know

Dr; so why play with
Tshidi's emotion Me; I
feel like she is going to
forget me Dr; why don't
you have more faith in
her Me; I do

Dr; no you don't. Mr Khumalo, can I be frank
Me; yes. Of course

Dr; you are controlling Tshidi because you haven't gotten over
what happened with Thandiwe

Me; what

Dr; hear me out. I know you love Tshidi. You proved your love
for her, but you need to understand that Tshidi isn't Thandiwe.
She doesn't want you to leave you because of another man.
She wants to leave you because you play God with her life

Dr; Mr Khumalo. Let Tshidi breath. Love her but allow her to
be herself. Allow her to have your say Me; thank you doc

Him; well, that's my job for the day. I'll see you both tomorrow.

Tshidi

I manage somehow to spend the rest of my day away from Nathi. I miss him, but I am committed to this process and I'm going to have to put in the work.

I walk out the shower after having dinner, with just a towel wrapped around me, and head to my closet to look for something comfy to wear. I'm going to drown myself in chocolate cake and watch Grey's Anatomy reruns.

Well, that was the plan until I

find Nathi in the closet Me;

(Clears Throat)

He turns around and for a second he loses focus

Him; sorry... I was... I

(clears throat) Me;

what's wrong

Him; nothing... I was just looking for my sweater. The beige one, I can't seem to find it in my closet, so I

thought I would

find it in yours Me;

ok

I drop my towel purposely, I know Dr S said no, but I miss my man. I see him swallow hard

Him; Tshi.... Tshi

Me;

Mhmm?

Him; I

miss you

Me; have

me

Him; but
Me; I need
you Him; I
need you
too

He walks towards me and
stands right in front of me Him;
up?
Me; Yes

He picks me up and I'm against the closet door in seconds. His
lips taste sweet.

He puts me down and goes onto his. His tongue is on me before
I can even take a breath. I moan and
groan until I can't take it anymore. I have to have him
I push his head away gently

Me; Please...Nathi... please I

He lifts me up and puts me on the bed. I don't know when he
stripped but all I know is he is slowly
entering the honey pot and
oh lord he is amazing He
moves so slowly and gently.

Him; open your eyes

I do as he says and immediately start getting emotional
Him; I'm sorry

He moves again. Slowly

Me; I'm sorry too.

He moves... slowly in and out. He's reaching and touching every
inch inside me and the fact that it's at

this pace only makes it worse. We both move at each other's wave of emotion. We switch positions and I'm on top of him. Every time we get close to finishing we stop moving. Neither of us wants this to end, and we both know that once our bodies collapse reality sneaks in. so we go on for what feels like forever, until neither of us can take it any longer. We both come together calling out each other's names.

I lay on his body and fall asleep on his chest. I know that we were wrong for what we did. But we could deal with that tomorrow. For now Nathi and I are one and for me that's enough.

83

REALITY...

For the first time in what feels like forever I slept like a baby. I'm still in Nathi's arms and well, let's just say I don't regret what happened. Not at all

Him; morning

Me; you better get out of here before your wife realises that you didn't sleep in your bed last night Him; my wife would kill me. We're supposed to be abstaining

Me; well how about we repeat what happened last night.

Just to last you for the rest of the month Him; to last me

or to last you

Me; ok, maybe to last us both

Him; (chuckles) so tell me exactly what about last night did you like

Me; mhmm let's see... I kind of liked the part where you went all slow and then rammed into me Him; kind of?

Me; ok... I really liked it

Him; In that case... come her

He pulls me closer and again we make desperate sweet love to one another. I just couldn't stop myself from wanting more and more of him. I just wish we could slay all these dragons and move forward with our lives.

Him; what are you thinking about Me; how fucked up our situation is

Him; yah... it's been one hell of a ride

Me; what do you think

Dr S is going to say Him;

I don't know. We'll have to see

Me; you realise he is downstairs waiting?

Him; let's get this over and done with

We both reluctantly get out of bed and go take a shower together. We're both way more quite. He takes the shower gel and starts washing and massaging me. He moves his hands so tenderly around every inch of my body. He kisses my neck and just holds me

Him;

Tshidi

Me;

mhm

m

Him; baby I'm sorry. I'm sorry for everything that I've ever

done. I know I've hurt you, and I am sorry for being so controlling. I see what I've done. I always thought I was protecting you. I thought that if I took over that was me being a man, but I can see that it hurts you. I'm not used to all of this Tshidi. When Thandiwe left I didn't date. I met up with girls and just did what I needed to do, and I had totally forgotten what it meant to be a husband. Then I met you. You made me love again. Your smile made my heart smile. I got nails to do some research and I found out about your ex. When I saw what he did I went into ops mode.. I wanted to control everything, I wanted you to be protected and I took it overboard forgetting that you're my wife and not my mission.

I've been looking into his eyes an all I see is sincerity.

Me; I also sorry. I should've been more understanding. I should've tried harder. But to be honest I was still hovering all my anger about what happened with Thandiwe and because of all my insecurities, and that only made things worse. But most importantly I'm sorry about how I treated Siseko. I took out my anger on him because I was so excited about bearing you a son. It was always about me. I didn't really take a moment to think about what it meant to you

Him; can we just move forward. I am over all the issues. I want to just be with my wife. I want to be happy with you and our children

Me; me too

Him; promise me you'll stop running

Me; yes.. Promise me you'll stop being so controlling

Him; but baby what does that mean. I need to know where you are so I can protect you

Me; I can handle the security and all of that. All I want is for you to see me as an equal. stop doing things behind my back.

Him; I will do everything in my

power to make you happy ME;
good. Now kiss your wife
He smiles his beautiful dimple filled
smile and my heart smiles. We step
out the shower and we both get ready
to face the music.

When we arrived in the living room, we found Dr S waiting
for us. My stomach tensed a bit but luckily for me Nathi
was there

Dr; well how was it

We both
look at him
Dr; did you
enjoy it Me;
(clears
throat)

Dr; I knew you would
do it. I expected it Me;
but

Dr; you both think I expected you to abstain? No ways.
I set a trap that I knew you would fall for Nathi; so
you're not mad

Dr; no. because I knew you would do that. My
problem is I think you're using sex as a crutch Nathi;
but we spoke

Dr; yes you did and I bet you apologised
and now everything is sunny Me; well....

Yes

Dr; my worry is that next time when you have problems. I
don't want you dealing with them by using sex. You need
to talk. Then have make up sex

We both nod

Dr; so since you've decided to be happy, I'm going to
give you the day off and let you enjoy yourselves.
Tomorrow your kids arrive, and well we need to make
sure that mommy and daddy are going able to take care
of them

Me; our children

Dr; yes. Siseko
is coming. Me;
ok

Dr; are you ok with that

Me; yes. Im fine with it. I think its time I start building a relationship with him

Dr; good.
now this is my cue. Ill see you both tomorrow.

Me; thank you doc

Dr S leaves and somehow I feel

relieved. Nathi; well that didn't go to bad

Me; thank God

Nathi; so how are we going to spend our day

Me; mhmhm how about we spend the day with you showing me around France
Him; that sound fun

Me; yep

Him; but first I want to kiss you crazy

Me; what did I do for you to want to kiss me
Him; you just make me happy

Me; yes. But mostly happy

Me; in that case kiss ahead

He comes closer and kisses me till my knees go weak, well that is until his phone rings. He looks at the caller ID then at me. I can tell that his mood had immediately changed

Me; who is it

Him; promise me you wont freak out

Me; oh God

Him; she hasn't stopped calling.

Me; did you block

her

Him; she keeps changing sim
cards. I'm sure it's the 10th one Me;
you should've told me

Him; I didn't want to give you something else
to worry about. Plus it gets worse Me; how
much worse

Him; she's
in France

ME; what

Him; I swear I had nothing to do with it

Me; Mhmm I'm going to be the bigger person. And not kill your ass. Him; I think it's time I actually deal with her

Me; what does deal with her mean exactly Him; you know. Scare her a bit

Me; or you could let me deal with her Him; huh

Me; you know.

Woman to woman

Him; you sure

Me; yes

Him; well in that case, she's all yours.

He hands me his phone and I immediately send her number to the girls and let them know that this is 911 on steroids. These bitches better get to France ASAP. I need them to help deal with her now more than ever.

84

Boni called me almost instantly when she received my message. She didn't even ask me for details. All she wanted to know was if this was the same girl that I had told her about. All I know now is that plans are being made for the ladies to get here asap. Now what I need to do is tell Nathi.

I find him in our room watching the news, Its weird seeing him this relaxed. Im so used to him working 24/7

Me; Khumalo

He looks up at me and smiles

Him; I know we're good when you're calling me by Khumalo.

When you're mad at me all I hear is Nathi...

Nathi Nathi

Me; I don't sound like that

He laughs at me and I

roll my eyes at him Me;

listen man baby

Him; ok.. im all ears

Me; the girls are

coming down soon

Him; im aware

I give him puzzled look

Him; baby, you can't expect the 1st lady of SA and minister

wives to leav the country and I don't know

abo

ut it

Me;

ok

Him; its fine. We're just trying to get security in place. I think

we're going to have to make some appearances as well

because I have to meet Vice President Avellino on official

state business in a few days

Me; baby I thought this was meant to be a vacation.

Him; yes. But I have been really absent the past couple of

months, and I think its time we both get back into the game.

You not being there as second lady puts pressure on Rifiloe.

ME; so when do we have to make all these appearances

Him; not sure yet. We're busy sorting it out

Me; well, I guess it's a good thing that the kids arrive today

Him; yah

Me; what time

do they land

Him; 8pm.

Me; ok

I sit next to him and put

my head on his lap Him;

you ok?

Me; fine. Just thinking about this Mapule girl

Him; Tshidi. I don't want you doing something stupid. I hope

you're not having the girls come here so you guys can come

up with a silly plan to get rid of her. You said you were just

going to talk to her ME; baby, the girls are coming to see how

I'm doing. I haven't exactly been the greatest friend in the

past couple of months. I've shut them out completely, and I

thought it would be nice for me to spend some time with

them here in France

Him; good. Because the last thing we need is bad press at the

moment. People are starting to wonder where we are.

Me; so when do we get back to work full time

Him; im thinking we can stay here for another month. I want

to strengthen our relationship with the French people more.

After that we have a hectic couple of months ahead. We need

to work on having our country see why they trusted us to be

their second family

Me; ok. So I have you to myself for

approximately another week Him; yep.

You better take as much advantage of me as possible. Me; mhmmm I like the way you think

He leans down and kisses me. It's actually amazing to think that we are here. A few weeks ago I wanted nothing to do with him, and here I am now and I couldn't think of my life without him.

We both spend the day enjoying each other's company. We even decide to go swimming.

We have on the beach and just enjoy the peace.

Me; so I've been thinking

Him; mhmm

Me; I think I want to go in the pill

He stares at me. I already know he isn't going to like this

Him; why

Me; well, I just think that since we have just started working on our marriage, that maybe we should wait on having more kids. Maybe in another year or two we can look at it

Him; Makhumalo 2 years? Haai cha... ngeke. I

want us to have a baby ASAP Me; baby. We've just been through so much. I need to bond

with Siseko first. Him; I still don't see why we can't have a baby

Me; yoh, haai baby lets revisit

this conversation later Him; you

do realise I'm not getting any

younger right Me; yes Madala...

I'm fully aware

He tickles me and thankfully we both put the issue to rest. I know won't last, but for now we chill. The kids land exactly at 7:00pm. It takes them another 40minutes in a helicopter for them to arrive home.

The moment Siseko stepped off the helicopter he came running towards me. He hugged my knees and I picked him up. Nathi and I were both surprised. I think we were expecting him to be a bit uncomfortable at first.

Aya hugs Nathi and we all walk inside. Siseko doesn't let go of me. his head is on my shoulder and he is hanging onto my

neck for dear life.

Me; Siseko. Whats

wrong

He doesn't look at me. He just holds onto me tighter.

I look at Aya and she shrugs

Her; he's been fine the whole way here Me; its ok... Let me take him upstairs

I take the lift to our floor and go straight to my room. I sit on the bed and try moving Siseko off of me

Me; Sieko... whats weong

Him;

Mhmmm

Me; Look
at me

He looks up and me and squints. At this moment he looks just like his father

Me; boy boy, tell me what's wrong

Him; I missed you

Me; I missed you you boy

Him; then why did you leave me

I look at him a bit shocked. I wasn't expecting this. Not at all

Me; ok I promise you I will

never leave you again Him;

promise?

ME; promise

He hugs me again and my heart melts. I never even once thought I would hold Siseko like this and actually feel connected to him. maybe having his mother's heart isn't a bad thing after all.

Both Aya and Siseko ended up falling asleep in our bed. Nathi wanted to move them but I forbade him.

I didn't want either of them waking up and feeling lost. Especially since this house is nearly double our house in JHB. Nathi however didn't understand the fuss, but I know for a fact that the only reason he didn't want them in our bed was because he couldn't hold me with them there. But as far as I was concerned he would just have to be strong. Siseko still seemed a bit off by the time he fell asleep. Now imagine if he woke up all alone in a foreign house. That's just cruel.

I don't even know when Nathi came to be bed, but as I wake up he is fast asleep. Siseko is on his chest and Aya has her head resting on his one arm. I smile as I look at them. In that moment, I realize just how blessed we truly are.

I slowly pick up my phone and take a picture of them. Nathi opens his eyes almost immediately when he hears the click that the phone makes,

Him;

morning

Me;

morning

Him; what are you smiling about

Me; im just happy. That's all

Him; my neck hurts. these kids are karate kids. I put Siseko on my chest when I woke up to his foot on my face

Me; (giggle) that's what happens when you have children,

Him; I missed holding you

Me; you'll be strong

Him; please tell me these kids are sleeping in their room tonight.

I won't be able to survive another night

with feet in my mouth

Me; ha. Nathi don't lie. His foot was not in your mouth

Him; I swear my love.

Siseko wakes up and looks

at us then smiles Me;

morning

He jumps off Nathi and comes to me. He

lays his head on my chest. Me; did you

sleep ok

He nods

Him;

mommy

Me; boy

Him; I'm hungry

Me; what would you

like for breakfast Him;

pancakes. Please

Me; wanna help me make them

Him; yes. And can we have

syrup and chocolate chips Me;

yes. Anything you want my love

Nathi clears his throat and we both look at him

Nathi; but I thought we could shower first

He gives me his lustful eyes, but Siseko doesn't budge.

Siseko; no daddy, first we have to eat, then we shower

Me; well, Siseko has spoken. You'll just have to be take a cold shower by yourself

Siseko shakes Aya awake roughly. Aya smiles and grabs him and tickles him. I take this as my cue to go freshen up so I can go make breakfast.

Siseko and Aya make more mess trying to make pancakes than actually putting them in the pan. By the time we are done the kitchen is a mess, and Siseko is covered in flour,

The kitchen staff thankfully are very understanding, and mainly just stay out or way. I take the pancakes to the living room, and the kids immediately start eating

Me; im going to shower. You two behave and make sure you finish your food '

I leave them and go give my teddy bear some attention. Me; haw,

baby, you still sleeping

Him; I told you my neck was sore '

Me; want a

massage

Him; please

,

Me; lay on your chest, I'm going to get my oils.

He lays on his front and I sit on his lower back, and gently massage his neck, then his shoulders. I can just

tell that he's enjoying his massage because of the low groans at the back of his throat

I move my hands lower, and decide to tickle him, he literally jumps, he holds onto me just as I am about to fall off. He turns around swiftly and I notice his cute boyish smile. Im now sitting on his lap, and he has both my hands in his.

Him; baby, you know how ticklish I am

Me; sorry, I

couldn't resist

Him; well, now

it's my turn. Me;

Nathi don't you

dare

Him; what's going

to stop me. Me; ill

scream '

Him; we're on the third floor. It would take forever for anyone to even get to you

Me; Nathi. please

Im trying hard not to giggle, because I know no matter how much I beg, he is not going to have pity on me '

He takes his one hand and traces his finger up my rib cage. I try moving but he has both my hands in his Me; baby

Him; mhhm

I feel goosebumps when he reaches my armpit. As predicted he has no mercy. He tickles me till I'm crying with laughter...

Me; ok.... Ok... I'm sorry

Him; next time
you'll think twice

Me; mxm ‘

Him; what are the kids doing

Me; eating. I actually came up here to take a shower, and
then I need to bath Siseko, he is covered in flour

Him; we have a session with Dr S after lunch ‘

Me; ok

I try moving of his lap, but he holds onto my waist. I look into
his eyes and see the Nathi I fell in love with all those months
ago.

Him; I love you

Me; not as much as I love you

We both just stare into each other's eyes, I fill his manhood get
harder underneath me.

Me; behave

Him; how when your nipples are just as hard underneath your PJ
top?

I look at my nipples and see that he is right. I guess it doesn't
help that PJ's are silk.

I look at Nathi and he has a mischievous smile on his face

Me; the kids are up, they'll walk in any minute

Him; shower with me

He doesn't even wait for me to finish. He picks me up and walks
with me to the in-suit bathroom.

I'm out my Pj's in minutes and pressed against the shower door.

The warm water caresses my back, as

Nathi traces warm kisses down my back,

while massaging my butt cheeks. I turn around and let him work his magic on my most sensitive parts.

By the time, we're done we're both satisfied. We step out the shower and get dressed.

Nathi walks around with a stupid grin on his face, and hums some maskandi song that I've never heard of.

We walk downstairs to find the living room in a mess. Aya is covered in pancakes and syrup. From head to toe. Siseko has flour all of him, mixed with syrup and chocolate chips. Aya has eggs in her hand and Siseko is on the table and is about throw the milk at her.

They both this is funny, and well, so do I,

but Nathi is having none of it. Him; Ayanda

Kumalo what do you think you are doing

Both Aya and Siseko immediately stop. I think they're both shocked. They've never heard their father shouting

Aya; daddy, Siseko started it.

Siseko; no daddy, it wasn't me

Nathi; both of you put down what's in your hand

Aya, puts down her eggs, and Siseko puts down his milk.

I know I shouldn't laugh. I know Nathi and I need to put up a united front in front of the kids, but I just can't help myself. I burst out laughing.

Aya follows and so does Siseko. Nathi is serious for a second, then gives up and laughs.

I take out my phone and take a picture of them as Nathi shakes his head.

The staff come in to clean up, but Nathi stop them. He looks at the kids and says " you both better clean this up"

Aya; but daddy

Him; no Aya, you guys cant expect to make such a

mess, and think the staff will clean it up Siseko holds

out his arms for me to pick him up off the table, but

Nathi stops me.

Him; Siseko must
clean up with Aya

Me; but baby, Siseko

is 5

Him; exactly, next time they'll think twice about having a food
fight

Nathi asks his staff to make us breakfast and bring it to the veranda. He takes my hand and walks me outside.

Both Ayanda and Siseko just
stand there shocked. ME;

baby

Him; cha, Makhumalo.

They must learn Me;

but

He gives me a stern look and I look down. I hate it when he's his Zulu self. I like my playful Nathi.

The staff bring us breakfast and we both indulge. His phone beeps and he looks at his phone

Him; the lady's arrive
tomorrow morning Me;
finally

Him; the guys arrive the following day

I look up at him and see that he serious

Me; I wasn't aware that they were coming

Him; there is a presidential ball taking place here in France to honor the new President. We've all been

asked to

attend

Me; oh,

ok

Him; what's wrong

Me; nothing

Him; you look worried Tshidi. Talk to me

Me; can we talk about it in

our session with Dr S Him;

are you sure

Me;

yes.

Him;

ok

We carry on with breakfast. Aya and Siseko both come outside to tell us that they are done.

They've both bathed and are looking like their normal self. Nathi

goes to check the living room and

comes back looking impressed.

The look on Aya's face tells me that she had help from the staff, but I don't dare say anything

Nathi; I hope both of you won't do what you did again. I don't want you wasting food. There are millions of Kids that don't have food.

They both nod.

I hold out my arms, and Siseko comes running, while Aya sits on her father's lap.

Siseko looks at the beach and points at it

Siseko; mommy can we go swimming?

Me; yes boy

Aya; daddy will you also come? Maybe you can help me build a sand castle

Nathi; sorry my angle, daddy has some work to do. I'll play next time

Both Aya and Siseko look at him disappointed.

Me; baby, surely work can wait

Nathi; it can't. I have a few things I need to get done, before everyone arrives in France tomorrow

Me; oh ok.

Aya gets up and storms to her room. I think she is just so used to getting her way with Nathi, that when he says no, or when he reprimands her, it leaves her feeling some other way

I stand to go after her, but Nathi, insists on going to speak with her. I'm left with Siseko looking at me smiling.

Him; mommy, what

happened here He

points at my scar.

Me; mommy had a fall, but

im all better now Him; do

you want me to kiss it

better

Me; ok

He kives me a baby kiss, and

wraps his arms around me Him; is

it better now

Me; much

better my boy

Him; I love you

mommy Me; I

love you too my

boy.

I sit with Siseko wrapped around me. I make a promise to myself to never let him go. I want to be the best mother I can possibly be, because my worst fear would be for him to ever feel lonely, especially since his mother's life was taken in order for me to live.

86

The Kids and I spend our day on the beach. Nathi and Aya had a talk and it looks like they are fine.

Nathi didn't have time to even have lunch with us. I let him be, because in all honesty despite my fears,

he had been by my side for the past couple of months, its only fair that if he needs time we give him the time.

After lunch, I take the kids to the Cinema and let them watch a movie, while Nathi and I go sit with Dr S, for our session.

Dr; How are you both doing

Nathi and I both look at each other and smile

Nathi; we're ok Doc, we're just taking it one day at a time

Dr; that's good to hear. Mrs Khumalo you look well rested'

Me; I feel well rested. I think now with everything out in the open, we're both working on gaining each other's trust

Dr; that's good. You both need to remember to take things slowly. Trust isn't gained in a day. There will be times when you both doubt each other. You need to always talk to each other. Keep things open, and eventually you will both be able to fully trust one another

We both nod

Dr S; how is it having the kids here? I know that Mr Khumalo you had said you were worried about your wife's relationship with Siseko

We both smile

Nathi; yes, in the beginning I was. It all had to do with how Siseko was introduced to us. It was a heated time, and when we lost Lethu I became more worried, because I always thought Tshidi would hate Siseko for being my first born, especially since he was a boy, which is why I hadn't initially wanted Siseko to come to France, but to my surprise, when Siseko arrived things happened the exact opposite of how I

though they would go. Siseko is glued to Tshidi, he all of a sudden calls her mommy,

Nathi looks at me and smiles.

Him; Tshidi as well has been s accepting of Siseko. She has become the mother that I knew she could be.

I'm a lucky man.

He kisses the back of my hand

Dr; Mrs Khumalo, how has it been having Siseko

Me; its been good. I don't know what happened, but the minute he stepped off the Helicopter, we connected. I didn't see him as the little Gremlin that I though he was. Instead he just touched my heart.

Dr; so on the family front we ar ok?

Me; yes. I think we are ok. I mean its only been a few days, but so far so good.

Dr; good, now tell me about you two. How have you been

Me; we've been ok

Nathi; yah, but babe, you said there was something

you wanted to discuss in our session Me; oh yah, I

forgot

Dr S: we're all ears.

Me; im just a bit worried. I know its inevitable that we will have to go back to our lives in JHB soon. I get that. But im just worried.

Dr S; face your

husband I do

as told.

Dr; look him in the eyes, and tell him your fears. Trust him

to receive what you need to tell him. I look at Nathi

Me; baby, im worried. We've been in our own bubble for a while now, and I just worry that when we

have to get back to reality, that, we might not be able to cope without Dr S

Nathi; I hear you love. But we can't hide from reality forever.

Yes, things are going to get hectic. Its not going to be easy, I'm going to need to go back to work in full force, but we will make it work love. Just as long as we are honest and true with one another then we will be fine. We will make it work

I take a deep breath and instantly feel better. No use stressing about the inevitable. Nathi's right. As long as we are honest with one another, we should be fine.

The rest of our session with Dr S goes well. He assures us that we are doing ok. He also informs us that

he is going down to S.A ahead of time. We'll see him at least once a week, once we're back.

Nathi and I walk out our session feeling like a million bucks.. I think we're both happy that we've made it

this far.

I leave Nathi to work some more, and I go and check on the Kids in the cinema. They've both fallen asleep. I get Nathi to take them both to Aya's room so they can sleep in there.

We tiptoe out the room and Nathi goes back to work while I go to our room. I dial Boni and She answers almost immediately

Her; BIACH

Me; hey girl,

Her; did your man tell you that we arrive tomorrow

Me; yep. I cant wait. Thanks for my package. It arrived this morning, and luckily Nathi didn't open it

Her; did you like it

Me; yes, thank babe. I hope he likes it

Her; what man wouldn't like it. That set is bomb

Me; it sure is... im so glad you guys are coming tomorrow. Her; good, because we've all missed you

Me; not as much as

ive missed you Her;

how are you? Like

really

Me; I'm actually good. Nathi and I have worked through things, and we're ok.

Her; im glad. You guys had us worried.

Me; yah. I still don't know how the hell we got through everything, but Dr S is a genius,

Her; yah, he's the one that helped Mthunzi and Busi Me;

how's Hlokes

Her; he's fine. He's just been really busy, actually all of us have

been. Which is why we're all glad to take
a break and come see our girl in France

Me; did Hlokes tell you about the Presidential Ball

Her; yah, I'm not exactly excited

ME; me neither. But what can we do

Her; oh, by the way, the girls and I went to your boutique and each took some gowns Me; yah, I saw the email from my staff.

Her; is your styling team coming to France as well Me;

yep. They arrive with all of your staff

Her; phew, who knew this would be such work

Me; yah, these men owe us big time for making us have to deal with all this Her; tell me about it..

Me; so have you found anything useful about this Mapule girl

Her; Still working on it. From what I can tell she seems like your average 23 year old girl.

Me; but it doesn't make sense. Your average 23 year old wouldn't Fly all the way to France. How did she know he was in France anyway

Her; I think through the Presidential website. Nathi had his PR team relase a statement letting people know that he had taken leave, to get over losing Lethu.

Me; oh, makes sense

Her; girl, let me go. Ill see you tomorrow morning, Me; ok

love. Bye

I end our call and find Nathi

standing behind me Him;

Love?

His eyes look concerned

Me; I was
speaking to
Boni He
immediately
relaxes.

Him; how is she

I give him a questionable look

Him; I'm sorry, it's just that sometimes I still find it hard to
believe that you have really forgiven me, I
always think I'm dreaming. That ill wake up and you'll be gone

I take a step towards him, I place my hands around his waist

Me; baby, we've moved on from that. I understand why you did
the things you did. I don't like that you did, but understand, and
love you even more for the sacrifices that you made. I know it
must've been difficult. But I appreciate that you chose me.

Him; id chose you over and over again

Me; good, because if you didn't id cut your balls off

He tightens my hug

Me; are you done with work?

Him; no, but I want to spend time with you and the kids this
evening. Tomorrow is kind of back to action for me. I have a
meeting with the VP of France. I have a feeling its going to be a
long meeting

Me; so this is our last
night in our bubble Him;
yep.

Me; well, in that case we better
make the most of it Him; have
anything in mind?

Me; yes, actually I do. You just make sure you're ready
He gives me his boyish smile, and cups my butt.

Him; I hope I'm going to enjoy it

Me; I hope so.

He leans in and kisses me so passionately that we don't even
hear the kids come in. all I hear is Siseko
screaming. DADDY LEAVE MY MOMMY ALONE

We both freeze and there he is looking at us disgusted. He
runs in-between us and bushes Nathi away Him; sies Daddy
Nathi; what did I do boy

Him; you were

biting mommy!

laugh

Nathi; no. I was
kissing mommy

Him; why?

Nathi; because I love Mommy

Him; ha ana daddy. No kissing mommy like that

He shakes his head, and pulls up his hands signaling for me to
pick him up. I pick him up and he puts his hands around my
neck hugging me

Him; mommy
are you ok Me;
yes boy

Him; daddy mustn't do that. It's not nice

I just nod. I have no energy to explain to a 5-year-old, why its ok for his father to kiss me. Instead I take him with me to wake Aya from her nap. Its nearly time for dinner and I the last thing I need is for them not to want to sleep. We spend some time playing board games, the boys move to psp, while Aya and I go to her room.

Me; so tell me how school is going.

Her; its great mommy. I got

all A's this term Me; yes, I

saw. Are you still enjoying

school? Her; yes, its also

nice because Olwetho is

there Me; don't you get

home sick my love?

Her; sometimes, but then I just pick

up the phone and call you Me; you

are too clever for your age

Her; just like my mommy

Me; how does it feel to have a younger brother?

Her; its fine. I like Siseko. He's funny

Me; im glad you're adjusting. I worry about you sometimes
Her; no need to

worry mommy. She

gives me a hug

Me; you're birthday is coming up. What do you want to do

Her; I was hoping we could
go to Disney world. Me; that
sounds like fun

Her; it would even be nicer if
Olwetho could be there. Me; ill
speak to your dad and we'll see
what he says Her; mommy, can I

ask you something

Me; yes, anything

Her; do you know what happened to my other daddy, or where
he is?

My heart drops. I wasn't expecting this question.

Me; Aya, I don't know what happened to him. Im sure he is
working. You know how he's always
working. Why do you ask

Her; I just saw a picture of him that I had on my phone, I
just wonder why he just left without even saying goodbye

I tam her hands in mine.

Me; Aya, it doesn't matter why he left. Whats important is that
you know that he loved you. He loved you more than anything
in this world. He must have a good reason for leaving you. But
most importantly he left you with another father. Daddy loves

you Aya, just as much as your other father did. All you have to worry about is that you have him in your life. And that he is never going to leave you. Not ever.

I see her smile, and I know that she is over her little question.

Nathi come upstairs to let us know that dinner is ready. As always, the staff have made us a wonderful dinner. Nathi was so over the fancy stuff. He asked them to make him the usual Sunday colors, and boy did they deliver. They even made us Malva pudding with custard.

After stuffing ourselves with food, I take the kids and go give them a bath, and get them ready for bed, while Nathi, goes to work some more,

Once the kids are settled. I go upstairs and take a nice shower. I use the bronze oil and put it all over me. Once it's on, I put on my silk and lace lingerie. I went with the red, because apparently, men, love red on their woman, I put on the matching silk gown.

I put on my make up and let my weave loose. I light up the candles and put on a fluffy gown and head downstairs, I melt some chocolate, and cut up my strawberries. I make sure to take the whipped cream with me.

I set everything up, and once I'm certain that I was ready, I took a selfie of myself sucking a strawberry and sent it to Nathi with a caption saying "if you hurry, I might just suck you like I did with the strawberry"

I doubt that even lightning strikes as quickly as he came up those stairs. The door swings open, just as I swallow the

chocolate covered strawberry.

Im sitting in the chair with my legs open,
and the silk gown open. He swallows
hard and you hear him trying to steady
his heart beat.

Me; are you going to just stand there or are you going to lock
the door behind you?

He closed the door, and comes towards me. I stand up
take a strawberry and feed it to him. Me; want some
more?

He nods

Me; come and get it

I take another strawberry from the ones covered in
chocolate, I bite it and he bites the other half. He kisses me
and his hands are all over me. I start to get lost in the
moment, and then remember I'm supposed to be in charge. I
take a step back an he opens his eyes

Him; and now

Me; take off
your top Him;
take off your
gown

Me; if you do as I say I might just take it
off. Until then it stays on He smiles, and
does as I said.

Me; now the pants

He hesitates, but then does as told

Him; now im naked. What are

you going to do to me? I smile

and suck on a strawberry.

He takes a deep breath in and out

I drop to my knees and blow on him.

He clears his throat. I haven't even started sucking him and already he looks like he is about to burst.

I lick the tip and already his hands are in my hair. I unfasten the gown and throw it aside. i lick his length and then blow

I can sense the anticipation is killing him, so I take him in my mouth and start sucking, I take it slowly at first. I suck, lick then blow. Suck, lick blow. every time he's about to cum, I blow. then take a strawberry then get back on my knees, till I have him begging.

Him; Tshidi... please... baby, I

I suck him at a steady pace, then start picking up speed. His hands are in my weave. I know that this time, there's no way he is letting me go, so I suck him and play with my tongue, until he bursts. I swallow every bit of his cum, and then stand up.

His eyes are still closed. I pop another strawberry in my mouth and wait for him to come back to earth. He opens his eyes, and I know that I have awakened the crazy ass beast in him. He's still as hard as a rock. He comes marching towards me,

pressing me roughly against the wall. he presses his lips to mine and kisses me as though he never got his relief. My nails are pressing into his back. He moves from my

lips to my breasts. He licks my nipples, he takes them and starts sucking, his hands are gripping my ass, as he continues to torture my nipples.

He moves down and puts two fingers in me. he takes them out and puts hem in his mouth and sucks.

Him; you taste amazing

He plays with my clit

till I cant take it. Me; I

need to feel you

He rips my underwear and slides into me. I let out a gasp as he fills every inch of me.

He doesn't move at first. he just stares into my eyes

Him; I love your crazy ass.

I smile and he starts to move. I'm so helpless against the wall. he rams into me, till we both cum together, calling out each other's names.

My legs shake uncontrollably. He carries me to the bed, and I lay my head on his chest. I fall asleep to his beating heart, and once again thank my lucky stars that he is mine.

87

Waking up in Nathi's arms is honestly a dream come true. He is staring at me, with his gorgeous brown

eyes,

Me; I hope you are not planning on killing me

Him; not ever. I wouldn't make it a day without you

Me; good.

Him; especially after lastnight.

I giggle as I think of the fun we had

ME; well, let's just say I

wanted you to be happy Him;

I'm a lucky man indeed,

Me; and don't you forget it.

Him; The girls arrive today. Are you ready

for us to burst our bubble? Me; no. but I

know it has to happen

Him; I need to talk to you

about something ME;

what

Him; I really love you Tshidi, and

you know that right? Me; yes

Him; but I'm worried

Me; worried? Worried about what

He sits up and I instantly start to panic.

Him; Tshidi, I've spoilt you. I know that and it's because I love you, but I need you to remember who I am. At the root of things, I need you to understand that yes I'm the VP, but I'm also AXE

ME; huh?

Him; Tshidi, when I went into the force I was young. Siya and I were just finishing our degrees. The training was daunting. We spent hours and hours being trained to be cold. We were trained to kill, and basically we were trained to be monsters.

Me; Nathi why are you telling me this

Him; because I think it's time

you toughened up ME; ye?

Him; hear me out. I know it's not you, but I need you to understand what it really means to be my wife. I should've told you all of this in the beginning, but I never, once thought I would want you to live this life. I always thought it was over. We all did, but no matter how hard we try, its obvious that we're never going to be rid of our past life

Me; Nathi. Just say what you need to say

Him; We're all going back into the force

I look at him lost. I think my heart literally

dropped into the pit of my stomach ME; what

Him; the team we left in place hasn't been doing as well as it was when we were in charge.

ME; what about your current jobs

Him; we're going to have to do both. The guys and I will take turns with missions so as to not slack in our current jobs.

I take a deep breath.

Me; what does this mean with regards to time. Oure time

Him; I'm going to make it work. We haven't figured out the logistics, but this is one of the reasons the

guys arrive before the Presidential Ball. We need to sit and sort out how we're going to do this.

Me; oh

Him; i can do this. All of it, but only if I know that you will be by my side. I can't do this without you

Me; so these missions. How

dangerous are theyHe looks

down

Him; they can get a bit hectic. BUT we're Pro's

Me; Nathi, I don't like this. Not one bit. What if. What if I lose you, or you get hurt. What happens then

Him; Tshidi, im not going anywhere.

ME; you cant guarantee that. Nathi I cant lose you.

Him; Heey, baby don't do that. Don't cry

He hugs me

Him; Tshidi you're a great mother. An amazing wife. This doesn't change things. It only makes things a

bit hectic. But ill do my best to make it easier, I promise you, but I need to know that you are in

I take another

breath, and nod

Him; thank you

we sit in silence. An awkward silence, I don't really know what im supposed to say. He's asking a lot from me, but what choice do I have. I love him. I have to let him be happy. I don't want him resenting me

Me; I love you. And I want you to be happy, so if this is who you are and if this makes you happy, then yes. Go do what you do best

He looks at me. I can see he doubts me,

Me; Nathi, I don't know this Axe person. Just promise me one thing. You wont bring Axe home. Axe stays at the force. When you enter my house you are Nathi Him; ok. I promise

Me; in that case you go kick ass.

I see him let out a sigh of relief. Him; thank you baby.

Me; yah, you owe me. big time Him; ill make it up to you

Me; you can start by making

breakfast for your kids He

frowns

Him; what's the use of having staff, if you have to make breakfast

I roll my eyes and

he pinches me. Him;

I have a meeting to

go to.

ME; so, the bubble is

officially popped Him;

unfortunately, so

He gives me a kiss on the cheek and jumps out of bed to the shower. mxm, the idiot didn't even ask me if I want to shower with him. I guess honeymoon period is over.

I get out of bed and start by taking the sheets and duvet off the bed to the laundry room. I come back and put away the candles, and tidy up our clothes from the floor. I open the windows and let the ocean breeze come in,

When Nathi steps out the shower, I've finished tidying up, I've even laid out a suit for him.

Him;

Thanks,

baby Me;

pleasure

baby

I jump in the shower, and run through the things I need to do before the ladies arrive. I step out the shower and get dressed. I stick to shorts and a top. I have too much to do to be worried about what I look like.

When I head downstairs, Nathi is already walking out.

Me; not even a kiss goodbye?

Him; sorry babe. I'm running late. I still need to do security checks and all that Me; saying goodbye to your wife, won't even take a second

He smiles, and
comes closer,
Him; later

He kisses me and runs off before I start getting attached.

The kids come running down, we have
breakfast with Siseko sitting on my lap. Him;
mommy wheres daddy

Me; he's gone to work my love

Him; aww

Me; don't pout, he'll be back

Aya; yah, or he'll disappear off the face of the

earth and never bother to even call My heart

sinks, I thought Aya was over Msizi disappearing

Me; Aya, don't say that. Your father has to work.

I look at Siseko and he looks like he doesn't understand what's
happening

Aya; whatever

I look at Aya shocked.

ME; Aya, what's going on

Her; why would you care. You're probably the reason why he
left in the first place

She gets up off her chair, and storms to her room. For the very
first time, I am speechless.

Siseko looks at me looking for answers, but I don't know what to
say.

Me; Siseko, sit here and finish your food,

I go to the staff quarters and find the staff having breakfast. All 4 of them stand when they see me.

Me; no... please.. sit.. I'm sorry to bother you. I didn't realize you were having breakfast. I'll come back

Ms Jones; can we help you mam

Me; I was hoping to talk about a few things that I need help with today, but you eat first. ill be in the dining room when you're done

I leave them and instantly feel a bit bad. I've been here a month and have been so caught up in my feelings that I haven't even had 1 conversation with these woman

I sit wit Siseko while he finishes his food, I want to talk to Aya, but In all honesty, I have no idea what to say or do. She just seems so angry.

I see Ms Jones approaching

Me; Siseko, why don't you go play in the play room. Ive put on some cartoons for you. Ill come sit with you just now.

He nods, and runs upstairs. I don't know why he can't just walk.

Ms Jones; you wanted
to see us mam Me;
yes. Please sit
They all look at

each other Me; its

fine. I just want to

talk They sit

Me; I'm not sure if you are aware, but we have some guests
arriving today

Ms Jones; yes. Mr Khumalo had mentioned that

Me; We're having All the couples stay on the 2nd floor,
except for Mr Ndhlovu and First Lady Rifiloe. They'll stay in
the guest house.

Ms Jones; no problem

Me; can we also ensure that Mrs Ndhlovu gets pink and white
Lilly's in her room. Boniswa likes Sunflowers, Dourine likes
Amaryllis and Busi likes desert roses. Can we also make sure
that they have the vanilla scented candles in their room,

Ms Jones; are we sticking
with the white linens Me;

yes.. please

Ms Jones; We'll make sure everything is ready by the time they
arrive mam

Me; thank you Ms Jones.

They get up and leave. I let out deep sigh, and go upstairs to
try and deal with Aya and her random outburst from earlier.
I walk into her room and find her on her bed still crying. My
heart breaks a million times

I lay next to her. She moves closer to me and bursts and starts crying louder. I just hold her and let her take out what ever she is feeling.

When she finally calms down she lifts a now red eyes and all I see is sadness.

Me; nana, talk to mommy, tell me what's going on

Her; today is his birthday

I close my eyes and instantly remember. Today is the 11th, its Msizi's birthday. Every time on his birthday him and Aya would light a lantern and let it free. I don't know why I thought that Aya would just forget about him. I mean, I should've known she would miss him. I was so concerned about me that I didn't even think about what it would do to my child. She loved her Father more than anything, and instead of getting her ready for this, I just pushed Nathi into her life hoping she would just get over her father.

Me; im sorry Aya. I know you must really miss him

Her; why doesn't he call me mommy. He used to call me everyday, then he just stopped.

Me; Aya, its ok. You know how busy he used to get. Let him be my baby. Him; I miss him mommy. I really really miss him

My baby cries till she finally falls asleep. I leave her room and wipe my tears. I thought this would be easy, but now im not so sure.

I go to the playroom to check on Siseko and he's also fallen asleep on the play couch. I lift him and take him to Aya's room, then go take a moment to breathe. As much as I want to dwell on Aya and her troubles I can't at the moment.

I check on MS Jones, then decide to go get ready. I need to hide these red eyes,

I put on a simple black flowy jumpsuit with gold sandals. I check my make up and hair, and have to rush downstairs, when I hear the helicopter approaching,

I check on the kids on my way down, and find little Siseko wrapped around Aya. I leave them and go to the Helipad. Boni is the first one to come out, followed by Dourine, then Busi and lastly our First Lady Rifiloe. Despite everything that has been going on my life, I am ecstatic when I see my girls arriving.

The first person I give a hug

to is my crazy one. Her; so

this is how Nathi spends his

money

I roll my eyes

Me; Come on, let's get you crazies settled, I'm sure you are exhausted from the flight Rifiloe; forget the flight. Show us around the house.

We walk inside and I show them the house. I start with the outside and work our way inside. Me; yep, this is it

Dourine; no wonder you don't want to come home. This place is on another level Busi; plus you are glowing. Are you pregnant

Me; hell no

Boni; it must be the sex. You know what they say about semen. It makes you glow. I roll my eyes,

Me; lets feed you bitches, before anything I lead them to the veranda, where

Ms Jones has set up lunch Fifi; so

Tshidi. All jokes aside, how have you

been

I look up and see the worry in her eyes

Me; I've been ok. The past couple of months have honestly been daunting, but I'm ok. I don't know if I

would be saying the same if it wasn't for Dr Sutherland

Busi; he's really good. He helped me and Mthunzi when I thought all was lost

Dourine; Im just glad to see you happy and looking like your old self

Me; thank you... and I just want to apologies for being so distant.

You all reached out but I wasn't

receptive because I was so

caught up in my mess Boni; I

think we are just glad to see

you ok.

Me; yah, Nathi and I have talked, and we've fought and cried and nearly killed each other, but by some

miracle we found our way back to each other again

Boni lifts her glass

Her; here's to love, relationships and mostly our friendship.

Us; cheers.

We sit and enjoy brunch, the girls catch me up on some gossip and what's been happening in their lives. I listen but im also on my phone. Nathi hasn't stopped sending me crazy messages all morning

Out of nowhere Boni stands and pulls my phone out my hand. She looks at my phone and bursts out laughing

Me; Boni

Her; well you must've really laid it on him for him to beg you for more

I snatch the phone from her and roll my eyes Me; well you can say that Busi; what did you do Me; I don't kiss and tell Fifi; Come on Tshidi

Me; let's just say I made him sweat, then made him remember who we were before shit hit the fan Boni; well, well well, finally you have let the whore you out of the church mouse. Im proud gal. real proud

I sit and just absorb, the love I have for these crazy woman. If there's one thing I know for sure is that no matter what at least I have these bitches in my life to stay.

88

Nathi arrives sometime later, my heart immediately smiles.

When he gets out the car I see he's not alone. He spots us on the Veranda and they both come towards us.

Boni; and who is that fine
chocolate brother Me; no
clue

Dourine; he is
fine as hell Fifi;
like really,
really fine

ME; ladies. Keep your panties on. And shhh they're getting close

Him;

Ladies

Them; hi

Nathi

He kisses me on the cheek

Him; This is a friend. Lwazi Dlundu, He is an

agent based here in France We all greet

Lwazi and the two of them disappear.

Me; I'm going to go make sure they have food

Boni; I want to also come

Me; no, you sit your ass down and drink more wine

Dourine; yes, last thing we need is Hlokes killing someone while we're on vacation

I leave the ladies and go to the kitchen, I find Lwazi alone in Nathi's office.

me; oh, sorry. I thought he was here with you

Him; no problem Makhumalo. He's gone upstairs to change.

Me; thanks, I'll go check on him

I leave Lwazi and head to our room

where I find Nathi changing Me; baby

Him; hey love

Me; how was your meeting

Him; it went well. I think we're going to have a fruitful relationship with the French people ME; that's good.

You must be hungry

He gives me a

cheesy smile

Me; no as in for

food

Him; I don't want food. I want you

Me; well to bad, we've got guests

Him; let's send them back to wherever the hell they

came from and lock us in our bubble Me; too late for

that

Him; in that case I'll have lunch

Me; before we go I need to talk to you about something

Him; what's wrong

I'm about to tell but someone

comes barging into our room Him;

KNOCK GOD DAMMIT

Lwazi; Sorry Axe, but We've got to go
They both look at each other. They have

an unspoken conversation Nathi; shit

Lwazi disappears,

Nathi goes into the safe that I didn't even know existed, and
pulls out a gun. He puts it on the bed and takes a backpack out
from the safe.

I look at this seen in front of me in awe, I don't understand what
the hell is happening.

Nathi puts on a black hoodie, and
puts the gun in his waist. Him; ive
got to go. Ill see you later, don't go

out
ME; but baby

He's out the door before I can even utter a word.
Im left dumfounded. What just happened

I check on the kids, who are now in the play room having hot dogs, then go back outside to sit with the girls

Boni;

and then

ME; no

clue

Fifi; Siya just called. They've just arrived. Apparently they left right after us

Dourine; why the sudden rush

Busi; something isn't right

Boni; its this stupid force. We're all back to square 1

Fifi; tell me about it. I cant believe they

went back on a fulltime basis ME; what

does all of this mean though

Fifi; I need more wine.

I go downstairs to the cellar, and pull out 3 more bottles. By the rate we are going we are going to be drunk by dinner. I ask Ms Jones, to ensure to get someone to watch over the kids, and go back to the girls.

Boni; this my dear Tshidi means you won't be giving Nathi any blowjobs anytime soon. You're going to have to get yourself a side piece because you won't have a husband anymore

Me; ye ?

Boni; we all have them

I look at them with wide eyes. These

bitches cant be serious Me; you guys

are crazy if you think im going to

cheat

Boni rolls her eyes

Boni; listen Tshidi. What

you need is BOB Me;

who the fuck is BOB

The girls burst out laughing

Busi; BOB is a Battery

Operated Boyfriend

These crazy bitches

Me; hell no. im not
using a vibrator Busi;
you might just need
one

Fifi; yah, even I have one

Me; oh my God. Just when I had faith in you

Fifi; what? When your man is away for a
long period you need relief mos Dourine;
don't worry. Youll thank us later

Me; Nathi

would kill me

Boni shakes

herr head

Boni; I called Hlokes the one time and told him BOB had moved in and it was necessary for him to come home. He literally lost it. He was home the next day demanding to know who the hell BoB is. I pulled out BOB and right there started playing with myself. He just stood there watching with a bulge in his pants. I climaxed, then put BOB away, all the while I was ignoring him.

Me; that is ruthless

Fifi; Siya doesn't know about my BOB. He'd flip on me

Dourine; me too

Busi; well, Nna Mthunzi knows

Me; and he doesn't mind

Busi; no

Me; but guys what about them. How do they go

without it for long periods of time Boni; all I know is

that he is celibate till he gets back home

Busi; ;lets be honest. We don't know

Boni; oh I damn

well know Fifi;

how

Boni; see I check the sperm count.

We both look at her puzzled

Boni; if he has been having it on a regular I know that he will be able to fill a table spoon. But when he hasn't had it in a while he fills 3 tablespoons. If that motherfucker comes home from a mission and he isn't filling 3 tablespoons then shit is about to hit the fan

We all burst out laughing. Like only Boni can come up with such crazy shit Dourine; I honestly have no words

Boni; you bishes should try it. You'll thank me later
Fifi; I highly doubt it

Boni; speaking about semen. Tshidi

lets discuss the bish mapule Lord help

me

Me; well, the bish is in France

Boni; my question is why this bish has R1.2 million

rands in her bank account as we speak We all look at

her shocked

Fifi; when was it deposited

Boni; the very same day Tshidi and

Nathi left for France Dourine;

something seems off. This can't be

a coincidence Busi; what else do

you know

Boni; Well, apparently she was once the mistress of some
political guy. But he dumped her for someone else

Fifi; and now she's after Nathi

Me; yep. She calls, using

different numbers everytime

Busi; what does Nathi say

Me; he just doesn't even want to entertain it. He's said i must
deal with it

Dourine; we need to pay the bish a visit

Boni; problem is, we don't know where she is staying here in France

Dourine; ill get my brother on it

Just like that we move onto another subject.

We finish the 3rd bottle of wine after having dinner. I show the ladies their sleeping quarters, then go and play mommy.

I bath Siseko and put him to bed. Then go

to make sure that Aya is ok

Me; baby

Her; mommy

Me; are you feeling better

Her; yes. Siseko makes me feel better

ME; you know you can always talk to me right. That no matter

what, I'm always going to be here for you

She nods, and I brush her back till she falls asleep.

I try calling Nathi just after I finish taking a bath, but his phone is on VM. My body finally gives into the tiredness, after midnight.

I wake up and Nathi isn't in bed. My head is a bit heavy and truth be told id do anything to get back into bed, but knowing Siseko, he'll be up anytime now demanding pancakes, so instead I take a shower, and get dressed. Since we're not going anywhere I decide to wear my shorts and a top. The heat here is honestly on another level.

I check on the kids who thankfully are still fast asleep and head downstairs to make sure breakfast is

ready. I don't bother even calling Nathi again, because I can already feel my anger rising. I know that he asked said he

would be going back into the force, but he said nothing about

sleeping out at night and not taking calls. That alone just makes me want to kill him, So its best I just let him be, ill deal with his ass when he gets home.

As I approach the dining room, I hear loud voices. I spot Nathi's voice before anyone else's.

I freeze for a second, and breath. My 1st instinct is to cuss him out, but I decide to remember what Dr S said about respect.

The one thing I know for a fact is that he wont like me walking around with just shorts, but this weather is no joke, so he is just going to have to deal. If I can compromise, then so would he. They all keep quite when they see me approaching. I spot Siya, Hlokes, Mthunzi and Luzuko, Lwazi and at least 3 other guys that I don't know.

I greet them and give Nathi a fake smile, He smiles back, but looks at my shorts and frowns. I leave them and go to the kitchen to check on Ms Jones.

Me; Monring Ms Jones

Her; Morning Mrs Khumalo... we're about to serve breakfast

Me; That's great, thank you.... Please can I ask you to have breakfast for the ladies laid out on the

Veranda instead of the Dining room. Mr Khumalo

and his friends are rather loud, She smiles

Her; with
pleasure mam.

Me; thank you

I leave Ms Jones, and bump into Bongi on the way to Aya's
room.

Her; morning babe

Me; morning love. Breakfast will be ready in a sec, we're eating
at the Veranda

Her; are those idiots back yet

Me; yep and they've been drinking

She rolls her eyes and heads downstairs.

I open Aya's dooe and find her an Siseko having meaningless
conversation

Morning you two

They both look at me and smile
with their heavenly smile Aya;

morning mommy

Siseko; Morning Mommy

Me; do you two plan on
getting up anytime soon?

Siseko; nope

Me; and why not

Aya; is there

pancakes Me;

no

Aya takes the duvet and they both cover
their heads with the duvet Me; Ayanda

Her; (silence)

Me; we spoke about this. Daddy said no pancakes for a week
because of what you did

None of them answer, I can hear them giggling, and I flat
out refuse to let them do this to me Aya whispers
something to Siseko and he peeks his head out the duvet

Siseko; We going on a hunger strike mommy

I can just about make out what he
says in between the giggles Me;

Ayanda, Siseko, come. You need to
eat

Ayanda; its pancakes or nothing

Me; if both of you don't get out of bed now, I'm going to call
your father

They continue to giggle. My patience is
honestly starting to ware Me; Siseko,
come out of there

They continue to giggle, till I go to them and pull the duvet off
them

Me; Ayanda don't influence your brother like that

Her; I'm not mommy. He also doesn't want
porridge of bacon. He wants pancakes Me; you
can't have pancakes, now get out off bed

Siseko looked at Aya for what to do,
and none of them moved Me; fine.

Stay in bed and starve,

I leave them and go downstairs, Nathi is going to have to deal
with the two gremlins. I have no energy.

I arrive and find the guys eating in the dining room and the
ladies on the Veranda. I can feel Nathi's piercing eyes
following me. I look at the girls and I'm glad I'm not the only
one wearing shorts

Me;

morning

ladies Fifi;

hey babe

Boni; so does anyone know

what happened last night We all

shrug and look at Rifiloe

Fifi; I have no idea. All I got was an sms that they had arrived in
France, when I called Siya, he didn't
answer

Busi; mxm

Dourine; you know when they said to me they were going to
be going back into the force on a fulltime basis, I thought
maybe it would be gradually. Not this shit

Me; I think im just numb.

Busi; maybe we should do something. You know. Maybe go

out. See what the France nightlife has to offer

Me; we can't

Boni; why the hell not

Me; because the world knows we are here. The moment we leave there will be cameras everywhere

Fifi; she's right

Dourine; so basically,
we are stuck here Me;

yep

While we're busy talking, I see Dourine look at her phone and frown.

Dourine;

hell no

ME; what

is it Her;

nothing

We all look at her lost

Fifi; Dourine, out with it, what has you looking so pale

Her; Tshidi I'm sorry

Boni; Just spit it out

She hands me the phone and I swear I nearly faint.

Dourine; im sorry Tshidi. I asked my brother to get one of his mate's here in France to look into Mapule.

I had no clue

I look at the pictures and I can't believe what I see. Nathi is with Mapule. They're talking. They look

rather comfortable. I can tell that these were taken lastnight because of what he's wearing. The next

picture, I see Hlokes, and Siya talking to a familiar woman. I zoom the picture and see Ntsiki.

I take a deep breath. Nathi had better have a good ass excuse for all of this shit. How can he even stand to be in the same room with these woman. nxa

89

I am not going to flip out in front of our friends. I won't do this in front of them. Breath Tshidi, breath.

You have to breath before you set everyone on fire.

I keep having to rephrase these damn words in my head repeatedly, but in all honestly, it's not working

Boni; Tshidi breath, we don't know the full story

Fifi; Maybe there's an explanation.

Dourine; don't confront him now. Wait for him to come to you.

I sit and rock back and forth in my chair. I keep thinking about what possible explanation this idiot might have for even being near that bitch. After everything he goes to her and doesn't even bother to tell.

Busi; don't look now, he's coming

I look at Busi and she's looking at me

Me; he shouldn't come here. I am going to burst, I can feel it

Fifi; walk to your room. Don't do it here Tshidi. He's

going to feel disrespected if you do I take a deep

breath and count to 10. When I open my eyes he's

standing in front of me. Him; sorry to interrupt ladies.

Baby, I need a second

I stand up and walk to our room with him

following. I sit on our bed and wait Him; are

you ok? You seem a bit tense

This idiot though

Me; im fine

Him; I need to talk to you about something

Me; I'm listening

Him; I know you were probably

wondering what happened last night Me;

no not really, I know you were with her

He immediately tenses.

Him; how do you now. Tshidi please don't tell me you followed us

Me; is that what you care about

Him; It's not what you think

Me; how could you? How are you so

comfortable around her? Him; Tshidi.

I can explain

Me; then explain

Him; don't raise your voice at me. Tshidi we said we wouldn't do this. You said you trust me, what

happened to the trust

Me; it left the moment you went to see that bitch without telling me

Him; Tshidi, I didn't know. When we left here with Lwazi we had received intel that Hugo was coming to France. We knew he was going to sign some nuclear deal, and we had to do some damage control, Hammer arrived just in time, and when he introduced me to his informant it was Mapule

Me; so you expect me to believe this

Him; it's the truth. I swear. When she came to JHB it wasn't a coincidence that she was at the bar. She was struggling to get hold of Hammer. She wanted to talk to me but she didn't know if she could trust me. Her hitting on me was a way of trying to get me alone, so she could inform us on what's been happening

Me; Nathi do I look stupid

He stands up and scratches his chin. I know he is trying to contain his anger

Him; Tshidi, I am here. I'm being honest with you. I don't know what else you want me to do

I stand to leave because I can see that this is only going to get worse, but he holds onto my waist. He pulls me closer. I can feel his breath from the back of my neck

Him; Makhumalo, I don't want to fight. Please. I had no idea that she would be there. I swear on my life

Me; so you're going to be working with her Him; yes.

But its not anything I

promise Me; and Ntsiki

Him; Ntsiki turned herself in. we're still trying to figure out what to do with her Me; I don't like

this Nathi. Not one bit

Him; Tshidi I thought you and I were in this together. I thought you said we could make this work. Why are you being like this now

Me; because I didn't sign up for this.

He moves his hands from me roughly. Him; what do you mean

Tshidi

Me; you said you would make this work. That we would do this and we would be open, but already you have secrets

Him; HOW MANY TIMES DO I HAVE TO TELL YOU THE SAME THING?

ME; don't shout at me

Him; Why won't you accept the fact that this is me. this is who I am Tshidi. And its high time you accept me for me.

He walks out and slams the door behind him. I sit on the bed and try understanding what the hell just happened.

I leave our room after I've calmed down and go check on the two Gremlins who have decided they are on hunger strike. Hopefully now they are hungry enough to stop their nonsense

I try opening the door but its locked. I swear these two are going to drive me crazy. Who does that Me; Aya open the door

Her; no mommy

Me; if you don't open this door I am going to tell your father Siseko; we don't care

I really don't have the time or the energy for this.

I leave them and go downstairs. The guys have moved onto the Veranda and are now chilling with the girls.

Things are awkward between Nathi and I but, I need him to talk to his kids. I tap him on the shoulder and he turns around. I can see he's still irritated but I don't actually care at this particular time.

I walk back towards the house and he follows.

Him; Tshidi, I don't want to fight with you. M; this isn't about me

Him; then what's it about

Me; your children are

on a hunger strike He

looks at me confused.

Me; don't just stand there. Do something

I leave him at their door, and go back to the veranda. Those are his Gremlins. He must deal with them.

When I sit back down with the girls, I see Boni look at me and I shrug. She can just read that things went left.

Siya; I'm going to get some rest

Fifi; what time do we have

to be ready tonight Siya; we

all leave at 7pm Sharp

Dourine; what time will this thing end

Luzuko; It's a ball babe. It ends when

the last person goes home Busi; what

time do our stylists arrive

Me; In about

an hour

Hlokes;

Tshidi you

ok?

Me; I'm fine. Just a bit tired,

Siya; lets leave you and Nathi to talk

I look up and See Nathi standing behind Siya. Everyone leaves and goes to their rooms and I'm left here with Nathi

Him; the kids

are eating Me;

thanks

Him; those shorts are really short. Especially when you're seated

ME;

Silence

Him;

Tshidi

Me;

mhmm

Him; I'm talking to you

Me; that's funny, since I saw your girlfriend wearing ones shorter than these Him; Oh God, not this shit again. We spoke about this.

Me; Mhmm

Him; Tshidi, nothing is happening between myself and Mapule.

I love you. Ive spent months working on our marriage, you think I would mess that up for Mapule

Me; Nathi, tell me something. If it was me how would you feel? If I was now working with someone I confessed to nearly sleeping with. How would you react

Him; but I told you nothing happened, and believe me, nothing will

Me; then stop working with her. Send her to some other part of the world

Him; you know I cant do that. I cant just move someone based on my wifes feelings. Its unprofessional and you know it

Me; so Fuck what Tshidi feels

Him; Tshidi, you aren't being fair. I don't tell you how to run your boutique's. don't tell me how to run the force.

Me; you know what Fine Nathi. Fine. Do whatever makes you happy.

Him; Tshidi stop being so unreasonable. This is work.

Nothing more. Stop being dramatic Me; mhmm

His phone beeps and he looks at it then at me

Him; Mapule is here. We have a meeting with team. Please try not to kill her Me; you bought her here? You know how I feel and you bring her here Nathi Him; Tshidi, I didn't expect you to be like this. I thought you would understand

Me; I actually cant deal with this...

I stand up to leave and he holds onto my wrist. Im caught a bit off guard with just how hard he holds onto them

Him; we're in the middle of a discussion

Me; you're hurting me

Him; you promised me you'd stop running

Me; I'm not running. You said you had a meeting and my Styling team has just arrive

Him; don't start shit that you wont be able to finish Tshidi. I'm not going back there with you. You are my wife. Its time you started acting like it.

He lets go and I walk off rubbing my wrist. Gone is my sweet Nathi. Some idiot has awaken this AXE monster in him and now we all have to pay.

90

(Crop top for the weekend. I wont post this weekend. ill rather type your inserts for the next week.)

When I get back inside I find Mapule chilling in my lounge, with Lwazi. I don't bother greeting. I just take our styling teams to the Cinema. We need enough space and atleast the chairs in the Cinema are recliners so we can do our make up in there.

Once the teams set up, I go upstairs to change into my gown. Nathi walks in just as im about to walk out.

Him; where are, you going dressed like that

I take a deep breath. I've decided I refuse to let him get to me. Me; to the Cinema. I had my team set up in there

Him; why can't you wear a fluffy gown, that silk gown isn't appropriate for you to walk around in front of my agents

Me; Nathi, I'm going
to the Cinema Him;
Tshidi I'm not playing
with you.

He takes my hand and pulls me towards the closet. He
picks out the biggest, fluffiest gown he can possibly find
and hands it to me

Him; put
this on

Me;

Nathi

Him; mxm

He unties my silk gown and it drops to the floor. For a
second he looks like my Nathi, when he sees me half
naked, but a second later he forces the gown in his hand
over me.

Him; don't let me find you walking around here like that.
Especially when I have agents in the house Tshidi.

I roll my eyes and I see him get pissed

Him; I'm going out. I ill be back
before we have to leave tonight Me;

mhmm

Him; Tshidi I don't understand how we're going
backwards. We spoke about this and now you're starting
with the jealousy, and the insecurities. I thought we had
conquered that, and now all of a sudden we're back to
step 1

Me; you bought her into our home. You didn't speak to
me. you just decided and did things and I have to
pretend to be ok with it

Him; but Tshidi, I couldn't call you last night, I told you this
morning. Its not like I didn't plan on telling you. But still you
immediately go into a frenzy

Me; ok. Im sorry he. If that makes you happy, then I'm sorry
Him; you know Tshidi, I love you. But this back and forth
is exhausting. I cant keep doing this with you. The
nagging, the walking away, its all too much. Stop it
I take a deep
breath in and out
Me; can I go now
Him; you know what fine. Ill see you later.
He walks off and leaves me feeling worse. Did he
honestly just say I was nagging him. Tjo, Nathi is going to
be the death of me. like seriously. One if these day dim
going kick him in the balls, and he'll have no one to blame
but himself. Nxa

91

I sit in the cinema getting done. I decide to take out my
long weave, and rather replace it with a simple Chinese
cut. My nails are done in nude, and now we're working on
my make-up. The rest of the girls are here as well. We
haven't been able to speak regarding the events of today
because our stylists are here. The last thing we want is to
have any of them selling anything we say to the media, so
we all talk about useless things like recipes and the latest
ironing boards available. (Yawn)

By the time the stylist are done with make hair and nails.
I am just about over this whole thing. The only thing left is
for us to go get dressed.

I leave the ladies first with my stylist to go get dressed.
She's bought me a few dresses from my boutique. I want
to try on at least two dresses. One was black and a bit of
princess vibe which I wasn't feeling. So I went with the soft
peach boob tube mermaid lace dress. Thankfully it's not a

sweetheart cut dress cause otherwise my scar would be a bit visible. I put on one the many diamond necklaces and matching teardrop earrings that Nathi bought for me. I look up in the mirror and find him standing behind me. our eyes meet in the mirror.

Him; you
look beautiful
Me; thank
you

He leaves me and goes to shower. I've taken out his black tuxedo and placed it on the bed with matching shoes.

I know we have a lot for us to discuss, but to be honest I just don't have the energy. So for now I'm going to fake it till I make it.

He steps out the shower and gets dressed it's a bit awkward, so I decide to leave him to get dressed in peace. I check on the kids who are being watched over by the staff, then head downstairs to meet up with everyone else. As always my girls have come out to slay. They're all wearing gowns from my boutique and look every inch of the first ladies that they are. No one would believe me if I told them all the shit that comes out our mouths, right now we look like civilized, classy ladies.

Siya; is Your man done? We need to leave in the next 5 minutes

Im about to answer but Nathi beats me to it. He walks in looking like my very own James bond. Him; im ready lets do this

Siya; is everything in place regarding security Nathi'; yes. We've got eyes and ears everywhere Siya; inside the venue as well?

Nathi yep

Siya; good. Now lets go do this. The sooner I'm out this tux the better

Nathi takes my hand as we walk out. I come to an immediate halt and look up at him. He doesn't say anything. He just looks into my eyes.

Me; we can talk later.

Him; thank you for doing this. I know you're not a fan of this kind of thing

Im so emotionally drained that I don't even have the energy to respond. I just stand on my tiptoes and put my arms around his neck.

Me; kiss me

He doesn't wait for me to say anything else. His lips are mine in a split second, and immediately he washes away every bit of anger that I had left inside me.

We're both so caught up in the moment, that we forget that we have to get going. We're back in our bubble. Well that's until Hlokes clears his throat

Hlokes; you two need to get a room

Nathi; we have an entire mansion. A room isn't enough for us

Hlokes; sies man. I don't need to know the details of your romping. I just came to tell you guys to hurry. We're convoying there and you're keeping us waiting

Nathi; we'll be out in a second. Now get lost.

Im trying to suck up to my wife here Hlokes

rolls his eyes and leaves us

Nathi; you ready

Me; as ready as I'll ever be

Him; lets go show these French people what we are made of.

He takes my hand and we head to our car. I notice that Hlokes wasn't joking about the Convoy. We each have our own bullet proof SUV and we are surrounded by police escorts.

The moment we get into the car

Nathi puts something in his ear Me;

can everyone hear me?

For a second im lost then I realize that he's got an earpiece
in his ear.

Him; Nails are
we set Nails;
yes boss. All in
order Siya;
Rodger that

Nathi; loud and clear

Mthunzi; dude we can hear you. Im trying to kiss my wife here and the last thing I need is to hear your husky ass voice

Luzuko; loud and clear

Nathi; good. Just a reminder that we all need to keep our ears and eyes open. Hugo hasn't left

France, which means he is watching us, since we put a stop to his nuclear deal. It's a given he will try coming after all of us. I highly doubt that he'd try anything here because of all the security. But I need you all stay on alert.

Nails; sho boss

He takes out his earpiece and looks at me
Him; did I tell you look beautiful

I blush

Me; yes you did

Him; I like your dress. It hugs you in all the right places

Me; id much rather having you hug

me in all the right places. He looks

at tools who's driving and nudges

me. I smile

He leans in closer to my

ear and whispers Him; I

want to be the one to take

that dress off

I look up at him and see

the nothing but hunger Me;

how long do we have till we

get there

Him; about 15 min

I smile and press the button on my left which brings down the partition. He smiles at me nervously, as I move my hand up his now hard length. Him; Tshidi

I put my finger over my lips indication for him to keep quite. The last thing I need is for nails to know what I'm about to do.

I unzip his pants and he holds onto my hand. He shakes his head, but I don't listen. I pull out Rambo and smile.

He doesn't smile back. He looks a bit nervous. I lick the tip and he shifts uncontrollably. I hold him and suck. He holds my hair and I smack his hand off. Last thing I need is him messing with my weave.

Him; shit. Tshidi

I put my hand over his mouth and immediately stop. He looks at me with a pleading look Me; behave

He nods. And closes his eyes as I put my lips over his shaft. He takes deep breaths as I lick and suck. I wrap my tongue around him and suck. I feel his him thrusting and I know he's close. He thrusts, I suck till he bursts, leaving a warm liquid down my throat. I lick him clean, put Rambo back in his place, then zip him up.

Nathi doesn't open his eyes. He's still trying to catch his breath. I pull out my clutch and smooth out my hair and put on my lipstick and put some chewing gum in my mouth.

Nathi puts his earpiece and lets out a deep breath. He

opens his eyes and smiles at me shaking his head.
We may be fighting, and I may be mad at him, but no
matter how angry I am, I still like to satisfy my man
The car starts slowing down and I know that we've arrived

Him; I love
your crazy ass
Me; I love you
more

He rolls his eyes at me and look at him. He points to his ear and I know immediately that the guys are teasing him.

Him;
ready
Me;
yes

Tools opens the door for Nathi first. they both walk around the car. as per protocol, and Nathi opens the door for me. the moment we step out its cameras flashing everywhere. I look to my left and See Siya and Rifiloe. To my right is Hlokes and Boni and so on.

As per protocol, the vice president and his wife are waiting for us at the stairs. While the President and the first lady are await Siya and Fifi. We take a few pictures, then we are ushered into the state venue.

I make small with the second lady. Thankfully she knows English or else we would both be bored to death.

Boni keeps eyeing me and making funny faces. I already know that she is wanting to leave. I leave the second lady, who has to go back outside and greet 2nd ladies of other nations.

Busi; you and Nathi ok?

Me; we're fine. Im just going to have to let this Mapule thing go.

Fifi; it's the best thing to do. But just a word of advice. Keep your eyes open. These chicks in the force are not loyal. They are around our husbands 24/7 and we all know how weak men are

Me; lucky you. You've already been through all of this
Busi; we've all been through it except for
Boni and you. Just pray about it Dourine;
yah, plus Nathi doesn't seem like the type
to cheat

Boni; I think I'd kill Hlokes if he ever cheated

Me; I don't even want to think about it. If
he did I could never forgive him. Fifi; he
wont Tshidi. Nathi adores you.

Boni gives

me a look

Me; and

Her; she's coming with

Nathi. Don't freak Fifi;

take a deep breath and

play nice

Busi; smile. Never let the bitch know

she makes you uncomfortable I put on

my fake smile and we all pretend to

laugh at a stupid joke.

Him; (clears throat) sorry to disturb ladies.

Baby can I steal you for a second I don't

acknowledge Mapule. Who is now walking

next to me

Him; I wanted to formally introduce you to Mapule. I know
you guys met under peculiar circumstances. She is one
of us. She works under Hammer and is now going to be
working with us back in SA. Actually she'll be working
back and forth between S.A and Brazil

Me; hi

Her; Mrs Khumalo. Its nice to see you again

I smile , well Fake smile because truth be told I'm not interested

Her; I'm really sorry about the way we met. I was working undercover at the time, and I kind of had no choice
Me; its fine. Nathi explained everything

Her; thank you. You have no idea how excited I am to be working under him and Ghost. Its been my dream since I joined the force .

She flashes her smile and no matter how hard I try, I just cant shake the feeling that she wants more than just to work under him. She probably wants to be under him. Nxa. Luckily for me, the girls come to my rescue, because my idiot Husband has left me alone with Mapule. Honestly sometimes I

wonder what Nathi is thinking. He knows I want to murder this chick, and he leaves her here next to me.

Boni; sorry to interrupt. Girl, we're going to the ladies, then we are going to go take our seats. I look at tools and he nods.

Me; Mapule. If you'll excuse me.

Her; ill see you around

I smile and turn around to walk away with my girls. I let out a deep sigh of relief. Hell I deserve a medal for the stupid show I just put on, because in all honesty, all I want to do is throttle her.

We go to powder our noses, but then my phone rings. I look at the caller ID and notice its Aya.

I walk out the ladies and answer. I smile when she tells me that she just wanted to say goodnight. I speak to her and Siseko, then end the call.

When I look up I see a guy standing a few feet from me. he's literally staring at me. for a moment, I think he's maybe staring at someone behind me, but then he smiles and I know he's smiling at me.

I look down at my phone and ignore him. But then he walks towards me. I see Tools looking at him, but I look at him and slightly shake my head. Knowing Tools he would close this place down with the scene he is capable of making.

Him; I'm sorry I was staring. I just couldn't help myself Me; its

fine

Him; I'm Neli Abraao. I'm the prime minister of Angola.

He holds out his hand and I have no choice but to shake his hand. But then instead of shaking my hand he kisses it.

I see tools frown, but thankfully he doesn't move

Neli; You're more beautiful in person

than you are in magazines I smile

Me; why thank you

Neli; so how is the shelter doing

His question catches me off a bit, but I quickly gather my thoughts. He's probably just being friendly Me; its doing well. We now have over 300 woman staying there, and most of them are studying and then going out into the world to work

Him; that's amazing. My sister is a huge fan of your work. She's been begging me to bring her to SA so she can get an original gown from you

I smile.

Me; I'm so flattered. Tell her to let me know when she's in town, and id be glad to make her an original.

Him; well, that's very sweet of you. Me; oh,

its only a pleasure.

Him; I was actually hoping you could help her with more than just a dress Me; oh, I'm all ears

Him; I know its awkward since we just met, but I had actually planned on getting hold of your administration. But luckily for me here you are in the flesh. She needs a mentor. She's studied design, and is looking for help turning her brand into an international brand.

Me; oh, I see

Him; that's only if you don't mind

Me; no. of course I don't mind. Get her to get in touch with my administration and we can set something up.

Him; thank you. She will be so excited.

I just nod and smile, as he continues to make small talk. Its obvious that he is very protective of his sister. He somehow reminds me of Nathi and Thoko.

Him; can I walk you back to your chair.

Me; oh, no thank you. I'm still waiting for my friends. They should be out any minute. Him; in that case, let me leave you to enjoy the rest of your evening

He takes my hand again and kisses it, and walks away. I smile at myself. Its funny how life just has a way of fixing things. Atleast now I have something to look forward to once I get home

I turn around and see Nathi standing a few feet from me. I can tell he isn't happy, but because he couldn't do anything because he was in the middle of a conversation with the president of Cuba, Luckily for me the ladies walk out the bathroom, and we are escorted to our seats.

I notice our table is right next to the Angolan table.

Hopefully I won't run into this Neli guy. Last thing I need is Nathi killing someone here.

A few minutes after we are seated, Nathi and the guys take their seats. The waiters offer us champagne, but Nathi takes mine and hands me a bottle of still water instead.

I decide not to entertain him and take the water instead. I know he is just trying to get me to react, but I wont. I am going to enjoy this evening. And fighting with Nathi isn't up my alley

I spot Prime minister Neli walking to his table. He smiles and comes towards our table. My heat sinks.

He shouldn't be doing this. Not when Nathi is in such a modd. He greets Nathi the walks over to me.

Him; I wanted to introduce you to my sister.

Who also happens to be my plus 1 . I stand

nervously and greet her.

She introduces herself as Felicia. On an average day I would've given her my number , but as per protocol she has to go through my administration. Once they've done a full screening, only then will they give her my work mobile.

When I sit back down I notice a look between Siya and Nathi. Its like they are having an unspoken conversation. Hlokes looks at me and semi smiles. Thankfully the MC starts and the evening gets under way.

We are served a 7 course meal. The speeches are boring as hell, but hey this is what we do. After dinner, the dance floor is opened by the president and then the first lady. I'm not really in the mood to dance, but I don't really have a choice in the matter. This is one of the reasons Nathi and I had to do those stupid ballroom dance classes.

After the first dance, Hlokes walks over to us and playfully pushes Nathi aside Hlokes; stop hogging your wife, and let me take her for a spin

Nathi moves aside and hunts down Boni,

Hlokes; you look beautiful tonight

Me; thank you Dr

Him; how are you feeling

Me; super. I'm back to my normal self

Him; you look more like yourself. My

guy must be taking care of you I roll my

eyes and smile

Him; He loves you Tshidi. I've never seen him this happy.

His day starts and ends with you. Don't ever doubt his love for you

Me; Boni loves you just as much
He smiles.... No
actually, he blushes,
Him; she is amazing
isn't she
Me; very.
Him; I still don't
belive she's mine
Me; well, you
better believe it
Him; I guess we're both blessed then

Me; yep. I guess we are

Him; forget about Mapule. I'll keep an eye on her.

I freeze for a second. I want aware that they were aware of my ill feelings towards her He winks at me as the song ends.

we all take a break from the dancefloor, and we take a few pictures. By the end of the evening, my feet are killing.

Nathi; let's get
you home Me;
please

I stand to leave. I see Felicia, and I give her a hug goodbye. When we approach the door, I spot Neli. He waves goodbye and I wave back, much to nathi's annoyance. He squeezes my hand tighter, and I do my best not wince.

When we get into the car he
looks out the window. Me;
Khumalo
Him; Silence

I take that as my cue to leave him alone. When he's ready to talk I'll be ready to listen. I take off my heels, and put my feet on his lap.

He may be mad for whatever reason, but he sure as hell will rub my feet. Its his fault I had to wear heels anyway.

92

By the time we all arrive home we are all exhausted. The problem with hosting people at your home is that you cant go to bed till they are ready. Its after midnight already, but

we are still not in bed.
Instead Busi and Mthunzi decided
we all needed a night cap. Mthunzi;
So Thsidi where do you know Prime
minister Neli from I look up and see
Nathi's face harden

Me; I met him at the ball. He wanted to introduce me to
his sister, she's asked me to mentor her Mthunzi; Is that
all he wanted

I look at Busi and give her a look to get her man. I have
no idea why Mthunzi is asking me all these stupid
questions. Nathi's already annoyed. Last thing I need is
him thinking there was more to the conversation

Me; yes, that's
all he wanted

Luzuko;
mhmmm

Boni; (yawn) I think it's
time we all get to bed. Fifi;
yes. Please.

Everyone gets up and leaves to their designated rooms,
while Nathi holds my hand as I try to get up. Him; What are
you playing at

I look at him lost. I try taking my hand out of his, but he
squeezes it harder

Him; what did he want

Me; I told you Nathi. He just wanted me to
help his sister out that's all. I swear Him; then
why was he all over you.

Me; all over me? Nathi are

you hearing yourself Him;
yes. You let him kiss you
Me; haw, Nathi he kissed my hand. That's how people in
some places greet woman. you know this Him; you guys
spoke for a while. The way you were smiling at him, it
seemed way more than just

talking about
his sister Me;

let me go

Him; Tshidi, please

don't push me. Me;

whats that

supposed to mean

Him; keep doing what you're

doing and you'll soon find out He

lets go of my hand

I don't dare consider his eyes. I know that if I do, I'm not going to like what I see.

I leave him and go check on the kids. Siseko is in Aya's bed once again. I fix the duvet, and give them both a kiss.

When I get to our room, Nathi is sitting on the bed. He has both his face in his hands.

I try undoing my dress but I can't reach the zip. I know he said he wanted to take it off, but judging by his mood, I decide to let him be. I walk into the closet and try but fail dismally

He stands up and comes towards me. he stands right behind me and smacks my hand away from my zip.

Him; I told you I

wanted to take that off.

Me; I

He spans me and I yelp. Even though I'm wearing a dress, I still feel the sharp sting on my buttcheek.

I try turn around but he holds onto my hips and stops me from moving. I immediately know what he's going to do, and for some reason I'm already wet

his lips are on my neck. I close my eyes and take a deep breath.

Him; what do I have to do for you to listen Tshidi. You

know me. you know what I need, but you defy me
everyway you possibly can
He unzips my dress and it falls to the ground. He undoes
my strapless bra and lets it fall. I'm left with my underwear.
Him; I asked you a question

I don't answer him. He
spanks me and I yelp Him;
you better answer me

I try turning around but he holds onto my hips stopping
me. he takes one hand and puts in my panties.
He starts playing with me and I lean my head onto his
chest. I'd do anything to turn around and look at him. I
want to taste his lips, but I know he won't let me. once he
does all he'll want to do is make love to me, but right now
he's working on releasing his anger.

He stops and rips my panties off. He unbuckles his
pants and is inside me filling every inch of my being
before I can even catch my breath

I lean onto the shoe rack as he bangs into me, over and
over again. I try holding my moans but fail. The pure
pleasure of butterflies building inside me are too much to
hold.

He holds onto my weave and whispers in my ear “
you're mine”. I cum just as he finishes his sentence.
He cums just as I catch my breath. He withdraws and
takes a towel and cleans me up. I want to walk to the bed
but my knees are shaking, HE scoops me up and puts me
in bed. I pull the duvet up, but he holds onto it. His eyes
aren't the worm lovey dovey eyes that I'm used to. He
looks cold. Distant even

Him; don't ever let me catch you flirting with another man
again Tshidi. Don't push me

He puts the Duvet over me and walks away, leaving me

with chills down my spine. I don't like this Axe guy. Honestly he needs to go back to whichever hole he creeped out of.

I wake up the following morning with Nathi sleeping beside me. every muscle in my body aches. I'm used to Nathi being rough but last night was on another level. Not that I'm complaining. I enjoyed myself, but now the after effects aren't so great.

I get out bed and take a long hot bath. Tomorrow is Aya's birthday. Things have been so hectic I haven't even told Nathi that we are taking the kids to Disney land in Paris, the original plan was beach party, but Aya has been dying to go to Disney land and I haven't had the heart to say no.

I wake Nathi up after my bath. He hasn't been home properly the last couple of days, and I know Siseko and Aya miss him. Its only fair that he at least has breakfast with them before he starts his day

Me;

Nathi

Him;

mhmm

mMe;

wake

up.

Him; hmhmm Tshidi. I just got to bed 2 hours ago

Me; the kids have been asking about you. You should have breakfast with them Him; baby, ill see them tonight

Me; I need to talk to you

about Aya's birthday He

rubs his eyes and looks at

me.

Me; she wants to go to Disney world tomorrow

Him; eish baby. That's short notice. Ill have to organize security and right now I'm a bit short staffed Me; but I said yes to her

Him; without

discussing it with me

first Me; you were

busy. I didn't have

time

He shakes his head at me

Him; ill make

it happen Me;

thank you

Him; next time tell

me in advance Me;

yes, love...

I leave his grumpy ass in bed and go downstairs to make sure that breakfast is being set up. As always Ms Jones and her team have done a stellar job. I go back upstairs and wake Aya and Siseko up. Aya is over the moon because Olwetho, Owami, Lesedi and Mqobi arrive today. I still need to go out and buy her a present. Luckily Disneyworld handles the rest

When I arrive at breakfast everyone is already eating. I sit next to Nathi and decide to just have fruit and yoghurt for breakfast. I've gained way too much weight since arriving in France. To be honest I can't wait till we are back to SA. After speaking to Felicia last night, I realized just how much I missed my boutiques. I missed the thrill of seeing my designs coming to life. I miss seeing the look on my clients face when they find the dress that they are looking for.

I look up and find Boni waving at me. I immediately snap out of my daydream Boni;

you're on another planet

Me; sorry babe.

Nathi; what are you

thinking about Me;

nothing

He gives me a strange look, and I look away. I don't want to even mention Felicia's name because that will make

him think of Neli, and we all know especially after last night that that topic is a sore topic.

Boni; I was thinking of getting a tattoo, I wanted to know if you'll come with Me; sounds exciting

Boni; the guy is a renowned artist. He is the best in the world. Super professional and is able to squeeze us in Fifi; only problem is she's shit scared of needles Busi; why don't we all get one. Me; I'm game

Nathi looks at me and I look away

Dourine; where
would you want one
Me; I want one to
cover my scar Boni;
that's dope.

Nathi; don't you think you should ask
Hlokes first if you can get a tattoo I look
up at Hlokes. He looks at me and then at
Nathi.

Hlokes; from a doctors perspective it should fine.
Me; We wrap up breakfast and I go give the kids a bath.
Once done I change into a maxi dress and sandals.

Nathi walks in just as I'm about to leave

Me; oh, hi baby, I
thought you were at work

Him; i came back

Me; good. I was
about to phone you.

Him; whats wrong

Me; nothing. I was just letting you know that I took your
credit card

He looks at me and
shakes his head Him;
which one

Me; the black
investec one

Him; its cool

Me; what's my limit?

Him; whatever. I don't care about the
money. That's not why I'm back Me;

haw, why are you back then

Him; I cant even think straight

because of this tattoo saga Me;

why

Him; Tshidi if you're covering your scar, that means that he's going to see your breasts Me; yes but baby the guys a pro. He's done a million tattoos. I doubt he'll even notice Him; I don't like it.

Not one bit

Me; Nathi. You know how insecure I am about my scar. If this guy can cover it up, why wouldn't you want that for me.

Him; its not about that. I just don't like him seeing what belongs to me.

Me; Nathi can you for once, just this once stop making everything about you and your feelings. Think about what I want. You always expect me to compromise. Why cant you do the same

He looks down at his feet defeated. I refuse to let this go. He has to learn to compromise. Him; fine.

but security goes with you

Me; I know that

Him; and if Tools tells you to do something, you do it. No questions asked

Me; ok.

He walks out looking irritated. I follow behind him

Me; aren't you going to give me a kiss

Him; I'm late

Me; fine. suit yourself

I see him get in his car and drive off. I just smile.

Honestly I don't have the energy to be mad anymore.

Nathi can be a baby at times, and I'm guessing this is one of those times

Fifi;

ready

Me;

yes

Boni; I'm so glad you're doing this with me

Busi; im getting something small. Maybe a butterfly

Dourine; I'm thinking of getting

Luzuko's name on my shoulder Fifi;

that's cute

Boni; and you Tshidi? Are you getting Nathi's name
Me; hell no. what if things don't work out and I have his
name stuck on me

They all burst out laughing. I honestly don't see
whats so funny. I'm just being practical Busi;
you're funny. Really funny

Me; anyone care to share the joke

Boni; Tshidi darling. Do you honestly think
Nathi would ever let you go Me; what if he
doesn't want me

Fifi; Tshidi. Let me explain something to you. The minute
you said I Do. That was it. No one leaves the force, no
one leaves the marriage. The only way out is probably
through a body bag

I expect Rifiloe to tell me that she is
joking, but none of them are smiling Me;
no. that isn't right

Busi; Tshidi, mara you're strange. You are married to
AXE. Ive heard Mthunzi saying he can sometimes be
more ruthless than all of them put together. And you think
that man would ever let you go. Let alone let you be with
another man?

I feel shivers down my spine.

Boni; Tshidi, don't be scared. You love him, and that's all
that matters. Anything else you can work through
Dourine; I can see this whole Axe thing is getting to you
gal. word of advice, do you. Go back to work, have fun
with your girls and let him live out his potential. Let him be
happy. Its who they are. We don't have to understand it,
but we have to support them. You should've seen the
glow in Luzuko's eyes, when he told me they were going
back to the force. How can I be the one to tell him that he
cant. Its not fair

Fifi; Tshidi gal, its even going to be harder since Nathi is now in charge. I remember when it was Siya, it was never easy. He wasn't home much, he would go all Ghost on me when he was mad. I would fight him tooth and nail, but then I decided to stop. There was no use fighting it. Its in his blood.

Me; why is he incharge. I thought they were all going back Fifi; they are, but Siya is more a consultant than anything.

Boni; and since Hlokes took over after siya for a few years, its only fair that Nathi take over. Dourine; yep. You are officilally the bosses mrs. Get used to it. Once you accept it you'll find your peace.

Me; I just hate it when you bitches make sense

We leave the house and start by doing some shopping. I decide to get Aya a new phone. She's been wanting the latest iPhone, but that's all she's getting. Aya is already spoilt as it is. She doesn't need anymore than she already has

Once we're done shopping, we head to the tattoo parlor. As expected the place has been closed down, Its only us and 2 artists. I decide to get angel wings between both my breasts, a. Boni gets fairy on her arm, while Rifiloe gets Siya's initials on her wedding finger Busi and Dourine decide not to get anything. They get freaked out by the needles the moment we walk in. Boni also wants to chicken out, but I don't let her, she made us come here, she must suffer with me.

The moment the needle starts meeting my skin, I regret my decision. This shit is flipping painful, and what makes it worse is that Nathi didn't even want me getting it, and now I feel like this pain is flipping payback for not listening to

him.

By the time they're done I am in pain, but also flipping numb. I look at the tat in the mirror and it looks beautiful. It may feel like shit, but my scar is completely covered.

We leave the parlor just after 8pm. We're all starving, but Nathi and the guys are home, and I know we would never hear the end of it should we eat out. So we all brace our grumbling tummys and go home.

When we get home, we find over 10 cars parked in the drive way, by the sounds coming from the house it's a full on party. I look at the girls and they shrug, its clear they have no idea what's happening.

We all walk in to find a whole lot of people I don't know walking around. There are woman in the pool in bikini's and guys with beers in their hands. Looking at all the guys here I can tell that they are all agents. I'm guessing the thots in bikini's are their girlfriends.

I take a deep breath and walk inside, and find the guys playing poker in the lounge. I look around but cant find Nathi

Me; Hlokes, where's nathi

Him; he went to get a towel for Mapule. I think their upstairs Boni looks at me and can read my mind. She takes my hand and walks me to the other room Her; Tshidi. he's just getting a towel for her. Don't make anything of it

Me; why couldn't he ask Ms Jones

Her; it doesn't matter, she's part of the team, don't do anything stupid. You can deal with Nathi later, for now just play it cool

I take a deep breath and walk upstairs. I go straight to the playroom. Ive missed my kids and I think its best I just chill with them till I'm ready to face my idiot husband, unfortunately for me the kids are all fast asleep, so I go to my room instead.

I walk in and find Nathi in the closet. I can tell he's not alone because he's talking to someone, which I figure is Mapule. I put my bag down and walk to the closet.

Me; hi

They both turn to look at me. Nathi is in my closet looking for something, I don't know what

Him; Hi baby. I'm just trying to find something for Mapule to wear. She spilled something on her dress

I didn't realise that that was a dress. To me it looked like a shirt that she didn't bother weaing any panyts with.

That's just how short it is. Its actually funny, Nathi doesn't want me wearing anything basically over the knee, but he can bring a nearly half naked girl in our room and I must just deal. Her; Its no use, everything in here is a bit too big for me. ill just go to my hotel and change, the

I don't respond, I just look at the two of them. Its one thing for Nathi to have the witch in my house, but for him to bring her into our room is another level of disrespect, but I wont say anything. Theres no use. He will tell me that I'm nagging

Mapule walks out with her wet self, and I'm left with my roach of a husband Him; how was it?

By it I'm guessing he is referring to the tattoo parlor. A part of me wants to slap the shit out of him, and the other part just feels tired. Both emotionally and physically.

Me; it was fine
Him; can

I see it

Me; its wrapped up. He said to only take off the wrapping off tomorrow Him; and the pain

Me; nothing I couldn't handle. Ive been hurt far worse than the needle.

He looks at me and I walk to the bathroom. I cant shower because of the wrapping, but I need a moment to myself. It all just feels too much. Nathi doesn't understand just how much it hurts when he blatantly disregards my feelings.

This is supposed to be our home, and yet he decides to

have a full on pool party and doesn't think to at least run it past me.

I lock the door behind me and just sit on the toilet seat and take a moment to myself. I decide there and then that I am going to let Nathi be. Its obvious that I can't move on from him. Ive tried twice before and both times I failed, because I love him. I really do, so I'm going to keep myself busy.

Maybe if im back to my life, ill stop being the "naggy wife".

I don't participate at this stupid pool party. Instead I get into bed and take painkillers, only problem is that painkillers don't stop the pain in my heart from throbbing.

I wake up the next morning rather early. Thankfully Ms Jones and her staff have cleaned the house. I wonder when they went to bed, because knowing Nathi and his people, they probably partied till the sun came up.

As per tradition, I make Aya her favorite chocolate fudge cake. I've made one for her since her very first

birthday. I still can't believe how fast time flies. In a blink of an eye she's now 9 years old.

Ms Jones and her team look startled to see me.

Her; Morning

Mrs Khumalo

Me; morning Ms

Jones

Her; mam. I'm sorry, if I had known I would've made the cake for you Me; don't

worry about it. I wanted to make it. Its

Aya's birthday today

Her; oh, I'm sorry mam. If I knew I would've made sure the ladies and I started extra early

Me; Ms Jones. I'm fine. I was actually thinking you should take the day off. We're all leaving for Disney

world. You can come with, or just enjoy your day off.

Her; are you sure mam. I wouldn't want Mr Khumalo thinking ill of us

Me; I'm definitely sure. I'll start with breakfast. The ladies will help me clean up. You go and relax. I

know you
worked till late
Her; thank you
mam.

She leaves and I start with breakfast. I make the usual, eggs, bacon, sausage, mushrooms and toast. I even make pancakes for the kids. Nathi walks down just as I finish placing everything on the table.

Him; there you are

He looks flushed. Like he's been running around

Me; and then. Why do you look so flushed

Him; I thought.... (sigh)

Me; thought what

Him; that you had left... don't disappear like that

Me; I didn't disappear, I just came to the kitchen.

I needed to make aya her cake
Him; you should've woken me.

Me; its not like I could get out this
place. Even if I wanted to
Him; its good you know that

I swallow

Me; ; do you
want breakfast

Him; ill go
shower first

He walks but then stops

Him; you know I love you Tshidi. right?

I nod and continue with what I'm doing. Yes, I know he loves me, I just find it difficult to understand this side of him. The AXE side which has no regards for how I feel, then there is the side that I fell in love with. The man who is romantic, and loving. The man who kills to keep me alive. I miss that man, but I haven't seen him, not since I came across the Axe side of him. The only good thing is that tomorrow we all go back to S.A atleast then I can get back to my life.

The smile on Aya's face when she arrives in Disney world, is one that I'll never forget. she takes Nathi's hand and immediately they disappear to where all the rides are. They go on rides, She sees all the Disney characters that she adores, and takes as much pictures as she possibly can.

By the end of the day we are all exhausted. Aya hasn't left Nathi's side and Siseko hasn't left mine. He didn't quite enjoy himself. I think its because he is coming down with a cold. So the first thing I do when we get home is bath him and give him some medication.

I decide to let him sleep in our bed. Last thing I want is him having a fever in the middle of the night, and me not knowing.

Nathi puts Aya to bed, then comes to join us. He doesn't look t pleased to see Siseko in our bed, but thankfully he doesn't say anything.

He gets into bed and looks the opposite direction, and I do the same. If he doesn't want to address anything then I wont either. Maybe we can talk when we see Dr S next week.

When I wake up the following morning Nathi and Siseko aren't in bed. I take a lukewarm shower and put

my ointment on for

my tattoo. Nathi

walks in and stares

at me

Him; it

looks nice

Me;

Thank you

Him; we leave soon. Do you have everything you'll need

Me; yes. I'm keeping the clothes you bought

here. So there's no luggage for me Him; I'm

going to Meet with Lwazi and Mapule, then we

leave

Me; ok

Him; Tshidi. is everything ok?

You seem a bit off Me; you're

just imagining things. I'm

fine

Him; I know you're lying. I'm not going to beg. If you want to talk you know when to find me.

He leaves, and I get dressed, then go get the kids packed and ready to leave. By the time Nathi is back, the cars are loaded and we await the Helicopters. On cue they arrive, one after the other. It takes 3 helicopters to fit all of us. We get to the airport and thankfully we're all on the same jet. Last thing I needed was to be alone with Nathi and us not talking. Unfortunately however, all the girls sit with their spouses. So I

have no choice but to sit with Nathi. The only good thing is that Siseko refuses to sit down. I can tell that he is still tired. So I take him to our compartment, and we both lay down. Hopefully by the time we're up, we will be ready to land.

Being back home is a bit bitter sweet. We left on really bad terms and now we're back, and well, we're not exactly on the greatest terms, but at least no one is thinking of divorce.

Siseko has been asleep all the way back here, and now is back in bed already with Aya.

Hlokes gave me prescription for him, I just hope he sleeps throughout the night. Tomorrow, first thing ill

go get him some meds.

Nathi walks in just as I'm drifting off to sleep. He gets in next to me. I know we aren't really talking, but the distance between is kills me. So I move closer to him and put my head on his chest. He wraps his arms around me, and kisses my forehead. We both drift off to sleep. Hopefully when we wake up we will find a way around yet another mountain that we've both created. I'm woken up by Nathi's phone. It's a message. I try opening so I can tell him who it is, but for some reason he has a password.

I shake him awake. He opens his smokey eyes and looks at me lost

Me; your phone

He takes it and puts it under his pillow. I want to aks him about the password, but I know it will lead to a fight. And this time I refuse to let it go. Its unfair, how does he expect me to be ok with everything.

I shake him awake.

Me; Nathi

wake up

Him; Tshidi

its 3am Me;

Wake up

He looks at me with those stupid intimidating eyes

Me; nathi what's happening. Since when do we have passwords on our phones

Him; Tshidi, you're waking me up at 3am because you have a problem with my password Me; Im asking you one last time. What the hell is going on? I cant keep

going on like this Him; Tshidi, I have work on my phone. Some of these messages you cant see.

Me; so we have secrets now

Him; yes. Some things when it comes to work I cant share. Not even if I wanted to

Me; I can't do this.

Him; whats that supposed to mean

Me; I can pretend to be ok when obviously I'm not.

Him; what do you suggest I do? Its my job Tshidi

Me; You said we would make it work. Instead you come and go as you please. You have pull parties with halfnaked woman roaming around my house, and to make things worse you bring that thing into our

bedroom. And you expect me to smile and pretend I'm ok

Him; Tshidi, I didn't know I had to get permission from you to have people over

Me; and yet if I want to cross the road, I have to ask permission. Nathi you're pushing me away. We spoke about this. You promised you wouldn't bring your moods and this Axe shit home, but nowadays you're forever Axe. I think you tend to forget that I'm not married to Axe. I married you

Nathi. Not this bully that has taken over our household

Him; Tshidi, if only you could meet me halfway, we would be fine. but as always its your way or the

highway. You're not ever willing to compromise

Me; compromise? Nathi you nearly slept with her. And you have her walking around my house and I'm supposed to be ok

Him; Tshidi it would've never come to that. She would've told me the minute I stepped into her house. It was business, nothing more

Me; you know I wonder if it was me how would you feel knowing that I nearly slept with some man? Would you be ok with me bringing him to our house?

Him; its not the same and you know it

Me; you know what. Forget it. I give up. You can do whatever you want. You can come and go as you please. I'm done trying. You win Nathi. You win

I get up but he holds my hand

Him; where do you think you're going

Me; I'm moving into the spare bedroom. When you're ready to be a Husband you'll let me know

His phone beeps. He looks at it and immediately lets go of my hand. He goes to the closet and changes,

Him; ive got to run. Make sure you

don't leave the house. Me; Nathi

we're in the middle of a discussion

Him; you're moving nowhere. So for me the discussion is over.

Get back into bed,

My heart literally drops. How can he be so mean. He's just walked out me.

I try getting back to sleep, but sleep has deserted me. The only other option I have is to start drawing.

I take out my sketch pad and pencils, and immediately feel at ease. I have to keep thinking about

tomorrow, maybe tomorrow wont be so bad. They did say that this marriage thing wasn't easy. So I

guess this is just yet another wave that we will have to ride out.

94

Ive sitting on the floor for the past 4 hours drawing. Its kind of reminds me of a time where Msizi was still alive. He would beat

me, and I would somehow release my anger through my designs. Back then I could do up to 4 designs a day. Just sitting and drawing. The curve of my pencil on the paper would help me move on.

I sit and for the first time I realize that I have given up so much of me. I've given Nathi my all and once again became totally dependent on him. I became the very woman I tried getting away from while I was with Msizi, and now here I am again. I won't fool myself and say that I will leave him. That'll divorce him. That would just be stupid, because I know myself, and I know the love I have for him. Nathi is my soulmate. Yes he's fucked up, but I love him, and so I am going to make this work. I am going to do anything and everything in my power to make this relationship work, hopefully soon we will be able to get rid of Axe, and I will be able to get my man back. Now with that said it's time I get back to my life.

I've been miserable for too long. It's time Tshidi starts developing a backbone, and that starts now. This very instant.

I leave the designs I've worked on, and go get in the shower. Once done, I go check on the kids. Who are both thankfully fast asleep. I make us breakfast then decide to call Nathi.

He doesn't answer at first, but I try the second time and he answers Him;

Makhumalo

Me; Hi. I know you're busy, but I need to talk to you

Him; what's up

Me; I need to go out. I have a few things I need to get done

Him; things like

Me; Siseko needs meds, I need to check on the Boutiques and I need to get some things for Aya. Remember she goes back to school tomorrow

Him; shit. I forgot. Ill come pick you up by midday

Me; I don't need you to. You work. Ill ask tools to take me

Him; Oh

Me; I just thought you know since you're busy, I could get tools to take us, because I have a few things I need to buy for myself, and we both know just how much you hate shopping

Him; your security details

comes with you Me; yes. I

know

Him; Ok. You can go. Just keep your phone on

incase I need to get hold of you Me; ok

Him; I'll see you later

Me; cool

I put down the down go wake the kids. Siseko is still a bit off and Aya is suffering from Jet Lag, so I leave them with Aus Mavis, and head out.

I start at the chemist, then go get Aya's things. I decide to get something special for her. I print out a picture I had of Msizi. I want to frame it and give it her. I know she's hurting, and I hope when she comes back home for the next holidays, I will have the courage to tell her that he's dead. But for now this is the best I can do.

My last stop is my boutiques. Its amazing just how much I didn't realize how much I missed being here. My staff are as always amazing. The team of young designers that I hired have done me proud. Our wracks are full, and most importantly the books

are in order. The bridal boutique is on another level, but as always I want to do more. Its time we go into the big league. We have celebrities of all caliber's wearing our gowns. The nice thing is that our dresses are both high-end and affordable, so not only do the rich and famous like them, but our normal citizens can afford them as well.

I decide to send out an email to my staff. I want to have a meeting with all of them tomorrow. I have amazing ideas that I want to share, and judging by our books its only fair that they all get bonuses. They have all worked hard and despite my absence everything is running smoothly.

I leave the boutiques on a complete high. Tomorrow we kick ass, I want to take Diva coutour to the nextlevel, and that is what I'm going to concertrate on.

I arrive home and to my surprise Nathi is back. I greet him, then go to give Siseko his Meds. He may be running around, but his fever isn't getting any better. If this continues, I might have to get him admitted. I don't want this getting worse. I live Siseko with hios father, and go pack Aya's stuff. Its honestly bitter sweet. I really don't like this whole boarding school thing, but she is so happy there, I couldn't possibly take that away from her. Not even if I tried.

Me; Ayanda

I know Nathi hates it when I yell from upstairs, but he'll have to deal. I don't feel like walking down the stairs.

Her; coming mommy

She runs up the stairs. I don't know how many times I have to

tell her not to run. But that's a topic for another day

I sit on her bed with

her gift in hand. Me;

sit

She sits next to me

Me; Baby, I know that you've been wondering about your father, and well, I might not be sure where he is but I do know that he loves

you. So I got you this She takes

the gift and unwraps it. She

smiles instantly

Me; He may not be around, but he loves you. Don't ever forget how much he loved you

Her; Thank you mommy

She turns around and hugs Nathi, then runs back. I look up and see him standing at the door. He has a look on his face. I don't know if he's mad or not.

Him; what's

happening

Me; with

Him; with Aya. Why did you give her a picture of Msizi

I look down. I had totally forgotten to discuss the outburst Aya was having with him.

Me; she had a couple of outbursts while we were in France. She's feeling his absence, and it was coming

out in her attitude. So I thought I would give her something to remember him by

Him; and you didn't think I needed to know what was happening

Me; Nathi, things have been a bit off between us, and

Him; So if you and I are going through a patch I'm

not good enough to be her father Me; I didn't say

that

Him; Then what are you saying

ME; I'm not fighting with you about this. If you had been home

and had been a father you would know

what was happening.

I stand up to leave but

he blocks my way Me;

move

Him; Tshidi we may be going through shit. But don and I mean

never say the shit that just came out your mouth again. Aya is

my child, and we both know that when it comes to my kids, I

drop everything

The looks in his eyes tells me that I touched a nerve. One that I

had no right touching, but right now I'm angry and I don't care

Me; if only you could do the same for your wife.

He wants to respond, but my

phone rings interrupting us. I take

a deep breath and answer

Me; Hi Ma

Her; Hi Makoti. How are you

Me; I'm ok Ma. How are you and Baba Doing

Her; we're ok. Just old age
taking a toll on us
Me; I'm
sorry to hear that Ma.

Her; Haai, don't worry my love. It's a part of life...

But that's not the reason I called
Me; Mhmm

Her; Thoko gave birth a week ago, I'm not
sure if Nkosinathi told you
Me; no ma. He
didn't... But I'm listening

Her; so this weekend we have a ceremony welcoming him to
the family, so I wanted to know when you were coming down?
We need to start preparing the Mqombothi and everything
else

Me; oh, ok... ahmm.. Ill come down on Wednesday morning ma.
Tomorrow Aya leaves for CT and ill
need to wrap up few things at the boutiques. So Wednesday is
the earliest I can be there

Her; That's fine dear.

Ill see you then
Me;

Ok Ma

Her; Makoti, are you ok? You sound a bit down

Me; I'm fine Ma... (sigh)

Her; you know you can always talk to me right?

Me; Thank you Ma. But I'm fine. I think I'm just tired because of
the Jet lag

Her; ok.

Bye bye

Me; Bye

I take a deep breath and let it out. I wanted so badly to tell her
everything, but I just don't want to add
to the pressure we already have. The last thing I need is his

mother addressing our lives in KZN

I turn around and He's still standing there. He looks worried.

Me; please

move Him;

we need to

talk

Me; no thank you. There's no use. All you need to know is. I will do what I need to do. You do you and save the world. You can have her here whenever you want, oh, and you can sleep with her if you want. Quite frankly I don't care. Let's just keep out each other's way. Now move

Him; How is that a marriage Tshidi

Me; marriage? What marriage? This isn't a marriage. All you wanted was a wife that looked like your ex. You needed a wife because all your associates had one. So you picked up a wounded soul and repaired her just so you can confine her in a box and with as you please.

Him; Its not like that

Me; yes it is. That's my reality, but don't think that even for a second that I will let you disrespect me again. I'm done Nathi.

I'm done taking your shit. So yes. Ill be the perfect 2nd lady, and ill be an amazing mother, but you and I are done. You cant have it both ways.

Him; Tshidi

Me; and one more thing, This Axe shit needs to stay at your job. This is not HQ. This is my house, and when you walk through that door you are a father. Keep your job at work or so help me God Nathi I will ruin you. Don't test me. Ive been abused enough, I wont fucking take it from you. Are we clear?

He nods, and I push him aside and go downstairs to make dinner. Its my last night with Aya, I refuse to be unhappy.

I make spaghetti Bolognese, and mash potatoes for Siseko. He hates Spaghetti with a passion and God knows I'm not going to force-feed him.

Once Dinner is ready I send Aya to fetch Nathi. She comes back and we all sit and have dinner.

Thankfully Aya is on a sugar rush and is talking nonstop. If it wasn't for her it would be dead quiet. After Dinner, I bath her and Siseko, Then put them to bed. If it were up to me I would be going to sleep as well, but I have way too many things to do.

So first things first, I take my PJ's and my sketch pad to the spare bedroom. If that man thinks he can stop me he has another thing coming. Then I take my toiletry bag, and lock then lock my door.

After my shower, I sit and start jotting down my ideas for the boutiques. I don't know if my ideas are crazy or not, but I am going to put all my energy into my business. This has been my dream from when I was a little girl, and I have been so busy trying to be "the perfect wife" that I completely forgot what I wanted. Well, the time for that is gone, Its now or never and I chose now.

95

I knew he would come knocking and wanting to probably tear the door off, but I will not open. He must understand that I am serious. I will not move back into our room. He can beg, plead and even threaten, but I refuse.

Him; Tshidi open the damn door

I put on my head phones and continue to ignore him. Plus

Maxwell's voice is way better than his husky voice. I sit for a few minutes and still he is at the door. I leave him there and continue with my designs. Eventually he will give up, and thankfully he does. 11pm, I am able to finally get some shut eye.

The next morning I'm up before the sun meditating. I forgot just how much meditating daily helps.

After meditation, I say a prayer. I haven't prayed since I lost Lethu, but today I just pray for courage. That's all I need. After my prayer, I go to work out. Ive gained about 6 to 8 kilos since France and its high time that weight fell off. The work out sucked. Like it sucked big time, but hey, its better than nothing.

Aya as always runs down the stairs followed by Siseko. I've made them pancakes. And made Nathi a

farmhouse breakfast, while I have a spinach smoothie.

Nathi walks downstairs, and for a second my heart bleeds. He looks like he's aged a million years. But I know my husband.

He'll apologize and 2 days from now we will be back here.

Me; your breakfast

is in the oven Him;

Thanks

I feed Siseko, then go bath them. I expect Nathi to be gone by the time we leave for the airport but surprisingly he's here in the lounge.

Me; Aya, go to the car with your

brother, ill be out now She takes

her brother

Me; why aren't you at work

Him; I'm taking my
daughter to school Me;
mhmm ok. Ill go say
goodbye to her Him;
aren't you coming

Me; no. I'm going to work then I have to go to KZN. I'm seeing Aya in 2 weeks time

Him; oh

I leave him in the lounge and go say goodbye to Aya. Then I get in my car and tools and I drive off.

I get to the Boutique and the first thing I do is call a staff meeting. Its time to get my team on the same page.

ME; before I start, let me thank you all for everything you've done in the past few months that ive been away. So thank you and last night I was looking at our returns and I'm pleased to announce that you will all be getting a bonus for all your hard work

They look surprised but happy

M; and now I think its time we take Diva couture to the next level. 1st thing first we are going to open a plus size boutique. I want dresses, wedding dresses, lingerie but for plus size. From size 40 all the way to

50. The works. Then I want us to start doing runway shows. We're doing SA fashion week, and I'm working on getting us in the new york fashion week. So we have our work cut out for us. So designers, we have a strat meeting after this, and the rest of you keep the good work up.

I leave the teem and go to my office. I decide to order myself 2 huge bouquets of flowers. It's a beautiful day and why the hell not.

I don't honestly know where the day went, its like I looked up and it was 5pm.

I rush out the boutique, and head home. I haven't spoken to Nathi since he sent me an sms telling me

that Aya arrived safely in CT.

When I arrive home Nathi isn't home and neither is Siseko. I didn't want to talk to Nathi but now I have no choice. I take a deep breath, then dial him

Him;

Makhumalo

Me; where

is Siseko

Him; no

Hello

Me; Hi Nathi.

Where is Siseko '

Him; He's in KZN

Me; KZN?

Him; yes, after dropping Aya in CT I decided to let him go to KZN with some of the guards that were heading there

Me; Nathi he doesn't have his meds. His Crocodile teddy is here. He won't fall asleep without it. Why couldn't you just pick up the phone. Nxa.

I drop the call annoyed and call my mother in law

Her; Makoti

Me; hi Ma. I was just phoning to find out if Siseko is ok?

Her; yes, he's fine, but he doesn't have his clothes and his teddy. He's been asking for it all day

Me; I'm so sorry ma. uNkosinathi didn't tell me that he was taking him to KZN. I left for work and when I come back he's not here

Her; Makoti, why would he just do something like that? What's happening between you two ? did you

fight

Me(sigh) can I speak to him Ma. I miss him

Her; why are you
changing the subject
Me; Ma. Ubaba and I
are fine.

Her; Mhmm. Hold on for Siseko

I let out a sigh of relief. I honestly don't feel reliving the past
couple of weeks

Him;

Mommy

Me; Hi

Biy Boy

Him; Mommy are you
coming tomorrow Me;
yes my love. First thing
tomorrow, Him; I want
MyrCroc mommy

Me; Ill bring MR Croc with
me tomorrow, ok Him; ok

Me; I love you

Him; I love you too mommy

His little voice just breaks my heart. I can tell that he isn't happy
I end the conversation wipe away a tear.

Him; I'm sorry, I didn't think. I just wanted to

have some time with you alone I turn around

and see Nathi standing behind me

Me; mhmm

I stand up and start preparing dinner. Nathi doesn't say

anything and well, neither do I. instead I put my headphones in my ears and listen to some music. He hovers around but I ignore him. Once I'm done cooking I dish up for him and give him his food on a tray, then go to my room and eat my food watching some much-needed TV.

I hear a knock on the door. He doesn't wait for me to respond, he just walks in

Him; Tshidi we need to talk

Me; we've said everything that needed to be said

Him; How long are you going to do this? I get it Tshidi. ok I get it, now will you stop this charade and we move on

Me; its funny how you think my "charade" is a charade, where as its not. Nathi I am done. I've told you this a million times.

You can go and do what you want. Just don't involve me in any of it

Him; this is ridiculous.

Me; ridiculous? You know whats ridiculous? Is the fact that my whole life I have been feeling like I wasn't enough. I gave Msizi my freedom. My body, my everything. And now he's dead, and I have done the exact same thing with you. I've given you everything but I am done with that. You Nathi can go jump for all I care

Him; you don't mean that

Me; I do. You have disrespected me way too much and now I'm done.

Me; I do. You have disrespected me way too much and now I'm done.

I see Nathi wipe his forehead. I know he's

annoyed, but hey, that's not my problem Him; ok...

ok, im sorry

Me; I don't need your apology. You can go to the force and be this Axe guy. Its clear that Nathi doesn't exist anymore and I

for one refuse to be in a relationship with a man I didn't know even existed.

Him; but Tshidi, I love you. I know I've
messed up but I love you
Me; Love?
You don't know what the meaning of
love

Him; I know one thing for sure, and that is that I can't live
without you. Please Tshidi

Me: close the door on your way out

I stand up and take my plate downstairs. When I come back he's
still standing where I left him. He looks
tired.

Defeated
even I stand
by the door

Me; Nathi I have to be in KZN tomorrow, I am tired, please just
leave

He walks towards me and I notice the spark in his eye has
vanished. He stands inches from me and my first instinct is for
me to hold him, but I don't. he did this to himself and now he is
going to have to deal He leans in and puts his lips on mine. I
breathe and let him kiss me. I don't participate at first but I later
give in. I may be angry with him, but he is technically still my
husband, and the love and my desires for him don't just vanish.
He holds me closer, I try to let go but in all honesty, I don't
want to, but eventually I find the will and step back

Him; come back to our bedroom... please

Me; no

Nathi

Him;

why

Me; because sex isn't
going to fix us
Him;
but you're my wife

Me; Yes, and when you start treating me like the queen that I
am. I will be more than happy to come back. But for now, I
stay here

He walks out and I close the door behind him. I get into bed
and drift off to sleep. Hopefully tomorrow will be a better day

I'm up on Wednesday and I adhere to my new schedule. I start
with Meditation, Then prayer, then the Gym. And after that I
take a shower and pack. I pack dresses, pumps and doeks. For
today I wear a turquoise maxi dress, with turquoise pumps. I
cover my head, and my shoulders.

I leave my room to make breakfast, but before I even start. I
see a note from Nathi saying he had to go away and that he will
meet me in KZN. I take the note and throw it in the bin. There's
no use making breakfast, so I make myself a smoothie, and wait
for the car to bring the car around. The sooner I'm in KZN
The better.

The flight down to Durban is short. I haven't spoken to Nathi and
to be honest I miss him. But I won't call
him.

The moment the gate opens, Siseko comes running towards
me. The air is fresh and crisp. You can tell by the scent in the
air that I am in KZN.

Him; mommy where mr croc

Me; I don't get a kiss?

I lean down and he pecks
me on the cheeks. Him;
where's daddy?

Me; (clears throat) he's working boy. He'll be here soon

He takes Mr croc and runs off happily. My mother in law looks at me and smiles

Her; You're looking more like yourself

Me; thank you ma

Her; come. Lets get you settled.

She takes my hand and walks me to Nathi's

"room" which is actually a cottage. Her; so

where's your husband?

I look down at my hands

Me; I don't know ma

Her; whats going on
between the two of you?

Me; its complicated ma.

Her; then

uncomplicate it

Me; (sigh)

Her; well, then when you're ready you know where to find me

Me; thank you ma.

Her; come. Lets me introduce you to your nephew.

We walk over to Thoko's room. She is in a warm room with her
baby in his cot.

Me; hey

Her; oh my gosh Sis Tshidi
you look so slim Me; not
as cute as this guy

I give her a hug then go
look at her baby. Her; do

you want to hold him

Me; can I

Her; of course, you can

The moment I hold him in my arms he opens his eyes. I smile, but then think of Lethu. I never got to see my son, and now looking at Thoko's baby, I feel my heart break. Lethu would've been 4 weeks older than Thoko's son. I put him back in the cot.

She looks at me confused

Me; I should go help Ma with the pots.

I leave her and immediately take a deep

breath. I wont cry. I wont. Him;

makhumalo

I don't really remember calling him, but im in our room and I just wish that he was here

Me; please come.

(sniff) I need you

Him; Tshidi whats

wrong

Me; just come

I drop the call and hope that he will be here. Soon

Sorry if there are spelling errors

What the hell am I doing. Tshidi you are better than this. Pull yourself back together. You cannot come apart. Not now not here. Maybe once you're home, but for now you are Nomathemba Khumalo. You are a wife and you need to behave as such.

I get off the bed and go to the bathroom. I redo my make up and mAKE sure my doek is tied appropriately. One on the head, and one arou nd my shoulders. I take a deep breath and phone Nathi back, Him: MaKhumalo, I've been trying to call you, I was about to call my mother

Me: I'm fine

Him: I'm tying up lose ends. I should be there I a few hours Me: don't (clears throat) don't come. It's fine. I'm ok

Him: Baby please talk to me. I can tell that you're not ok Me:Nathi

I'm fine. Really,

Him: (sigh)

We sit on the line in an awkward silence, until I ca t take anymore Me: I've got to go

Him: MaKhumalo. Let me in

Those three words caught me a little off guard. I know hewasnt here. The place he wanted me to let him into was my heart, but

i couldn't. I had started building those walls again and i wasn't going to let him tear them down again. No ways

Me: ill, see you on Friday.

I end the call, and put my phone on silence. I know if I continue talking to him, I'm going to tell him why I wanted him here the first place, he'll come here and will find me vulnerable, and that's just not going to happen.

I leave my phone in the room and go start with umqombothi. I go to the hut outside where I find my mother in law and a few other woman from the village. MaKhumalo senior introduces me to all of them. You can see just how much pride sh3 takes in all of us.

Her: we were just about to start with umqombothi

Me: oh, ham how about I make you

ladies tea and I'll ,ale the beer Her: are

you Makoti

She looks at my

manicured nails

Me: don't worry

about these

Her: you're husband said not to work you to hard.

Me: ma, you know you're son. If it were up to him, I'd be in a castle surrounded by fire dragons, in the hopes that no one could even talk to me. I'm fine

She smiles, and i go back inside and make tea for them, then go back to the hut and serve them.

I leave then to gossip while I start with the beer. I start by mixing the mealie meal, the maize meal and wheat malt in a wilt bucket, I can tell by how quite it is that they are watching me. I k ow they probably think that me mosadi wa pampiri, (wife by marriage certificate) but truth be told my grandmother taught me better. I add cold water to the mix of about 3/4 level, then add 1 kettle of boiling water. I mixthe mixture together, then place the lid over it. It should ferment over night. I'll start cooking it tomorrow.

I walk out the hut and by the looks of approval I'm getting. I'm guessing my mother in law is happy.

I go back to my room, and go fetch the gift I had bought for Thoko's baby. I know she must be wondering what the hell happened earlier, and hopefully I'll be able to put her at ease.

Me: can I
come in

Her: of
course

I close the door behind me.

Me: I forgot to give
you this earlier She

smiles

Her: Thank you sis Tshidi

Me: how's the little guy doing

Her; he's fine. I've just

put him to sleep I sit on

the bed next to her.

Me: how are you feeling. Ma tells me you had a difficult labour

Her: it was horrible. The contractions started at midnight

on a Thursday, and i only gave birth on Saturday morning

Me: damn

Her: I felt like I was being

ripped apart on the inside Me:

was Hammer there for you

Her: no. Bhut Nathi kept him at work. Plus my parents don't

want to see him. Not till we've taken the matter to his family

Me: that sounds depressing

Her: you have no idea. To make matters worse I need to go

back to school. I can't even begin to think of leaving my son

here and going back to London, but Bhut Nathi has made it

clear that he wants me to go back and finish my degree or else

he'll cut me off.

She looks at me and i already know

she wants me to intervene Me: Thoko

Her: Please sis Tshidi. We all know he

only ever listens to you She gives me

this puppy eyes And i have no choice

but to give in

Me: I'll try

She hugs me and i roll my eyes. The door opens and none other than sbongile comes trotting in, Looking as beautiful as ever. Even in her Makoti attire she looks ever so elegant.

I stand and give her a hug

Her: you look like your normal self again. I'm glad

Bhuti has been taking care of you I just smile. I

don't know what else to do

Her: I see you started with the Mqombothi. It looks good. Me: I know you always do it, but i thought I would help Her: you my love are a God sent

She gives Thoko a hug and looks at the baby

Sbo: this child looks so much like Ndumiso when he was a baby Thoko:

Bhut Bandile said the same thing

Me: he must've

been so handsom

Thoko: if you say so

Sbo: enough about the baby. Please twll me

you have somethi g to drink I look up at her

Me: do you want tea

Sbo: my precious Tshidi. Tea? No. I was talking about something way more nicer than that Me: oh as in

alcohol

Thoko: yep. That's what she means

Me: in that case where is the

nearest bottle store In see

Sbongile smile

Thoko. Please bring

me some wine We

both look at her

Her: what? It's not like

I'm breastfeeding. Sbo:

what do you want to

drink

Her:

Guarana. 24

pack Me:

what's

Guarana

Sbongile. Come I'll teach you an thing or two. She

takes my hand and walks to the hut Sbo: Ma, we're

going to shoprit to get some groceries.

Her: oh ok. Please remember the things for

baking. We need to start tomorrow Sbo: ok

We leave the homestead and get into the car. we start

reversing but the guards don't open the gate. Her: and then ?

One of the guards come to the car window. I open it slowly

Him: I'm sorry mam. I don't have clearance for

you to leave the homesteads Me: were just

going to the shop's. I'm sure Nathi won't mind

Him: do you mind if I call,

him for clearance? I start

to get irritated

Me: go ahead.

I look at Thoko and roll my

eyes. She smiles The guard

hands me the phone

Me: hello

Him: I've been

trying to call you

Me: I've been busy.

Him: where are you and Sibongile going

Me: to the shop's. We're going to get groceries

Him: I don't think that's a good idea. Rather get the guards to do it

Me: Nathi. We're in the bus. No one knows who I am

here. Please. It's just for a few hours Him: fine. But your

team follows you

Me: that's fine.

I give the security guard his phone,

and they open the gate. We get to

the shop's and start buying.

I let Sbongile buy while I push the cart. She seems to know what she's doing. We fill 2 carts. Thankfully the liquor section is close by.

I see Sbongile take I don't know how many 6 packs of this Guarana stuff, and she buys us some lime looking drinks. She calls them pine twist. She vows that its the best thing that's happened to alcohol. She also buys us bottles. She says these are our disguise bottles.

When we're done shopping, we go get KFC for the kids. Then we head home.

We arrive home, and we start cooking. I see my father in law for the first time today. The first thing he asks me is if i made cupcakes. I let him down gently and promise to make some tomorrow.

The lady that helps with cleaning the house, takes Siseko and Ndumiso and baths them. While we make dinner.

Inc dinner is done, Sbongile tAkes the kids food in their room. While we dish up for the rest of the Family.

Me: where's

you're hubby Her:

he said he was on

his way Me:

should we wait for

him

Her: Nope. Ababa, has to eat, he takes his meds at 8pm

I lay the table, while S bongile takes a bowl with warm water to the parents to wash their hands.

We al, sit at the dinner table. Baba says Grace and we all dig in. As always my ,other in law is the life at dinner. She makes us all laugh with the amount of gossip she knows about everyone at the village.

After dinner, we go wash the dishes. The old people take the kids with them to bed, while we go to Thoko's room.

They've stacked the alcahol under Thokos bed. She opens a can for me and fills our disguise botrles itwith some ice and this pine twist thing.

At my very first sip. I'm sold. This stuff tastes amazing. I take down a gulp and burp for dear life. Sibongile: see I knew there was a crazy girl in there some where
Me: I can't beleivbi don't know about this

Thoko: how can you. Bhut Nathi has you under a leash

Sbo: I have no idea how you survive. This whole status thing must be draining
Me: you have no idea

Thoko: but At least you know for sure that big bro loves you. I'm not so sure about Sabelo
Me: what do you mean

Her: he's been u reachable latley. He does t even call much to see how the baby is doing
Me: he's probably just busy. Give him time. I'm sure he'll come around

She nods, but deep down I can see that she is hurting. We quickly change the subject and start talking about something else. I'm on my 4th can of this heaven sent stuff, when we hear voices.

We hide our bottles and cans. The door opens and in walks Bandile and Nathi. They greet us and we greet back.

The one part of me is happy to see Nathi, but another part isn't so sure. I was starting to enjoy myself, and now I would have to play happy family. He should've just come on Friday like he had said. By then I'm sure I would've been able to figure out how I was going to be able to sleep in the same bed as him and not flinch. I would've had a game plan on how I was too g to deal with our awkwardness. But as always Nathi had a way of demolishing my plans.

97

By the look that Nathi gives me I already know that he knows we've been up to no good. He arches his eyebrow and i know it's time i get out of here. Last thing I need is him causing a scene in front of his family.

Me: I'm gonna go
dish up for them

Nathi: no need.. we
ate at the airport Sbo;
in that case, I'm off to
bed.

She stands up and walks out with her man. I bid Thoko goodnight and walk out with Nathi following behind me. We get to our room, and i start unpacking my bags, while Nathi makes a few calls. It's obvious that the tension between us is getting too much, but at the same time i really miss him. I miss the times

when we were happy. When we didn't have any problems to worry about. I miss the fun carefree Nathi I fell I love with. Not this beast of a man, that keeps hurting me.

He walks in and i carry on unpacking his bags. I want to tell him that this is crazy, that we need to move on, but then I find a box of condoms, and all those earlier thoughts fly out the window.

I'm frozen. I wasn't expecting this. I want to shout and scream but i don't. Instead I open the box and find 2 condoms instead of 3. My heart breaks. Did he really do this? Could he really stoop to that level, that he thought that being unfaithful was ok. Jeez I know Nathi and i aren't perfect, but never. In a million years, would I have wanted to sleep with another man.

I turn around to face him. He knows just by the look I'm giving him that I'm pissed. But somehow I'm also calm.

Me: Why do you have condoms in your bag

He looks up at me. I can usually predict what he's going to say, but right now he isn't giving anything away.

Him: I don't know

Me: it's you're bag Nathi, what do you mean you Don't know? him:

Tshidi. I don't know how those got in there.

Me: mhmmm

There's honestly no use fighting about this. It's yet another litre of gas to the already existing fire keeping us apart, and quite frankly this just makes me build up another layer of bricks around my heart.

I unpack the rest of his stuff and put the condoms back in the same bag that I found them in. Then I go to the

bathroom and take a shower. I make it a point to take lotion and PJ's with me.

When I come out the shower, I put an alarm on for 4am, while Nathi sits and watches tv. I don't say goodnight. I just get under the covers and drift off to sleep.

Well, that is until Nathi switches on the light and pulls the duvet off of me. Nathi.

I am now beyond irritated with this whole silent treatment shit, that Tshidi is doing. Honestly I don't understand why she can't just talk to me.

She looks up at me with her sleepy eyes, and i can already see the irritation in them Her: Nathi,

what do you want

Me: sit up we need to talk.

Her: not now we don't. I need to be up at 4am tomorrow

Me: funny how you had totally forgotten

that when you were drinking She rolls

her eyes at me, which only mAKes me

angrier.

Me: Tshidi, I can't go on like this. This constant arguing, and the constant silent treatment. It needs to end and needs to end now

Her: Nathi, I don't really understand what it is that i need to do. You said I was forever nagging you. Now I stop and you have a problem.

Me: that's not what I meant and you know it. All I asked was for you to be more supportive. Was that too much to ask from my wife.

Her: support? Nathi I ha e supported you through everything. You wanted to be vice president I supported you. You hardly spend time at home i supported you. You ask me to support this AXE shit and i do. And what do I get

in return? I get you bringing a woman whom you nearly slept with into my house. You have her in our bedroom looking through my things and all the while I'm expected to smile and pretend all is well? And now all of a sudden we have condoms in your bag, after you weren't home? And again I'm supposed to what? Smile

Me: Tshidi

Her: no Nathi, don't you dare. I gave you all of me, and you have continued to hurt me regardless. What do you want from me. What more could I possibly have to give

Me: Tshidi, all I've asked is that you try understanding this side of my life. Its a part of me, and i need you to comes to terms with.

Her: if you think I'm going to let you to consistently humiliate me. I won't. Nathi you can work with this girl, and do what you want just keep me out of it. I'm not goi g to a have her around me.

Me: What are you saying

Her: you need to choose. It's either one of us goes, but you certainly cannot have both

I look at Tshidi and for the first time I actually feel stuck. I live my wife, and i want to make this work, but the last couple of weeks have been draining. Al we do is fight and in all honsety is flipping tiring.

Me: Tshidi don't give me ultimatums. You know that I can't just drop Mapule. She is an agent. I have to work with her. She knows a lot about a lot of things, and i can't just stop working with her because my wife doesn't like her

I see Tshidi drop her eyes. I can see I've hurt her, but in all honesty I can't do anything about Mapule. I can't fire her because she hasn't done anything wrong. I just wish Tshidi would understand where I'm coming from.

Her: well, I guess it's clear that you've chosen her.

She pulls the duvet over her head. I want to talk to her and make her see reason but i have no energy left in me. How do I explain the same thing over and over again? How do I make her beleive that those condoms aren't mine.

Her: you know what's sad is that i would've chosen you over any and everything. But now attest I know where I stand. I am always got g to come second to the force aren't I?

I look away because I can't answer her question, because I know the answer is yes. I saw it in Siya and Rifiloes mareiage, and now Herr it is on my own.

If no could I would throw this whole thing down the drain. I would, but right now we are in the middle of something brewing. The very person who has tried killing me has come out with guns blazing. He is recruiting old enemies from all of our pasts, and beleive me when I say that I am going to have have to be more Axe, than Nathi and that means that I'll hardly be be home for the next couple of months.

I was actually hoping To spend this weekend with Tshidi and my family becauseas of Tuesday I am going to be roaming around the world trying to stop a potential war, but since it's obvious that nothing i say or do is right, I decide to let Tshidi be. No use trying to make her see reason.

I take a deep breath. I've never thought I would be doing this, but i guess it's for the best. Maybe the couple of month apart is what we need. It is after all what the doctor had suggested in France.

Tshidi

The naming and welcoming cermony for Thokos son Siphos is a great successful the Mqombothi goes down well with the village men, and my father in law is happy about the cupcakes.

Nathi and i haven't really spoken since the night he arrived. I think we're broth just tired and we both know we

can't go on like this, so it's obvious that we are in the darkest of tunnels and there seems to be no way out this time.

I haven't given myself time to think about what "this" actually means. Instead I have been busy with my duties, and have stayed out of Nath's way, but now that its time to leave I can feel the heaviness in my heart. I know that us being alone is going to force us to face our demons, and that is something that I'm not looking forward to doing.

I give everyone a kiss and hug goodbye. I have a feeling that it might be a while if ever till I see them. The one person I dread saying goodbye to is Nathi's mother because she can always read past my facade.

She looks at me as I lean in to hug her, and she can see tight through me. Thankfully we are surrounded by uncles and their wives, so i am sparred.

Him: shall we go

I nod and he takes my hand and we walk to the car. I wanted to take Siseko with, but my mother in law insists on Him being there a few weeks longer. So I gave in and just let it be.

The ride to the airport is awkward. Tools puts the radio on just so there is a voice to listen to. When we arrive home, I head straight to my room and change into my tracksuit and my slippers, then I go downstairs to make myself a smoothie. I've been subjected to so much starch since KZN, I just crave something healthy.

I make myself a smoothie and make a big sandwich for Nathi. I know that since he was in KZN since Wednesday. He must have a lot to catch up with.

I walk in and he's on the phone. He's caught a bit off guard but i just lay the sandwich and his drink on the table and go back upstairs.

We may not be talking, but it doesn't mean I don't love him. To be honest I wish we could just forget what was said in KZN but it's not that simple

Him: thank you for lunch

I look up and see him standing in front of me. I was so out of it, I didn't even hear him come into the cinema. I was so caught up in the video of our wedding day that I totally zoned out

Me: it's a pleasure

He smiles when he sees the part where I wash his feet during our traditional wedding. It seems like so long ago, when actually it's just been under two years.

He takes the remote and pauses the video

Him: I need to talk to you about something

Me: I'm all ears

Him: I'm going away for a while. There's some things I need to work on outside of S.A. Me: huh

Him: I can't really go into detail but it's important that I focus on this mission 100% Me: oh

Him: I'm not sure when I'll be back. Probably a few months. The news will just make it seem like I am meeting with vice presidents of different nations to strengthen our relationships, which I will be doing, but I will also be working on other things. Things that have to do with the force

I nod... I'm lost I don't know what to say

Me: what does that mean for us?

Him: your duties as a 2nd lady still stand. We will need to still present a United Front. We are still married

I nod

Me: you didn't answer my question.

What does this mean for us? Him: I don't know Tshidi.

His answer literally feels like a knife through my heart. I know things have been bad, but this is too much.

I take a deep breath. This can't be happening

Me; (clears throat) don't do this Nathi don't walk away

from us

Him: Tshidi I have no choice. Things can't be left the way they are. I have to do this. It's not about us and our fights. It's just something I have to do.

I stand up clumsily nearly tripping over my own two feet.

Me: so let me get this straight. You're leaving, and I'm guessing Mapule is coming with you. For months on end, and i don't have a choice in all of this?

He wipes his forehead and i can see that as much as I want to hate him, that he is Struggling with this just as much as i am.

Him: Tshidi I love you. With everything In me. I tried. We all did, to put this aside. But we have all failed. It's in my blood. It's who I am. And i know its a lot to ask for. But I need to do this. I can't just ignore the threats. This thing is going to blow, and when it does I don't want you to be in the firing line.

Me: don't do this. There has to be another way.

He comes closer and stands in front of me wiping away a tear that had fallen. I want hate him. Tell him that I want to kill him, but the truth is i don't. I understand now more than ever that he needs me to let him go, and i am going to do just that.

He puts his lips on mine. I put my hands around his neck. I need him now. He scoops me up and walks to our room.

He makes love to me so tenderly, that I know that this is it.

This is probably the last time that I will get to be with him, and that alone breaks down every wall that I have tried building around my heart. All that's left now is a broken heart. There is however one thing for certain. We both love eachother, but we both know we can't carry on like this. Sometimes love alone isnt enough.

I wake up after a night of blissful love making and somehow Nathi isn't by my side. I put on his T-shirt from last night and go looking for him.

I look through every room in the house, but there is no Nathi. My head is telling me that he's gone, but my heart is telling me that he is here somewhere. He wouldn't leave me, not after what we shared last night. I walk into the kitchen and find a note on the fridge.

you looked so peaceful. I didn't want to hurt you again
 I love you so much. I hope one
 day we will be able to work
 Through everything... See you
 soon
 N

My heart drops to the pit of my stomach. He's gone. Like he left and didn't even say goodbye, I call him and his phone goes to voicemail. I decide to let it be.

There's no use.

I'm trying trying hard not to breakdown but I fail dismally. Like we only spoke about this last night. I thought he would give me time to absorb, but instead he sleeps with me and creeps out like I'm some cheap whore he picked up along the way. Its now evident that we are over.

There's no way we can survive this one.

I go back to bed and cry my lungs out. I was supposed to go into the boutique, but with the way I'm feeling. There's no way I'm going to be able to go in today. I decide to let myself grieve. I'll cry, I'll eat and ill cry some more, but as of tomorrow, I go back to work.

as the mlungu saying goes, there no use crying over spilled milk. So I'm up on Tuesday morning. Red eyes and all, and ready for work. I look at myself in the mirror and go to the Boutiques.

Nathi

I know that the way I left isn't appropriate, Hell, I'm sure that Tshidi hates me right now, but I wasn't going to let the condom issue go. The only person who could've put those in my bag was Mapule. And that is because I let her use my suite to get ready while we were in CT. the whole time I was in a meeting; she must've put them in my bag. Now I know I've been a lot of things, but I am not a cheat, and that was the probably another spanner in my marriage, and that didn't sit well with me. So here I am again in CT. I want her to come clean, because I can't work with traitors. If she didn't this then she's is going to regret it.

When she opens the door and sees me, she looks a bit surprised.

Her; boss. Sorry .. I wasn't expecting you.. I thought we were meeting at the airport with the rest of the team.

I look at her and she has on what I would consider no clothes, where as others would call it underwear.

Me; go get dressed. We need to talk

She smiles and opens the door. She goes to the room and finds me seated in the lounge. Next to me is the pack of condoms

She looks at the condoms then at me

Her; (clears throat) whats going on? You know we could never (clears throat) Me; don't act stupid. We both know you did this.

Her; what? Me? AXE. Why would I do that

I stand up and look at her annoyed, I grab her by the throat and pull out my gun.

Me; do you know what I do to people who mess with my wife. Ask around Mapule. Mess with Tshidi again, and it will be the end of you. Are we clear

Her; yes.. please Axe.. just put the gun away

Me; I'm going to tell you this once, and once only. Stay away from my wife. Don't ever pull a stunt like this again. If you do I will kill you.

I let go of her

Me; be at the airport in an hour. I don't want to be late
I walk out and leave her a bit startled. In any other instant I, would've probably kicked her off the force, but unfortunately for me, she has been working on Hugo for so long. She is primitive to this case. So for now she's off the hook. But I don't forget. her day is coming.

Tshidi

Its been a week since Nathi left. He hasn't called, and well, I've given up. No use its obvious that he isn't thinking about us, so now I just concentrate on me. plus work right now is hectic. SA fashion week is coming up and we are hell of a busy. I have an entire range to complete in less than 2 weeks, then I'm off to New York so crying over Nathi isn't in my schedule.

Tools; Mam

I look up and Tools is standing in front of me. I smile. I haven't seen Tools since I came back from KZN

Me; Hi Tools. I didn't realize you were back

Him; I got back this morning. Has everything been ok with Bones Me; everything's been fine tools.

Him; (clears Throat) I have... AXE

Asked me to give you this He gives me and an envelope and I throw it in the bin

Him; Mam... Can I

Speak out of turn?

Me; go ahead

Him; He hasn't been himself since he left. He's working, but he's is a bit distracted. Its like there is something on his mind, and well, its messing with his head
Me; ok, and you're telling me this, because?

Him; Mam, it's just that, when an agent. Or should I say a leader is on a mission, he needs to concentrate. He needs to lead his team out of a war. And if he isn't there. Or should I say fully there then it risks the lives of all the agents

Me; Tools I'm sorry to cut you off. I am, but I have so much to do. I can't be worried about a grown 38-year-old man

Him. Mam. Please. Just call him. Speak to him I'm sure he'll feel better

I look at tools and to be honest I'm irritated, but then again this man risks his life every single day for me and this is the first-time in 2 years that he has asked me for a favor.,

Me: Ok.. Ill see what I can do

Him; Thank you mam,

He leaves me and I'm left feeling more anxious than I've been all week. I was ok. I was doing things myself. I was getting through the day without him. Yes I've lost weight, and yes I haven't been eating, and I'm miserable at home. But I was not going to give in, well that's until Tools came along and messed up my plans.

I take a big breath, and dial him.

Surprisingly he answers Him;

MaKhumalo

Me; Silence

I don't get how he can call me that, and yet he's left and hasn't even bothered to call me. But I made a Promise, and I intend to keep to it

Me; how are
things going

Him; fine

Me; ok

Silenc

e.....

Me; well this is awkward

He laughs. Actually, chuckles, but I'm
guessing that's a good thing Him; You
sound well

Me;

mhmm

yah, Him;

I miss

you

Me; you could've called me if you did

Him; I didn't think you would
want to hear from me Me; so

you took the cowards way
out

Him; so you called
me to insult me Me;

its what I do best

Him; mhhmm no. you do something else better, like that
thing you do when you have me at your mercy

I blush

Me; You sir have a dirty mind

Him; can you blame me? I haven't seen or

spoken to my wife for an entire week I decide

to tease him. Rattle his feathers a bit

ME; you're wife? Well I didn't
know we were married. Him;

we're apart, but you're still
mine

Me; Mhmm? That's the same thing Thabo
said last night, while I lay in his arm I hear his
breath quicken. I know he's pissed.

Him; don't play like that

Me; who said

anything about

playing? Him; Tshidi. I

swear to God I'll

Me; Relax, I'm just pulling your leg.

Him; Tshidi, You're mine. Don't ever, even for a second think that ill ever let you go

Me; you know instead of worrying about my filled-up bed, why don't you kick ass where ever you are? I hear you've been slacking lately

Him; you're funny

Me: no. actually rumor is you've lost your touch. The Famous Axe has let pussy or rather a Woman get in the way of completing a mission

Him; Tshi

Me; you listen to me and listen carefully. This is our reputation. You had better not screw this up. Ill be waiting for you when you get back

Him; will you?

Me; yes. Ill be in our home. With our children waiting for you. Now stop being a pussy, and get your Axe game on.

I drop the call and let out a deep breath, this wasn't what I had in mind when I called him. But when I heard his voice and how low it was it made me lie. I told him what he needed to hear so he could do what he needed to do.

Weather it kills me or not, but at least all those agents will get home to their wives after this. Even if it is at the expense of my marriage.

I leave the Boutique, and head straight back home. The call with Nathi threw me off my game, and well, there's no use being in there if all I'm going to think about is Him. To make matters worse, the Boni is all the way in Jamaica celebrating her anniversary, and Rifiloe and Siya are somewhere in the world working. Dourine is gone to CT

and Busi is recovering from the flu. So it's literally me, myself and I and well that isn't a good thing. Not one bit I sleep through most of my afternoon. By the time I'm up it already the evening, and I have to get myself something to eat before I'm a size 0

I'm about to place an order, when an international number comes through ME;

Hello

Him; its nice to hear your voice again

I look at the number and think it must be a mistake

Me; I'm sorry. I think you must have the wrong number Him; I don't think so

Me; ok, I'm putting the phone down

Him; wait. I'm joking, Its Neli

I smile

Me; Prime minister

Him; forget the formalities.

Just call me Neli Me; ok.

Well, then Neli. What can I do for you?

Him; that's better. Well, I was hoping to discuss my sister with you. Me; ok. I'm listening

Him; I was actually hoping to do it over dinner. Me; I'm not sure that's a good idea.

Him; bring your husband with. I don't mind Me; my husband's away

Him; so, come out. Felicia will join us

Me; mhmm, ok. Maybe that's not too

bad. When were, you thinking Him; in
an hour?

Me; an hour? You guys
are in the country Him;
yep. We landed this
morning

Me; well, if Felicia's there then
yes. I'd love to do dinner Him;
Good. Ill text you where
Me; cool

I end the call and immediately feel lighter. I need the extra pair of hands at the Boutique, and at least I at least I can have some company for dinner. Its been a lonely week and having company wouldn't be such a bad thing.

98

Hmmm what does one wear to a dinner with a prime minister and his sister? I look through my closet and settle on simple jeans, top, jacket and heels. I'm not in the mood to be over dressed. But I still got to look cute.

I look at myself in the mirror once I'm done getting ready, and smile. I know how much Nathi hates it When I'm in jeans he says they highlight my ASSets, but hey, it's not my fault I got a big ass.

When I walk out the house tools has already bought the car out. I sent him the co-ordinates the moment I received them from Neli. I also asked him if he had done screenings on them, and apparently, all was in order.

The moment I get in the car I see Tools looks at me in the review mirror I look at my clothes wondering if something is wrong.

Me: Tools?

Him: I'm sorry mam. It's just that I haven't received an ok from Axe to take you to your dinner. Breath....

Tshidi Breath

Me: Tools I am meeting with the prime minister of Angola and his sister. I'm sure Nathi won't mind Him: mam, it's just that Axe left strict instructions.

Me: Tools, I've been cramped up in the house for so long. Please. It's just dinner, then we come back. You'll be there and so will your team. What could possibly go wrong. Or do you want me to die in that house all alone

I give him my sad smile and
I see his eyes soften Him:
ok, but we're taking 4 other
guards.

Me: thank you

He shakes his head but starts the car. I hear him on the phone and as always they are clearing the restaurant. I'm annoyed, but I won't say a damn thing. I'm on thin ice as it is.

We arrive at the hotel, and I am followed in by 5 of the guards including Tools.

I spot Felicia at a table right at the end of the restaurant. She smiles instantly when she sees me.

Her: 2nd lady, it's a pleasure to see you again. Thank you oh so much for agreeing to dinner with me.

Me: it's a pleasure, and please, call me Tshidi

Her: please sit. I'm sorry, my brother is running a bit late. He had a meeting with some business man or something

Me: it's ok. Really. I'm glad we get to talk. I've seen

some of your designs. They're impressive Her: thank you. I try, but I just feel like maybe with your expertise. I

could become world known

Me: it's nice to see a fellow designer so passionate,

Her: I still can't believe I'm sitting with you here. I

didn't think my brother could pull it off. Me: he's a

very persuasive man

Her: he's like that. I think that's why he did so well in businesses, he never takes no for an answer, if he wants something he goes out and gets it

Me: reminds me of my husband, but before we do that. Let's order something to drink

The waiter offers me wine, but I know that isn't good. Especially since I have to see a doctor tomorrow for a check up. It sucks though because Hlokes won't be there, but hey, I'm a big girl.

Her: speaking of vice president, where is he, I thought he would join us

Me: unfortunately, he is away on state

business. He should be back soon though Her:

it must be amazing being the second lady of the country

See, if Felicia was a friend, I would tell her truth, but I don't know her, and talking like that would probably come back to haunt me at a later stage, so I just smile.

I'm on my second passion fruit and lemonade, when Neli arrives. He gives his sister a hug, and does the same with me. I'm a bit taken aback, but I hug him back, last thing I want is to seem rude.

When I sit down I see Tools staring our way. Anyone passing by wouldn't notice, but I can see that he doesn't like the hug thing. Not one bit. Its like he's another nathi in my life

Neli: I'm so sorry I'm late. I got called into an unexpected meeting, and it ended up running later than I thought

Me: it's fine. Really, I don't mind. It was nice getting to know Felicia. He orders wine, and we all order dinner.

Neli: So, Tshidi, how have you been since France Me:

I've been ok,

Neli: I saw in the news that since President Ndhlovu and you're husband took over the economic state of S.A. has significantly improved

I fake smile. I'm so over speaking about the country and blah blah. I have to entertain Nathis associates all the time last thing I need is to do this again

Me: yah, they've

really done well Neli;

how did you meet

your husband

I smile immediately when I think

of that day at the garage Me: I

met him at a garage

Neli: huh?

Me: yep, a

filling station

Felicia: that's

romantic Me:

it is I guess

Neli: he's lucky man

Me: I think I'm the lucky one really

Felicia: I'm sure it must be difficult though. I mean since he isn't always home

Me: I'm used to it. We're both living our dreams. He's vice and I'm a designer. We make it work somehow.

I lied. Yes. Because no matter how bad things are, I never invite strangers into my marriage. Never Neli: that's nice. You both should visit Angola one of these days. I'm sure you would enjoy it

Me : thank you. Hopefully when he comes back he'll be able to take time off, and we'll come

After many laughs, good food, and good company, I decide it's time to go home. It's after 10pm, and I am exhausted

Me: So Felicia, I'll meet you at my boutique tomorrow morning

Her: yep bright and early

Me: Prime minister, thank you for dinner,

Him: it's my pleasure. It's the least I can do after everything you're doing for my sister. At least now I can go back to Angola without having her asking me every 2 seconds if I had received clearance from your administration

I give both a hug, I notice Neli holds me a few seconds more than he should. I look up and his eyes are smiling. I step back feeling a little uncomfortable

Me; Goodnight

He kisses my hand and I leave with my security keeping close. See I may have little experience with men, but I know when there is chemistry between people.

Sometimes its innocent, and at times not so much.

The moment i get in the car tools phone rings. He looks at the caller ID and hands it to me

Him: Mam , I think this is for you

Me:

who is

it

Him:

Axe

I take the phone

and answer

Me:

Hello

Him: why is

your phone off

Me: it's flat

He takes 2 deep breaths and I know he is pissed. I can imagine him wiping his forehead anxiously Him: I hear you went to dinner with Neli

Me: yes,
and Felicia

Him: why

Me: because. I don't see why you

I look up and Nathi is looking at me in the mirror. He knows I'm about to go all psycho on Nathi, but his pleading eyes stop me. I know if I do, Nathi will be here in a flash, and I'll be to blame. So I take a deep breath

Me: Khumalo. I went to dinner because I was asked. I only agreed knowing Felicia would be there. It was for her and I to get to know one another that's all

Him: so why was Neli there.

Me: because he is highly overprotective of his baby sister and he wanted to make sure she was in safe hands

Him: so, he didn't try any funny business

Me: no Nathi. He was the perfect

Gentlemen. (another lie) Him: I

hope you remember what I said

earlier.

I can tell by his snappy tone, that he is still pissed, but because I'm not fighting back, he has no leg to stand on

Him: I don't want you having dinner with this guy again

Me: Nathi, he is Felicia's brother, I'm bound to see him. But for now, you can relax. He goes back to Angola tomorrow

Him: mhmm

Me: is that the only
reason you called

Him: yes

He ends the call there and then and to be honest I'm a bit annoyed, but too tired to fight with him. I just give Tools back his phone. The sooner, I'm back in bed the better.

When I get home get into bed. I try sleeping but my body is craving Nathi. I actually miss him. Like really miss him, so I decide to call him and play with him a little bit

Him; mhmm

I roll my eyes. I know he is pissed about the dinner, but I need some relief, and I intend on getting it Me; baby

Him; mhmm

Me; are we
being recorded

Him; no. our
line is secure

Me; touch me

He clears his

throat Him;

what do you

mean

I drop the call and video call him instead.

He picks up and his eyes nearly pop out when he sees my cleavage Me; like

what you see

Him; Clears

throat. Tsi...

He lets out a

deep breath

Me; I said

touch me

I move the phone down and show him

my hand playing with myself Him;

baby.. please don't do this

Me; I need you. Kiss me

Him; baby if I

could. I would

Me; mhmm,

ahhh... mhmmm

Him; move the phone up, I want to see you cum

I slowly move the phone up. While my other

hand continues to do its magic. Him; I want

you so bad

The more he talks and whispers all the dirty things he wants to do to me to me the closer I get. His voice alone is enough to drive me into a massive orgasm....

I end the call almost immediately, and fall asleep and dream that he is next to me

The first day with Felicia at the boutique is great. It's amazing how much an extra pair of hands helps, but as much as I'd like to stick around I can't, I have to get to the doctor. It's nothing serious. Just a check up, but the smell of this hospital makes me want to puke. It takes me back to a time where I lost my son. That's a pain I never thought I would live through. I thought it was all behind me, until I saw Thoko's baby. What makes it worse is that even though my body has recovered from the heart operation, my marriage is still suffering from the after effects. And

frankly it doesn't help that Boni and Hlokes are all the way in Jamaica, while the rest of us suffer in this freezing cold, but thankfully the checkup goes well, they've taken some blood to do some random tests and scans just to make sure everything is sitting well.

After the doctor's appointment, I head back home and work from there. I haven't spoken to Nathi since last night. He tried calling but I ignored him. I know he doesn't understand what I'm doing and truth is I don't understand it either. One minute I miss him and the next I hate him.

When I get to the house I find a big bouquet of flowers. I instantly smile. I may not like him for some reason, but I love it when he does these romantic things.

I look for a card and I don't find one, so I call him Him;
makhumalo

Me; I love them. Thank you Him; huh?

Me; the flowers, they're beautiful. Thank you Him;
What flowers

When he says that my heart sinks. I know immediately then that they are from Neli ME;
nothing.

Him; Tshidi

Me; I've got to go

Him; put down the phone and you will know me

I stay on the line. I don't know

why I feel guilty. But I do Him;

are you sleeping with him?

That hurts. Deeply. How can he think of me like that?

Me; Nathi

Him; answer the bloody question.

I hear something break and I know he is going to kill someone or something if I don't calm him down Me; baby.

I wouldn't do that. You know I love you.

Him; then why did you say you had

another man in your bed Breath

Tshidi...

Me; because I was rattling your chain. If I had another man I wouldn't have called you lastnight Him; I miss

you

Me; I miss you too

Him; are you going to wait for me?

The way he says that really makes my heart melt. I know we have our moments. Ok not moments. We have world wars with each other, but that's because we love each other.

Me; Nathi I have no choice. There's no man in this world that could make me still want them even though I am mad as hell at them

Him; you're mad at me?

Me; yes. You left me.

Him; but baby you know we were draining each other Me; yes, but you promised to never leave me

Him; I'm sorry. I just

Me; I don't like the whole force thing. In fact I hate it. But being without you hurts me more than you being in the force

Him; does this mean you accept AXE

Me; you promised me to keep him out our home. You haven't stuck to that. And until you do we are never going to be fully ok

Him; so we have terms and conditions now Me;

yes, and you are going to respect them, Him; what

are they

Me; simple. RESPECT ME as your wife.

Him; (sigh) ok. I know I lost it in France. I'm sorry Me;

that's all I ever wanted from

you

Him; is that it

Me; no. another one is your need to

Control me. it needs to stop Him;

ahhh baby nooo. That one is

complicated

Me; you can't expect me to be ok with being controlled
Him; eish... Makhumalo I don't know how to let go.
And its not control. It's the fact that I cant imagine
anything going wrong

Me; you know that im not an agent
right? I cant be controlled Him; yes,
but I need you to try understanding

Me; theres nothing to understand. Nathi its 2016, you
cant think im going to agree to this control thing. I
married you Nathi. Not this control freak AXE

Him; You know Tshidi. I used to think AXE and Nathi
were two different people, but to be honest you've been
married to AXE just as much as you've been married to
Nathi. There is no one without the other

When he says that I realize that he is telling the truth.
From the moment I opened my heart to him he began
controlling me. from the security systems to now

Me; but Nathi

Him; I need this Tshidi. please. I need you to let me be
me. Let me love you the best way I know how. Just put
you're guard down, ill take car of your heart I promise
you

My head is telling me no, but
I find myself agreeing Me; ill
try

He takes in a
deep breath

Him; thank you
Me; don't hurt me Nathi. Please

Him; Im going to make up for
everything. Just you wait and see

Me; I hope so

Him; nw that we're good. I
have a confession to make Me;

I'm listening
Him; you were right
Me; I know. Im
always right.. (laughs)

Him; you don't even
know what about Me;
whatever it is I know I
was right Him;

Mapule

Me; has she shown
you flames yet Him;
She planted the
Condoms

Clap once

Me; I told your ass. But no.
you didnt want to hear it Him;
Ive delt with her. It wont
happen again

Me; good. You see now this is my husband.

Him; Now you better get rid of those
flowers. Ill deal with this Neli guy Me; oh
God. Nathi we don't know they're from
him

Him; ill find out and if they are I'm going
to kill him with my bare hands. Me; ok
well I'm not even discussing this with
you.

Him; see. You're learning.

Now ive got to go. Me;
when are you coming
back

Him; 8

weeks

Breath

Tshidi

Me;

mhmm ok

Him; I

love you

Me; I love

you too

I smile to myself. Maybe DR S was right. Time apart does put things in perspective.

If I don't get my ass out of Mexico Tshidi is going to kill me. because I've been tracing Hugo down now officially for 2 and a half months and thankfully we found him. The sooner we talk the sooner I can get home to my wife. Who I haven't spoken to in exactly 14 days. The closer I got finding Hugo, the more I had to isolate myself. Last thing I needed was Hugo knowing that I was on his trail. It would ruin all our hard work.

So here I stand today. He's sitting in a bar. He's with a man I never expected to find him with. A man I respect really. A man I like to keep peace with, but now I'm not so sure.

Now usually protocol would be for us to figure out a way to hack the security system, but as it stands today I am not exactly patient. So, I'm doing things old school.

I open the Bar door, while my team waits outside. I spot Hugo sitting with Mr. Rodrigues who happens to be the Godfather of all fucking Mafias.

I take a clean shot Grappa, then walk over to their table, I know I'm taking chances here. Mr Rodrigues isn't one to be messed with, but hey, I fear Tshidi more right now.

The minute I walk up to them their men pull out guns. They both look at me alarmed. At least that's one thing to my advantage

Me; well Good Afternoon Gentlemen

No one reverts. I slip into the vacant seat next to them

Rodrig; Axe my boy you better have a good reason as to why you are in my bar without an invite Me; I do. See I have been looking for this man right here

Rodri; well as you can see we are in the middle of something Me; yah,

well I was hoping we could do this
the easy way.

They both burst out laughing. Hell, I even join in,
because what I am doing is crazy Rod; I must
give it to you son, you've got some balls

Me; yah. my problem is I have my wife nagging me, so
I think that alone is making me fearless Hugo; well I
don't blame you, she's one cute bitch

I cringe. My first instinct is to stab the fucker. But I know
that this is just a tactic for him to get me to react

ME; ok. I'm over playing games. Mr. Rodrigues. I'm here
to get my hands on him. I'm hoping you won't stand in
my way

Rod; are you
threatening me
boy Me; no.

I look at my watch and know its time for me to strike

Me; Ok, so in exactly 10 seconds you are going to
start feel (clears throat) a bit weazy They both still
look at me like I'm an idiot

10
9
8

See your drink has what I call the Axe factor. It's a mix of
this and that. But whats important is that your throat will
start to clog. Next your heart will start to deteriorate.
Which means you'll be dead in 7

6
5

Me; in my hand I have the antidote. I can give it to you
Mr Rod. But only if you let me walk out of here with him
I see Mr Rodrigus hold his hand to his throat.

His men are now pointing guns at me 4
3

Him; take him.

I smile and give him the
antidote. He drinks it
1

Hugo starts to go pale.

He holds his neck Me;

Nails. We're ready

Nails walks In and give Hugo the antidote in the for of an
injection. They carry him and I stay seated.

Me; Mr Rodrigues, you and I have always stayed out of
each other's hair. It's the one thing I like about you, now
the agreement was that you wouldn't interfere, and we
would leave you alone to run your drug world. But here we
are and you are with a man I'm hunting.

Him; Axe I think you forget who you're talking to

Me; I know who I'm talking to. See if it were up to me I
would have put an axe through your skull a long time
ago, but luckily for you Ghost has a soft spot for you. So,
you get another day to breath. But don't be fooled. If I
even get a whiff of you on my next mission, I will kill you.

Are we clear

He nods and I walk out and get into my car. We drive off
and I let out a long sigh. I don't know what the fuck I was
thinking. I didn't even have my gun with me.

I get in the car and chains looks
at me shaking his head. Him; I'm
guessing drinks are on you

tonight

Me; drinks?

Him; Boss. Wevr been out here for ever. Tonight, we
celebrate

I just laugh. See yes, we can celebrate for now. But I know
one thing for sure, and that's that Mr. Rodrigues will come
for me. I humiliated him in front of his team, and that is
something you just don't do. See in gthe ops game things

are simple. You have the big boys we call them commanders.

There's Mr Rodrigo's who runs the Mexican cartel, there's The Italian cartel which is run by Giovanni Santos, The Porta Cartel who I have now taken out (Hugo) , and lastly there is the Chinese Cartels which is run by Bingwen Mai, Most of these men are powerful, money hungry twits, but we have an agreement with them. We let them run their business and they stay the hell out of our business. But finding Hugo with Rodrigues makes me think that its time we put everyone back in their place, I think they've forgotten the rules and its time we remind them. But for tonight we celebrate.

I get back to the safe house and immediately go to my room. I need to call Tshidi before she kills me.

Tshidi

They say love is patient, they say its kind they say a whole lot of sweet shit about it, but no one tells you that love is tough, that it's not always fun, that your man might spend months away from you.

Its now been 6 weeks with away. 6 fucking weeks, and I am about to break. His mother is enjoying having Siseko and she insists he stays longer. SO it's been me and a million lonely nights In this huge house and I have officially gained back all the weight I lost when we were fighting. Nxa

I haven't spoken to Nathi now for over 2 weeks. He said he was going dark (whatever that means). Luckily for me the SA fashion week went well. Our entire line was sold out within a week of the fashion week. Now we're getting ready for New York. I just hope and pray I can pull it together in the small amount of time I have left. We leave for NY in exactly 48 hours. My team has been working

their asses off. Felicia included.

Im looking at a dress that we've just made when my phone rings. I know by the ringtone that its Nathi. My heart smiles. Especially since he's video calling me Me; well, well, well, If it isn't the prodigal Husband I hear him laugh and I realize just how much I've missed his laugh. I leave the floor of the Boutique and go to my office.

Him; How's my wifey doing

Me; Wifey's fine, just been

hell of a hectic. Him; I'm

sorry I missed your first

runway show ME; its fine.

how's the mission going?

Him; Babe you know I can't

discuss that with you Me; ok,

so when are you coming

home

Him; another 2 weeks and I'm all yours

ME; yah, you did say 8 weeks. I was hoping you would tell me sooner

Him; I wish baby, but I need to tie up some

loose ends. Once done, I'm all yours Me; for

how long

Him; Sigh

I already know that it won't be for long

Me; well, we'll just have to make the

time we have together count Him;

thank you baby

Me; babe ive got to get

going. Im prepping for NY

Him; whens NY happening

again?

Me; I land on

Friday Him;

ok ill see you

soon Me; ok

I know I'm supposed to put the phone down, but a part of

me is a bit needy. Like I honestly miss him, and all I want

now is to see him

Me; sniff

Lord, why the

hell I'm crying

Him; Baby don't

cry.

Me; sniff

Him; Ok, how about

we make a deal Me;

what

Him; 1 week. Give me 1

week and I'll be home Me;

that sounds better

Him; meaning we'll both arrive

back home on the same day Me;

ok

Him; now show me

those dimples I

smile and he

smiles

him; I love you

Me; I love you more

Before he can say more someone

barges into my office. Its Felicia Her;

oh Gosh, I'm so sorry but you need to

see this

Me;

what is

it Her;

hurry

I run downstairs and find my

team around the TV. Me;

what's going on

Felicia; we entered you into the fashion jury awards.

Me; why? We aren't even close to being in the

caliber. Those awards are no childs play Felicia;

yes, but look. You've been nominated for best new
comer

I look up and see my name on the screen.

Im frozen. I don't know what to say. This has

been my dream since I was a little girl ME; oh

my Gosh

I look at my team and I break into tears. I can't believe this. The winners will be announced at an award show in London. I didn't even enter because I thought we wouldn't be noticed. And yet here we are

I pull Felicia into a hug. She's only been here a month and already she's done this I look at my phone and notice that Nathi is still on the line.

I hold it up and he smiles

Him;

congratulations

Me;

thank you

Him; I'm proud

of you Tshidi.

Me; thank you

Him; I'm going to let you

celebrate. Ill speak to you later

Me; ok

Him; blow daddy a kiss

I blow him a kiss and he goes off line. I see in the corner of my eye that Felicia is looking at me intensely.

Ok. How about we go and celebrate. Lets

close the shops and go have some fun

Everyone looks game

Me; so, go home, change and meet me at Club V.

I grab my bag and head home excited. I know we have a ton of work, but tonight we celebrate. When tools sees, me walking out he looks at me surprised

Him;

mam

Me; Hi

Tools

Him;

everything

ok?

ME;

everythings

fine

Him; we heading straight home?

Me; yes, please. I need you to do me another favor. I

need you to book me the VIP section at Club V

Him; ahmm ok

Me; My staff is going to be there. Can I

ask you to get us tables? Him; yes,

mam. But don't you think we should

discuss it with Axe

Me; I'll call him. I'm sure he won't mind. Because it's

more a jazz club than the normal crazy club Him; Ill book

in the interim and then will wait for Axe to confirm

Me; thanks

We get home and I call Nathi. I'm

surprised when he answers Me;

baby, sorry to bother you

Him; you're never a bother. What's up

Me; well, I've decided to take my team out for dinner

and drinks to celebrate my nomination Him; mhmm

Me; I've asked Tools to book out club V. I

just wanted to confirm if its alright Him;

Mhmm

Me; I hate it when you mhmmm

Him; why cant you go to a restaurant,

why do you have to go to a club Me; its

fun... come on baby

Him; Tshidi

Me; please baby

Him; Fine. youre team

comes with you Me;

yes love
Him; ok. Ill give Tools
the go ahead Me;
thank you baby.
You're the best

Him; behave yourself

Me; you know I

always do Him;

mhmmm ya ok

Me; by love

Him; before you go. Have you heard from Neli lately?

Me; nope. I just threw away his flowers, and I

haven't seen or spoken to him since Him;

mhmm

Me; is there something going on

Him; nothing you need

to worry about Me; ok.

I'll speak to you when I

get back Him; cool.

Remember

Me; yes, I know. I must

behave blah blah blah

Him; good.

I end the conversation with a smile. At least he is compromising. The one thing I've learnt was that even though I was so used to being this independent woman, the minute I start being submissive the less problems we've had.

100 (short)

Now the problem with the guys on the force is that that most of them still chose to stay single. I don't blame them though, because I was there not so long ago. We all only started thinking of marriage, when Ghost took a wife. I was one of the few who could be married because I was primarily based at HQ and at my law firm, so for me marriage was something easy. But most of these

hooligans don't even dream of it. They say its worse than prison. And well sometimes I agree, but truth be told, I couldn't live without Tshidi, not even if I wanted to. So the fact that I agreed to "celebrate" with them is actually crazy, but then again, we have had a tense couple of weeks, and well a few drinks with the guys wouldn't hurt.

The guys want to go to some strip club but I flat out refuse. I know Tshidi and should she find out she would murder me. so, in the end we decide to have a braai by the pool. That way we all have some clean fun.

Mapule being the only woman here makes us salads while I start with the meat. Chains has the music on, while the rest of the guys just chill and drink, and play poker. The starting amount is 100G's. I decide to take the boys up, I know they all suck at poker.

We all eat, drink and play poker, I may miss home but to be honest I'm enjoying myself, well that is until Chains walks in with at least 12 strippers.

I give him a irritated look,

and he just smiles Him;

not all of us are married

you know

I roll my eyes. And carry on playing poker, which gets rather distracting when there are thick beautiful girls all around. I know I can't touch but damn I won't lie, my man hood is as hard as can possibly be.

I need to get home before I die. The whole self-service shit is exactly that. Shit

I try by all means to enjoy myself, but the girls here with their bouncy behinds be sending me down a dangerous path. I look in the pool and see Mapule skinny dipping with one of the girls, and I decide there and then I need to get

the fuck out of here before I do something I'm not supposed to do.

Me; ok, yall. Im out

I lay my money on the table and stand up to leave, but chains pulls my hand forcing me to sit down,

Him; Boss. Chill. Girls
don't bite you know Me;

yah, mine does

Him; well, she's not

here now is she He

waves over one of

the girls,

Me; chains

He doesn't look my way, instead he smiles at the girl
coming towards us.

Him; how about you turn around and let my man here
take a look at that beautiful plum ass She smiles and
turns around shaking in a bit. I swear I nearly faint.

She starts twerking and Chains spanks her and I see her
ass jiggle. Lord if I don't leave now I am going to die.

Me; Chains. I'm out

I stand and push the lady out the way gently. And get to my
room and lock the door.

I let out a huge sigh. I decide to call Tshidi, but then I
remember that she's probably having fun. So I guess its just
me and cold ass shower.

The following morning I'm up and packing. I couldn't sleep
last night. All I could Think about was me making love to
my wife. So I've decided its best for me to fly down to NY.
Maybe surprise her and get me some of that booty.

Me; Chains get up

He covers himself and looks at me a irritated

Me; come on, you're
driving me to the airport

Him; Huh

Me; Im going to NY then going home
for a week and then ill be back Him;
sho, give me a second

Me; hurry, oh and next time make sure you go to the
strip club. This damn house smells like booty He laughs
and I go downstairs and wait for chains.

The moment I'm on the plane I start to get excited. I know
Tshidi will be working, but I hope I get to spend time with
her while we're here

I arrive in NY and go straight to Siya's Penthouse. I text
tools letting him know that Tshidi must meet me here
instead of the hotel

Tshidi

Ok, last night was epic. The team had fun and thankfully
everyone was well behaved. Today however there is no
fun. Today Felicia, myself and a few others are on our
way to NY. We've been in the air for a few hours. Most of
the team has been sleeping, but I've been looking at our
latest numbers at the woman's shelter. So far so good.
I've been so caught up in the boutiques I haven't had
time to even go past the center.

I make a mental note to make sure I go once I'm back
home.

We arrive in NY and head straight to the hotel. Today we
rest, tomorrow we have a shitload to do. Ive tried getting
hold of Nathi a million times, but his phone goes to
voicemail.

We arrive at the hotel, but somehow Tools insists I must
stay at Siya's penthouse. I try arguing but Tools is as
stubborn as Nathi is. So in the end I just give in.

I arrive at Siya's penthouse and immediately head the
bedroom. All I need now is a nice hot shower and bed. My

body literally aches from the flight.

I open the bedroom and I swear I nearly pee in my pants from the fright that I get. I want to jump up and down. I want to scream but somehow all I can manage is cry

He stands up and scoops me into his arms. I want to say so much, but I'm in his arms and for now that's all that matters.

101

The look on Tshidi's face makes me so happy. I honestly didn't realize just how much I missed her, till I saw her walk into the room. She still cant seem to wrap her head around my being here.

Him; shhh. I'm here

Me; sniff

Him; Tshidi look at me

she looks up and i wipe away her tears

Her; how? When? Oh, my gosh baby you're here

she jump into my arms,

and carries on crying Her;

please tell me I'm not

dreaming. Please Me; I'm

here baby. I'm here

She looks up again and smiles.

Her; I've missed you

Me; I've missed you more

Her; why didn't you tell me

you were coming Mer; I

didn't want to ruin the

surprise

Her; you are the best husband in the world

Hearing those words from her fills my heart with joy, especially since we have had one hell of a rough ride the past

few months

Me; come, tell me all about this nomination of yours

We sit in the bedroom and talk for what feels like hours. She shows me her designs, she tells me about starting a plus size boutique, she talks about so much and I just listen. Nothing is more attractive than a woman who can carry her own, and still be an amazing wife and mother. And somehow she stays as humble as ever.

ME; you look good

She smiles. I know she doesn't believe me. This here is the Tshidi I fell in love with. She has no weave on, no make-up. It's just Gods good work on display.

Her; I've been eating junk

Me; I can see. Your jeans are extra tight. I like it though her;

mxm

Me; ok, I'm joking. You know I love it when you're all nice and thick

I spank her and I see her blush. I smile. It feels good knowing I still make her blush

Her; I'm going to take a shower.

ME; can I

join you

Her; it

depends

Me; on

what

Her; on how good your hands are
Me; we both know my hands are magic
Her; Its been so long. I don't
think I remember Me; well
let me remind you

I get up and start massaging her back, despite us both being
fully clothed, I can feel the knots around her back and neck

Me; Tshidi you haven't been resting

Her; shhh

Me; Your neck is all tied up. Tshidi, I don't like this. You're
working yourself to hard

She doesn't say anything. Instead she just keeps moans as I
work through the knots in her neck. I decide to let the issue go.
I know if I don't we might end up in a huge argument. Tshidi
has always been a hard worker, and I doubt anything I say will
change that. So, for now I hold back, but this won't be the end
of this conversation. I'm going to need to keep an eye on her,
last thing we need is her staining her heart because of all the
stress

Her; ouch

I snap out of my thoughts and realize

I pinched her too hard. Me; sorry

babe

Her; ok, off, I'm

going to shower I

don't move

Her;

Nathi

Me;

mhmm

Her; dont even think about it

I smile to myself, because of just how well she knows me. she knows 9/10 that I plan on tickling her

Me; who's going to stop me

Her; Nathi, come on. You know you're way bigger than me. Baby

She doesn't finish her sentence, my hands are already under her top tickling her,

She yelps out in laughter, and somehow manages to wiggle her way out of my hold.

Her; just for that, I won't let you shower with me

Me; again, who's going to stop me

Her; me

Me; oh, baby you and I both know that you can't run from me. not even if you try

She looks at me and then at the bathroom door. She tries to dash to the bathroom, but I'm behind her in seconds.

Laughter fills the room as she fights me off as I pull her back to the bed. I love that laugh of hers. It makes me happy, seeing her happy

Her; You're no fair

Me; when it comes to you I don't play fair. In fact, I believe some say I am damn right ruthless.

She giggles, and I have my lips on her in an instant. I kiss her so tenderly it makes her groan, but for some reason she stops me

Her; I need a shower

Me; no you don't

Her; Nathi I've been stuck in an airplane for hours. I need a shower

Me; but I want you... NOW

Her; and you can have me, just give me 10 minutes

Me;

mhmhm

Her; don't look at me like that

Me; how

Her; you have that

look in your eyes. Me;

what look

Her; the beast look. What exactly do you want to do to me I chuckle.

Tshidi does know me

Me; I am going to devour you. Especially for keeping me waiting like you are right now I see her eyes

widen. I know she wants me

Her; well 10 minutes won't kill you. You've waited 10 weeks

I loosen my grip, and she goes to shower. I would join her, but if I did that we wouldn't get out the shower, and right now I need her here in this damn bed so I can fully enjoy every inch of her

While Tshidi showers, I decide to order us some lunch. I know once we're done we'll both be starving. I make sure to also order desert. Even though Tshidi tries to hide her sweet tooth, I know she loves her junk, and lucky for me it all goes to her butt. Which as you all know, I'm obsessed with.

Typical woman. She says all she needs is 10 minutes, and now 45minutes later I'm still alone with a fucking hard on. Hell,. Even the food has arrived, and Tshidi isn't out. I decide I can't take this anymore, if she doesn't come out I'm going to break the door off the damn hinges and fuck her in that stupid shower.

I try opening the door
but its locked Me;

Tshidi
Her; Baby

Me; you've been in
there for Hours Her;
I'm done. Give me 5
minutes Me; that's
what you said an hour
ago

She giggles, and opens the door

Me; are you
trying to kill me
Her ; no. but I

had to shave

I roll my eyes. It always amazes me why woman think we want them to be perfect. So, what if she had some sort of a bush or whatever it is that she tries to hide. We don't care about all of that. When a man loves a woman, he loves everything about her. Even her flaws. I for one love every dimple on her body, I even love the stretchmarks on her stomach and the 6 on each side of her butt cheeks.

Her; what

Me; I'm trying to imagine what you

have under that towel Her; I think

it's time you take what's yours

I smile, and watch as her towel drops to the floor. I can tell she put on some baby oil. That alone rip me to shreds. I lift her up. She gasps surprised as I carry her to the bed. I put her down and my lips shatter onto hers. I can't hold it anymore, if I do I am going to die.

Her arms are around my neck as I kiss my way down her neck, to her breasts. I see goosebumps arrear, and I know she is enjoying herself. I take her one nipple in my mouth and she hasps. I know if I carry on she is going to cum, so I stop, and flip her around instead. Seeing he bare bum, with those stretchmarks shining from the oil, drives me crazy. I had hoped to be gentle but that is thrown outside the window. I spank her and she gasps. I spank her again and she jiggles her butt, just like I like it.

I slide in my finger in her honey pot and to my pleasure she is dripping wet. I get up and take of mu clothes. If I could I want

take her from behind, but I like looking her in the eye when I thrust into her, so I turn her around and I see a reflection of my lust in her eyes.

I put my lips in between her legs and taste her beautiful honey. She arches her back as I lick, suck and finger her till she is close to her breaking point, but I stop because I want to feel her when she erupts. I spread her wide slowly enter her. I do my best to be gentle, because for some reason she is fucking tight. I thrust harder and I'm in all the way. She arches her back again, and I still, so we can both get used to the feeling. I'm adjusting to how warm and creamy she is, while she adjust to the fullness of having me inside her

I look down at her and she smiles. I start to move, and she closes her eyes and moves in synch with me. We both come together. She screams my name as I do hers.

I take a moment to breath. I haven't taken my eyes off her. She thinks I'm going to pull out, but I turn her around and take her from behind, this time showing no mercy. I'm taking what's mine and she knows it. Thrust in and out of her with no mercy. All my anger about her stupid jokes on finding another man pour back into my mind. I want to show her, teach her that no one could ever take her from me.

Not even if they tried.

She cums screaming my name again, but I don't give her a moment to breath. Not now. I want her to wake up tomorrow and have her feel me, even though I'm not there, I want her to ache and every time she does it will remind her of who she belongs to. ME.

We both come crashing, her entire body shakes from her 3rd orgasm, and I know now I need to give her a break.

I pull out and we fall back on the bed panting. I look at Tshidi and smile. She has that beautiful just fucked after glow.

Her; what the hell are you trying to do? Kill me
I smile. I know Tshidi, she may be flushed, but I know she liked it just as much as I did

Me; you're beautiful

Her; yah, well, you're not to bad yourself.

We lay in bed and she starts to drift off to sleep in my arms. I sit and watch her as she slightly snores. Her beautiful lips are parted slightly. I kiss them and she slightly smiles and then she drifts off to sleep,

I want to wake her. I only have a week with her and then I have to be back in Mexico, but she looks so peaceful. So I put a light sheet over her and let her get her rest. I need to call Ghost anyway,

I put on my boxers and go downstairs

to make a few calls. Ghost; Axe

Me; I need to discuss a few things with you. Do you have a moment Ghost; ya.

Shoot

Me; we've got Hugo. He's

at HQ as we speak Ghost;

that's good. You did well

Axe

Me; yah, but guess

where I found him

Ghost; tell me

Me; Mexico

Ghost; tell me he wasn't with who I think he was with

Me; yep. He sure as hell was

Ghost; you know what to do right? Those fuckers are starting to slip out their lane.

Me; don't worry. I've got

it under control. Ghost;

good. Now how's New York?

Me; its fine. thanks for letting me use your place

Ghost; I'm hardly there. At least you guys have some use for it.

How's the Mrs

Me; the Mrs is ok. She nearly fainted when she saw me

Ghost; I'm glad you

guys worked it out Me;

we always do

Ghost; did you ever find out who sent those flowers

Me; no. I'm pretty sure it was Neli, but we couldn't find

financial trace of where they were bought. Anyway, he

hasn't made a move in a while. Maybe I was just

overreacting

Ghost; maybe.

Me; but I do have nails monitoring Neli. I can't seem to shake off a bad feeling.

Ghost; it seems you have everything under control. Let

me know if you need help with anything Me; Thanks G.

chat soon

I end the call and decide to eat. It's the only way I can keep myself from waking Tshidi and fucking her brains out,

I sit in the lounge watching some TV while eating, when I get

mms from an anonymous number. I open

the picture and it's a picture of a woman's naked back. I can tell at first glance that it's not Tshidi.

Another one comes through and all it reads was. I hope you enjoyed Mexico. Can't wait to be with you again.

I frown, I want to send the messages to Nails, but I hear Tshidi coming down the stairs, so I delete them. Last thing I need is her thinking I was unfaithful

02

Only me. Ye, only I can be married to a crazy woman who plays Gospel music at 5am on flipping full blast in a Penthouse in New York. Only me.

I take a deep breath and smile. She may be crazy but honesty I wouldn't have her any other way. Lastnight after she came downstairs we had dinner and ended up making love again. If I could I would keep her locked up here the whole week, but unfortunately I just had to marry an independent hard working woman.

I get up and make the bed, then brush my teeth, I'm hoping we can take a shower together, so I walk downstairs with just a towel wrapped around my waist. When I get downstairs I find the lounge rearranged, she's moved the coffee table and couches back. She sits in the middle of the room with her bible next to. She isn't reading though. Instead she is seated with her legs crossed and her hands together in a form of prayer. I just stare amazed, as I hear Dr Tumi blasting through the speakers. Her eyes are closed and I can just tell that she is in another planet all together. She's meditating

I smile and head back upstairs giving her space. I know she'll come up when she's done. I take this moment to call Nails. I don't know why I deleted those stupid pictures.

Him; Boss

Me; I need
a favor

Him;
anything

Me; I need you to try find a picture that was sent to me. I deleted it by mistake Him; when was this

ME; lastnight

Him; damn. Ill see what I can do

Me; keep this between us. I don't want anyone hearing about this. Especially Tshidi Him; sho boss

I end the call and some how, im still as uneasy about the message as I was yesterday. Someone is toying with me, and for the first time I have no idea who.

I look up and find Tshidi standing behind me. I instantly panick. I know her, she'll think I deleted thos pictures to hide something.

We stand in silence. Her eyes burn into mine. I want to explain. I want to but I don't. I'm literally sweating.

She comes closer. I think she is going to punch me, but she doesn't. instead she puts her arms around my neck.

Her; morning

I'm frozen.

She pushes me on the bed, and sits on my lap. Her lips are on mine in seconds. I pull back and look at her. And only then does it sink in, that she didn't hear me. I take a deep breath. She looks at me and smiles

Her; I've got an hour before I need to be at the venue.

Me; mmmm, and what would you suggest we do in that hour

Her; well, I can think of a few things. But I think we should start here

She kisses me and my fears melt away, Me; so you want to kiss me for an hour

She giggles

Her; well not exactly

Me; then tell me what you want Her;

I want you

Me; and you have me

She looks at me. I know she's getting impatient, but I also know I like to tease her

Me; ok, so how about you take what you want instead

She smiles and I find her lips on mine, but this time with so much more hunger. I know this Tshidi. This is the Tshidi that is going to take charge.

Her skirt is up in seconds and thankfully she isn't wearing any underwear. She sinks down on me and I

let out a growl. She doesn't move, she just stares into my eyes

Her; I love you

Those words. Those damn words make me want to cum, just by hearing them. See to hear those words from her feels like a dream. She loves me. after everything she still loves me

Me; I love you more MaKhumalo

I want to let her continue, but I cant take it anymore, so I flip her around and have her on all fours. She yelps and I ram into her some more. We go at it for a while. Neither one of us wants it to stop, but in the end we have no choice, but to give in to our aching bodies.

We collapse on the bed and let our bodies succumb back to earth.

I look at Tshidi with her beautiful glow and smile to myself. No other woman could take her place. Not even if they tried.

Her; what

Me; nothing. Just happy

Her; good. Now move, I've got to get ready .

Me; want some help
in the shower Her;

no. I need to go.

Me; come on, ill
only be a minute

Her; No.

She slithers from my hold, laughing as I try
to hold onto her but failing. Tshidi

Leaving Nathi in the Penthouse is somewhat bittersweet. I'm excited about work, but I wish I could stay with him. Only God knows how long I have him to myself till he has to go to some God forsaken country, I did promise though to take a lunch break and meet him for lunch, I guess that's better than nothing

I get to the Venue and find my team already working. Our gowns haven't arrived from the airport yet, and that alone sends me into a frenzy. The models are waiting to do fittings, The hair and make-up want to do trials, but we cant all because my stuff isn't here.

Me; Felicia, how far are they]

Her; the airport cant locate them. They say they are here, but they can't figure out where

ME; fuck

I look at my watch and its already lunch time. I know I was supposed to meet with Nathi but there is no way I can do that. Not now. I try dialing him but he doesn't answer, I feel bad because he was excited to eat at this specific restaurant. So instead I order the food and ask Felicia to drop it off at the Penthouse while I try sort out this mess with the airport. I leave the rest of the team and head to the airport. I cant do the whole over the phone thing. Its better to go there and figure out what to do while I'm there.

I arrive at the airport and I'm taken from pillar to post. I thought this would be an in and out job, but ive been here an hour already and still no one can locate my stuff.

Nathi

Ive been so busy trying to get some work done that I totally

missed my lunch with Tshidi. I'm about to call her when a call I hear a knock at the door. I smile when, knowing she probably left the keys I gave her in the car or something.

The moment I open the door I frown. She looks up at me and smiles walking in.

Me; can I help you

Her; no. but Tshidi has asked me to make sure you are fed. Me; where is she

Her; had to do something for work, she isn't going to make lunch, so instead she asked me to get you lunch and drop it off

Me; thanks. Ill go find my wallet

Her; no... don't worry about it.

We stand in an awkward silence. I expect her to leave but she doesn't

Me; is that all

Her; Tshidi said I must make sure you eat the food. So I bought myself something to eat as well. Just to make sure

I semi smile knowing Tshidi she probably said that, so I sit and dig in. Felicia sits opposite me and starts eating as well

Me; so how's your brother

Her; he's fine. overly protective as normal

Me; I guess all brothers are protective

Her; yah, but mine is on another level. If a guy even looks at me he goes crazy

Me; how old
are you Her;

23

Me makes sense

She smiles and we continue talking about meaningless things. By the time she leaves I have a different perspective of her and her brother. Maybe, my gut was wrong about them, maybe there really isn't anything wrong with them.

I text Tshidi and thank her for lunch. I tried calling her, but her phone was busy. I texted Tools and he just told me she is sorting things out at the airport with regards to some of her things for the show

tomorrow. Apparently she couldn't fit everything on the Jet, so she had it flown here. It was supposed to arrive last night and be delivered directly to the Venue, but somehow things got lost. I decide to let her be and sort out my own work, if Tshidi needs my help, she knows where to find me.

Tshidi

By the time I'm back from the Airport its approaching Dinner. I spoke to Nathi briefly, letting him know, I wouldn't be able to make it back before midnight. I didn't want to leave the venue, not till I was done with what needed to be done. To my surprise he walks in exactly at 10pm. He spots me and kisses me right there and there with everyone looking.

Me; behave

Him; what? You're my wife remember

I just roll my
eyes and smile,

Him; how are

things going

Me; getting there. I'm just trying to make sure the models can fit into the dresses. Some of them are big.

These girls are flipping size 0's

He smiles not knowing what I'm talking about

Hi; so how

can I help I

look up at

him lost

Him; tell me what you need to do and I'll do it.

Me; are you

sure? Him;

yes. Now tell

me

Me; ok, can you help steam those dresses.

Him that's it?

Me; yes,

He takes off his jacket and plugs in the steamer. I stare at him for a minute not believing my eyes, until I

catch Felicia staring at him. I smile. I know I'm lucky

We work till 2 am. By the time we all leave I am exhausted.

Nathi takes my hand and we go straight to the Penthouse. We don't eat or anything else. All we do is strip and get into bed.

Tomorrow is another day. A day had been dreaming of since I was a little girl. Tomorrow the world sees the depth of my designs and lucky for me I get to experience this with the love

of my life.

When God decides to show off, its on days like these. Where I'm on top of the world. The fashion show went off without a hitch. From the models to the fit to the make-up, all of it went well. Ive had exactly 5 interviews on my range and the reception from the American market went better than I could've asked for. Now all I wanted to do is spend time with my man. He's been with me every step of the way, and now ot was time I put work aside and be a wife, because only God knows just how long I have him here for.

My team leaves tonight for SA. I thought of keeping them here longer to celebrate, but most of them have families and well, it wouldn't be fair to keep them here. Except for Felicia of course. She's decided to stay here for another few days.

Him; you ready to leave

I look around one last time and nod. He takes my hand and whisks me away to our own very little compound.

When we get to the penthouse, we're both so tired, we just jumped into bed. Tomorrow I would have to make it up to him, tonight.

Tonight we sleep. Nathi

Waking up next to Tshidi feels like a dream come true. She looks so peaceful. Everything was in place for once.

I look at my vibrating phone and curse under my breath, The number is private, and so I don't answer, but then it rings again, and I decide to answer

Me; hello

Her; ive missed you

I look at the phone and then answer again, but this time walked out the room, last thing I needed was to wake up Tshidi

Me; who the hell is this

Her; oh how you

quickly forget Me;

This is crazy

Her; crazy? That's not what you said when you had me in your bed

Me; what

Her; I love you, and you are going to be mine. You need to end your marriage like you said you would. Me; what the fuck

Her; baby I love you. And we are going to make this work. You promised

Me; Promised. He man. I don't even know who you are

Her; ill see you soon baby. And I promise. Ill make it worth your time

I drop the call and shake my head. This shit was starting to get real. Whoever this girl is she has lost her marbles. I need to put a stop to it. Asap, before it got out of hand.

I flinch when I feel worm hands around my waist from the back,

Her;
mornin
g Me;
mornin
g

Her; I was hoping to make you breakfast
in bed, but you beat me to it Me; Sorry
babe. Work called

Her; speaking of work

She lets go and stands in front of me with
that sultry look in her eyes Her; How long
do I have you all to myself
Me; 3 days

She looks down. I know she's disappointed, but I did say that I
only had a week here

I lift up her chin

with my hand Me;

look at me

She looks at me and I see tears in her eyes,

Me; Makhumalo don't do that.

We've spoken about this She

nods, swallowing down her tears.

My heart breaks Her; (clears

throat) I'm going to make

breakfast

She tries walking away, but I hold onto her waist, pressing her against my chest.

Me; Tshidi don't do this.

Her; I'm not doing anything.

Me; I know you. I know when you're about to sulk. Baby we have 3 days left together. Can we spend that time together, instead of fighting about my job

She lets out a

deep sigh Her;

fine

I turn her around and put my lips on hers, kissing her softly. Her lips are sweet. She puts her arms around my neck deepening our kiss. I know I shouldn't do this, Dr S always said to never use sex to work things out, but in all honesty, I just don't know how to deal with a crying Tshidi. I don't know how to make it right, and so instead I make love to her, but unfortunately for me, sex just made things worse, Now she is in the lounge meditating again, but this time she isn't at peace. She's struggling and I don't know what to do to make it right. I sit next to her and take her hand in mine.

Me;

Tshidi

Her;

shhh

She puts a finger on her lips, then continues in silence, then after what feels like eternity she says
"amen"

Her; so what do you want to do for

the next couple of days Me; Tshidi

Her; ha a. don't go there. I love you and as much as I hate being
apart from you I understand. Just

promise me Nathi, Promise me that no
matter what you won't hurt me Me; Tshidi I
wouldn't hurt you. You know that
Her; good. Now how about you take me out for brunch, I'm
starved.

I smile, as she grabs her

handbag and phone. Tshidi

Whoooooosssaaa

That's what I have to do to deal with this crazy man, but I love
him, and because I love him, I deal with
his disappearing acts.

We spend the 3 days in NY. Most of which we spend in bed
eating and then humping. By the end of the 3 days my stomach
is in knots.

Him; Ill see you soon

I nod

Him; Tshidi

come on

Me; go

Him; baby. Please

don't be like this Me;

I'm not being like

anything Him; Tshidi,

I have to work

Her; yes. I know that

Him; so don't look so mad.

Me; Nathi, go

He stands up looking frustrated. I don't want him to go, and im

trying to hide my emotions, but im
failing miserably

Him; Ill call you
when I land Me;
ok

Him; I love you Tshidi. with
everything in me Me; just
not enough to be a full-time
husband

He takes a deep breath and kisses me on the cheek, then
walks away. The Jet door closes and I put on my seatbelt. 3
Months. That's what he said. He needs another three months
away from home, and as usual there is nothing more to say,
what makes things worse is that him and his mother decided
that Siseko would stay in KZN. He told me this on our way to
the airport. No discussion, no nothing. He just told me and
that's that. I wanted to throw a tantrum, but I am Tshidi
Khumalo, I take this in my stride.

Along with everything else. Tomorrow is another day. I have to
keep reminding myself that. Atleast my girls are on the way to
London to attend my award ceremony. I'm sure with them I will
be able to gather up the strength I need for the next couple of
months.

Anger

I try, really try keeping it at bay. I have a tendency for losing my shit, and doing so isn't always the best for anyone around me, but Nails. Nails is pissing me the fuck off. He is the best Cyber guy out there. He can track just about anything, but all of a sudden he can't track this stupid woman who had been making my life hell. She calls when she wants, sends me stupid pictures. She knows a lot about me, and that drives me crazy. Me; Nails, how the hell am I supposed to go on a mission, when this shit is in my mind?

Him; boss I'm working on it. Give me time Me; time we don't have.

Him; I'm on it.

I leave him at the house and go up to my room. I don't have the energy to fight with him. He needs to fix this, before it explodes, because as it is I'm skating on thin ice when it comes to Tshidi.

Now imagine Tshidi hearing about this. She would go psycho.

The biggest mistake I've made is deleting that damn picture, because now even if I confess, she's going to doubt me.

I take a deep breath and decide to call her. Judging by her fight plan she must've landed about an hour ago, but for some reason she doesn't pick up. So, I send a text to Tools asking if all is in order. He comes back to me in seconds letting me know all's in order.

I sigh throwing myself on the bed. I missed Tshidi already. It had only been a few hours since we parted, but already I was contemplating going home, but I quickly chase away the thought. I have duties, and as hard as it is for my family, I can't

just decide to up and leave. We're not the first couple to have to do this, and certainly not the last. Hopefully our love can survive this, because I know it nearly ripped Hlokes and Boni apart. I just hope. That's all I can do. Hope London

Being in London right after New York is a bit much, but when I land to find Boni at the airport waiting for me, the sight of her smile is enough to make me happy. I am here for an award ceremony after all.

The moment I step off the plane she runs to me with an umbrella. I smile, realizing just how much I missed her crazy ass. Especially her humble nature. She has security all around her, but she still carries her own umbrella

Her; finally, I've been out here for an hour

Me; and I love you for that.

Her; yah, yah, come on,

lets go get a drink Me; Can

we go to the hotel first so I

can bath Her; no. you can

do that later.

I roll my eyes as we get into the car and drive to some secluded restaurant where I find the rest of the girls waiting for us.

I smiled, feeling at peace for once.

Fifi; finally, we were about to order

Dorine; you're looking cute

Me; really? Gal, ive gained so much weight

Busi; Good thing its all
gone to the booty Boni; I
bet Nathi is enjoying it

I roll my eyes

Fifi; come. Let's
get you a drink

Dourine; Amaretto
and lime? Me;
please

We order drinks and lunch, again I ate my heart out, I guess it's
true, The London burgers are amazing

Fifi; I watched you
fashion show. Amazing

Me; Thanks, babe

Dourine; I hear your line has sold out

Me; Yah, I got the reports on the plane. It's all thanks to Felicia.
She's really taken charge and she
basically runs my boutiques

Busi; where did you find this Felicia girl

Me; actually, she found me. we met her at that presidential
ball in France. Remember with her brother Busi; ohh that that
lady and her brother. The prime minister?

ME; yep that's the one

Busi; mhmm

I look at Busi and see she has

a look on her face, Me; and

that look

Busi; Nothing. Just thought I had seen her somewhere. I just can't put my finger on it

Dourine; it must be those margaritas

We all laugh except for Busi. After Lunch we headed straight to the hotel. Tomorrow is the award show and I needed sleep, since I didn't have much sleep on the way here.

Nathi

Being a light sleeper is one of the things I hate most, because every small sound wakes you up. I get up and open the door to find Nails standing there with his laptop

Me; why didn't you knock

Him; I was

about to

Me; oh..

whats up

Him; I found

something

Me; talk to

me

Him; the private number is hard to locate. Ive tried looking everywhere and still couldn't locate it

Me; so you came all the way here to tell me you have nothing

Him; Axe. Listen...

He points at his screen and I see a red dot

Him; So instead I did it backwards. I looked at all the places that it didn't come from or even locate Me; and

Him; well, it seems like the line moves around, but right now, its somewhere in Europe Me; Europe?

Him; yes, but its going closer to London

The moment he says London I feel like ive been kicked in the gut Me; Get the Jet going. I need to be in London

Him; Boss?

Me; listen. My wife is in London. If this is coming from there I need to make sure that Tshidi is safe Him; Done,

Me; Tripple security. Make sure Hammer is there. Him;

Code Red

ME; not yet, but I need all agents surrounding The ladies

Nails leaves and I get up. I don't bother getting ready. I just want to get to London

Tshidi

Sleep is something I love and need. It's something that makes me happy. And when that is interrupted, I am a total bitch.

I let out a sigh when I hear the knock again. Running my hand through my hair, I get up and go see who it is. I find Tools standing with Hammer

ME; tools

Him; Sorry to interrupt mam. But Axe, has asked me to move you Me; move me

Him; yes. We're going to move all of you to the safe house that Hammer uses Me; is everything

ok

Him; Axe, is on his way. He'll explain when he arrives. But we have to go. Now

I look at Tools and immediately know that this is not the time to argue. His phone rings and he steps out to answer it.

Hammer; we should go

Me; ok, let me just get a few things

Hammer; you can leave those. We will

arrange for them to get delivered I grab my

phone and am about to walk out when

Tools walks in

Tools; We're initiating code Red. We need

you out of London. Yesterday

Me; whats going on

Tools; we'll explain, later

When he says that I see about 12 agents walking into my room.

Tools; lets get you out of here

a few agents walk out with us following behind. Boni and the rest of the ladies are escorted along with me. We are all in a bit of shock and no one asks any further questions. All I know is that something is wrong .

We get on the Jet, and we take off almost immediately. I see tools let out a sigh of relief.

We try asking but no one really gives us answers. Hammer, just tells us that here will be an explanation when we get home. I try calling Nathi but I don't get answers. So eventually I give up and drift into a troubled sleep.

13 Hours Later we Land in JHB, and again we have tons of Agents. We are escorted directly to our respective houses. Nathi still doesn't answer my calls, and at this stage I am tired from the travelling, so when I hear to see me, I'm tempted to send her away, but then I decide against it.

She walks in looking her normal beautiful self. She eyes me up and down and already I feel myself tense. Felicia doesn't look like herself. She gives me a small box and I open it and when I do I find something I never once in years expected. She has pictures of Nathi, picture after picture. Some are of Nathi and I but my face has been cut out and replaced with hers.

I look up and see she has a gun in her hand, I take a step back and she cocks the gun. It all starts to sink in. this could be my last day on earth. Even if Tools walked in now. He wouldn't be fast enough to stop the bullet from piercing through my chest.

105

Life, death that's what happens. You are born and then you live, then you die. Its life and there is nothing you can do about it, but this. This shit right here is insane. WHY is Felicia behaving like this?

Me; Felicia what.... What

Her; You really are slow Tshidi. I don't understand how he still

feels so sorry for you

Me; Felicia you need to put the gun down

Her; no. you took him from Me.

and now I want him back Me; what

Her; you did this. You made him turn against me. and now I want to reclaim my man. And the only way

I'm going to do that is by getting rid of you, once and for all

This bitch has lost her mind. I don't know

what else to say. I'm too shocked. Her;

where's your phone?

Me; its

upstairs

Her; walk

ME; ha?

Her; walk up the damn stairs Tshidi. And if you try anything I will blow your brains out

I turn around and walk slowly upstairs. I have a million thoughts through my mind, I want to scream, I want to run, but I don't dare. We arrive at the door of my room, and I hear another door opening, I'm sure its someone downstairs. Felicia turns around and I take that moment to open my bedroom door and slam it before she even has a moment to react. I try locking the door but she keeps pushing against it, I push it and somehow manage to lock it. She bangs on the door loudly, screaming and threatening me, I grab my phone and lock myself in the bathroom. I dial Nathi and thankfully he answers

Him; Tshidi

Me; Baby... shes mad

she's in the house Him;

GET IN THE PANICK

ROOM..... NOW

He drops the call, and before I can even move I hear commotion.

I don't move. I just sit in the corner of

the bathroom floor

rocking back and forth.

Nathi

Hate. Hate is a strong word, but right now it's what I'm feeling.

I hate myself for putting Tshidi in this mess. I can't believe I'm

stuck here in London, while my wife is stuck in a house with a

mad woman, and making things worse is the fact that as always

Tshidi disobeyed me. She hasn't entered the panic room, and

that is driving me nuts.

Me; Nails tell me you

have something Him;

working on it boss

Me; That's not good enough

Him; just give me a minute Axe

I look at him annoyed. I don't understand how I am supposed to

stay calm when my team has dropped the ball. They know the

rules. They've been too relaxed. Someone was supposed to pick

this up and they haven't.

Nails; I have

tools on line 21

pick up the

phone

ME; Tools

Him; We've apprehended the suspect

Me; I want her taken to HQ. I'm on the Jet

I drop the call. If I say anything further I'd probably fire the shit out of every single one of those stupid agents. The only thing I can do now is wait till I get to SA.

Tshidi

I've been sitting here on this couch for hours. Tools and skull were apprehend Felicia before she could do anything to really hurt me, but I am still at a complete loss as to how I let this be. I should've known something was fishy, but as always, I didn't trust my instincts, and if things had gotten worse I would've been dead, all because of my stupidity.

Him; Tshidi

I open my eyes slowly then closed them again. I must be dreaming, but then I feel his hand on my cheek, and I know he is here.

I open my eyes and tears

stream down. He's here. Him;

shhh I'm here.

He lifts me from the couch and walks up the stairs to our room. I have my head in his neck. Taking in his scent. He smells like body wash, sweat and his cologne.

He puts me on the bed and gets in with me. I can hear his phone ringing but he ignores it.

Him; Sleep... I'm here. I'm never leaving you again

He puts his arms around me and I drift

off into a peaceful sleep. Nathi

Seeing Tshidi looking so hurt only fuels my anger. I've put everything on hold for tonight, but tomorrow I will make these idiots

remember who the hell I am.

Me; Tshidi

She opens her eyes and smiles

Her; you're here

Me; I wouldn't be anywhere else

Her; she had a gun. She said

Me; I know my love, but it won't happen again. I promise you

I hold her as she cries. I wish I could do more. I wish I could take the pain from her, but I can't. All I can

do is hold her as she cries, till she eventually falls asleep again.

When I'm sure that she is asleep, I take a shower and head off to HQ. I've been delaying this for too long now.

Me; Round up the team

Nails looks up and nods. The room is packed within minutes

Me; every one of you have a mandate. The number one rule is to make sure that the first ladies are protected. So, what the hell happened. How the fuck did my wife end up with

gun to her head?

SILENCE

Me; you each have a decision to make. You either pull your socks or you leave right here right now, because the shit that transpired will never happen again.

Me; nails, you are the best in the game. How the fuck did this chick get passed all security. I thought you did a background search on her

Him; I did boss

Me; then how the HELL DID

SHE OVERPASS YOU? Him;

there is only one way

Me; And

Him; we

have a leak

Fuck

Me; What

Him; the only people who know what we search for is our agents. Only we have access to the info, and yet somehow all those specific things we look for were sealed.

Me; find the leak. I want to put a fucking hammer through the head. ME; the rest of you better make sure that you stop sleeping.

I dismiss the team excluding Nails

Me; Nails

say it

Him;

What

Me; I know you know who it is, You have that look in your eye

Him; Boss, its just that I'm not sure yet

Me; Spit it out

Him; we need to go to London

I looked at Nails and I knew he was onto something

Me; Get the Jet ready. I'll meet you at the Airport

Him; sho boss

Me; oh and make sure you keep this low. I don't want it getting out

Him; ok

I leave HQ and head off home. I hate that I won't be able to be there with Tshidi, but the sooner we get this done the better. Then I'll be able to come back home.

I arrive and I'm hit with the smell of cupcakes, I find Tshidi in the kitchen with music blasting from the lounge,

She smiles when she sees me

Her; sit. I've made your favorite

Me; Tshidi

Her; and for desert you can have cupcakes and me

She smiles and my heart aches. On any other day I would've taken the offer, but today I can see a whole

lot of sadness

below her smile

Me; Makhumalo

She looks into my eyes and frowns

Her; you have to go don't you

I nod.

Her;

mhm

Me; it won't be for long

Her; are you going to tell me what's going on

Me; yes, but not today

She takes a deep sigh and continues icing a cupcake.

I go upstairs. Gather a few things

then head back downstairs Me; im

off

Her; travel safe

Me; Ive spoken to the team. What happened won't happen again. You're safe

Me; ok

I lean in and give her a kiss, then leave. I know she's putting on a brave face, but I have no choice, I have to finish this.

Whatever it is, and once done I quit. Tshidi is bottling up her feelings and one of these days she will burst and so help me God, I refuse to let her down. Not again. Once this is done I am taking a step back and focusing on my family.

106

Arriving in London and leaving Tshidi back home is something that torments me every second that I'm here, and to make it worse Nails has been sitting on his laptop and has gone all cyber shit on me. When he gets like this he goes into a zone and its always best just to let him be. So instead of annoying him, I head to the room and try calling Tshidi. She doesn't answer so instead I call tools, who hands his phone to her

Her; Nathi

Me; You must be really mad to be calling me by my first name Her;

mhmm

Me; Baby

Her;

Khumalo?

Me; Talk to

me Her;

and say

what?

Oh Lord. I already know by her

coldness that she is going to blow Me;
Makhaumalo. I should've stayed. I

know that. But

Her; Nathi, I'm busy and you are wasting my time. If you wanted to be here, then you would be. So please stop with the lies. You are exactly where you want to be, and well you might as well stay where ever the hell you are and leave me the hell alone

She hangs up and I feel like she's kicked me in the gut. I knew she would be hurt but this, this is worse than I thought. I need to get my ass back home before world war 3 starts or else this woman is going to have my head.

Tshidi

Nathi has a death wish. Honestly, I feel like he wants me to wrap my hands around his neck and squeeze, because what man in his right mind leaves after everything that's happened? He didn't even have the decency to tell me why this girl even went all psycho on me. I could hardly even speak to him and here he is calling me acting like all is well in the world, when I had a Mad woman hold a gun to my head and tell me I took him away from him, and instead of him being here with me he is out in the world playing superhero. nxa

I'm so angry that I didn't hear or even see Boni walk in. I just find her standing behind me with pity written all over her face

Me; don't

Her; don't what

Me; I don't need pity Boni

Her; I didn't bring you

pity, I bought you me I

smile

Her; and

some alcohol

My smile

grows wider

Her; it's going to be fine Tshidi. He'll sort this out and will
come home

I swallow hard. I've held back so much and I don't want to cry again. If I do I don't know if I will be able to stop
Me; how much longer Boni? Because I am in this tunnel and the more I think there's light the more it gets dark.
Her; come here

I sit on the couch next her and
put my head on her lap
Her; let it out. Stop holding in so much.

You will burst

She runs her hand through my hair, and right on cue I'm crying my eyes out. I let out everything I've been keeping inside of me. The anger, the hurt the realization that I feel abandoned my own husband.

Boni lets me cry for what feels like forever. Until I have nothing left to cry

Her; I've been here Tshidi. I know it's not easy, just stand firm in your marriage. In time Tshidi, it will pass,

Me; (sniff) I just want my husband Boni, I want our life back I want my children back I can't continue to do this, not today

Her; give him time Tshidi, he is in a difficult position. He has so many people lives in his hands. If he makes a mistake we all can die Tshidi. Its his job. His friends trust him with their families. He has a responsibility to all of us and failure isn't an option

Me; how did you do it?

Her; I cried on Rifiloe's shoulder, threatened to leave him, threatened to cheat but one day he came home and I saw no spark in his eyes. It was gone, His excitement, his love for working, all of it was gone. I had drained him so much that he had totally given up and had come home. I knew that day that I had to let him be happy. I had to let him live

his life and so I did.

I take a deep breath as I sit as I listen to Boni. She tells me so much about her and Hlokes, from how they started to how they got here, by the time she leaves I am a little lighter. I am still angry at him though. Like really angry

Nathi

We arrive in London and nails hasn't even slept a wink, he has been so busy on his computer he hasn't even said a word or even eaten.

Me; nails are you ready to tell me what the hell is going on

Him; Yes. Lets get to the house.

Me; why

Him; because I need you to see this for yourself

I look at Nails and try hard to find doubt in his eyes. I want to see if he might be the leak, but just by looking at him I know he isn't it. So, I chose to trust him.

We arrive at the house and find hammer and Bones there. They weren't expecting us and that's obvious

Bones;

boss

Me;

mhmm

Hammer; what's happening.

Nails; We know

Hammer looks at me lost

Nails; Hammer we know what you've been up to

I look at nails,

Me; him?

Nails; are you going to confess or do

I have to drag it out of you

Me; fuck it hammer, really?

Bones; ahh anyone care to explain whats going on

Nails; Hammer you have been doing thing behind our backs. Don't you think you should be saying something about it

Fuck

Out of nowhere Hammer tries to run off, but since Nails was expecting it he's behind him in seconds. Punching him and kicking him. For the first time in my life I am shocked. This is my friend of over 10 years. He is my nephews father, why would he want to hurt my family? I know things have been strained, but this, this is shit

Me; nails,

stop Nails

moves

over

Me; Hammer, tell me this is a mistake, tell me I don't have to kill my nephews father He struggles to get up, and when he's finally up he comes closer and spits in my face

Him; fuck you AXE. Fuck you
I wipe my face and in that moment, I know I have no choice, I have to kill this mother fucker

107

I want to kill Hammer. I want to drive an axe between his head and watch as blood oozes out of him. I want to watch as he takes his last breath. I want to make him pay for putting my family in danger but I can't. This isn't something he just did. He has a reason for it and I want to know. I need to find who else is involved and how the hell Felicia is involved.

Me; Sabelo.. after all these years. After it all you chose to come for my wife. Out of all people. Why not me

Him; I don't owe you an explanation. You never deserved her, or Thandiwe ME; Thandiwe? What the fuck does Thandiwe have to do with this?

Him; you are pathetic Axe, and If I were you I would kill me now, because we both know if Nails and Bones weren't here I would've taken you out a long time ago

I look at the look of disgust in my friends eyes and I wonder what it is that I really did. Me; what about Thoko?

He frowns

Him; you mess everything up. If you hadn't interfered her and I would be fine. I would be with my son. But no, the mighty Axe had to ruin my life again

Me; Sabelo are you kidding me? she is a child. My sister. You had no right going for her, you know that. And to make it worse you can't even make an honest woman out of her. You are still married Him; don't bring her into it. You know we have been separated for years

Me; yes, but it doesn't change the fact that she is still your wife. Where did my sister fit into all of that?

Him; you should've trusted me as your friend. I would never have left her. I would've taken care of her. I would've done everything in my power to protect here and make her happy

Me; dude she is 22. She is a child

Him; that's not what it felt like when I

had her screaming my name Ok, that's

it. This fucker has lost his mind

I have hum by the throat in seconds, pushing him against the wall, I squeeze as he tries pushing me off. I want him

dead, but again I know that there is more to this shit, and if he's dead, then I might never get to the bottom of it, and that's a problem.

Tshidi

Waking up after an aftermath is one hell of a task. I can't leave the house. Nathi is unavailable, all in all it's a complete mess, and I don't know where to even begin, so I do what I do best. Design, that is until I get a 911 from Busi. I don't even ask, all I text her is that I am on my way I take a quick shower, get dressed and walk to the guardhouse. Tools doesn't like the idea of me going out, but I know Busi wouldn't 911 us for no reason, Thankfully Rifiloe lives right next door. So, I am able to convince Tools, when he sees Rifiloe and her team hooting at our gate, He nods, and we convoy to Busi's house, and as always, we are the last to arrive. I look at Boni and see her toolbox next here. I smile

Me; ok what is happening

Boni; sit down, have some wine

Rifiloe; please tell me we are not here

just to drink wine. 911 is serious Dourine;

you two need to take a chill pill.

We both sit and pour ourselves a glass of wine. Busi

comes out the kitchen with some snacks Me; finally.

Food

Boni; Yah, we came all the way here for food

Dourine; will you two shut up and let her tell us why we're here

I see Boni take a samosa and I look at her shocked. Boni doesn't eat. Like ever. She lives of greens, and now she is eating samoosa's

Busi; ok, so remember when I told you

guys I thought I knew that girl Fifi; what

girl

Busi; that chick

that works Tshidi I

look up

Me; Felicia

Her; yes. I remember
now where I saw her Me;
where?

Busi; Fifi remember the day of Tshidi's surgery we
went to see her, but no one would let us in Fifi; yah
Busi; and then remember we walked into the wrong
room when we came back after lunch. Remember
they said that they had moved Tshidi

Fifi; yah...

oh my God

Busi; yep
Me; what?

Busi; we found a girl in the room you had moved
from. She was just out of surgery as well. Me; ok
and?

Fifi; that girl
was Felicia

Me; Felicia?

Busi; yes. I know she had a gasmask over her face, but
her tattoo on her hand is what made me realize that it
was her

Me; damn

Boni; wait, so why

was she there We

all shrug

Dourine; but wasn't that floor
specifically for Heart operations Fifi;
yah

Dourine; maybe she had a
heart op as well Boni; but
why here in SA? It doesn't
make sense Me; oh my
God...

They all look at me quizzically. I take out my phone and dial Nathi. He doesn't answer, so I have no choice to call Nails

Nails; Mam

Me; Nails I need to speak to Nathi

Him; ahmm, I'm sorry mam, he is kind of
in the middle of something Me; Its

urgent. Please

Him; hold on for me.

He puts me

on hold

Him; Baby

Me; nathi

Him; whats

wrong Me;

its Felicia.

She

Him; Tshidi. calm down. Speak to me slowly

I take a deep breath, I know what I'm about to suggest
is crazy, but it makes sense in my head Me; tell me. do

you know her before France

Him; no. ive

never met her.

Me; I think...

no.... I just

Him; Tshidi

Speak

Me; what happened to my heart after my surgery

Him; I don't know. I think they keep

it for testing or something Me; I

think..... I think she has my heart

Silenc

e Me;

Nathi

?

Him; im here

Me; It all makes sense. Think how much she loves
design. How she kind of had the same hairstyle, how she
always asked so many questions about you. About our

life. And when she came yesterday with her gun, she kept telling me I took you from her

Him; Sigh

Me; oh, and Busi and Fifi saw her in the very same room I was in right after recovery. She had just had an op
Him; same day

Me; yes. They came to see me, but they told them I was in recovery, so they went to lunch, and when they came back I had been moved and she was there

Him; Tshidi. don't leave the house. This is bigger than I thought. Ill come back to you
Me; im at Busi's house. Ill leave in a few minutes

Him; Her house is safe. Just make sure you head straight home afterwards
Me; ok

Im about to hang up when I hear him sigh. I know im mad at him, but I hate this. I hate all of this
Me; Nathi, Talk to me

Him; Ill sort this out Tshidi. I promise, and once I do, I'm coming home.
Me; as in for good

Him; Yes.
Me; thank you baby

Him; I have to go. Give me some time

Tshidi. Ill sort this out. I swear it
Me; ill wait for you

We end our conversation and I take a gulp of my wine, until my phone rings again. The number is an international number, and already I know its Neli. I know I shouldn't answer, but I do anyway

Me; neli

Him; Tshidi. hi. Ive been trying to get hold of Felicia, but her number says its been disconnected
Me; oh, sorry, I haven't seen her

Him; I'm on a flight to SA. If you see her please get her to call me

Me; are you serious? So you're going to pretend like you don't know what's happening Him; Im lost

I felt my blood boiling, He must think I am stupid.

Obviously he knows. It was his plan all along. I'm sure he is just as involved as his sister

Me; you know what, get lost Neli.

Him; Tshidi

Me; you had her nearly kill me, and now you are here pretending like you know nothing about this. Mxm

Him; Tshidi. what are you talking about Me;

bye Neli

Him; Tshidi, I Love you. I would never hurt you. Never

I immediately cut the call. This man is honestly as mad as his sister. How the hell does he tell me such shit.

Especially since I am a married woman.

108

After speaking to Tshidi, I am more confused than I was.

If she is correct about Felicia, then this is all just not

adding up. It doesn't make sense. Not one bit

I look over at hammer, and he has a smile on his face

Me; are you ready to tell me what is happening

Him; lets just say I took a page out of your

book, and decided to play God Me; what

the fuck are you talking about

Him; welcome to my world

I look at Nails and he has that look on his face. I know

he is pissed that this slipped him, but in all honesty
Hammer, had us all fooled.

Me; get back to HQ. I want him alive,
Me; Bones I need you to search his house, I want it
turned upside down. Send me everything you find.
You're in charge of London until I get back
Bones looks at me with
excitement in his eyes Me;
don't mess this up
Bones; I won't boss.

Nails and Bones sedate him and carry him outside. I sit
down and try putting the puzzle together, but most of the
pieces of this puzzle weren't coming together. I know what
I have to do. I have to get the info I need and then I have
to kill him.

Leaving London is bitter sweet. I haven't slept properly
this entire week. Tshidi is mad as hell, and now knowing
that my friend betrayed me, pisses me the fuck off.

I sit next to Nails on the jet, and watch him
as he drinks himself into a coma Me; Nails..
take it easy

He pours another drink and ignores me.

Me; You know it's
not your fault Him;
I should've looked
harder Me; Nails
Him; What Axe.

Me; chill. Tshidi is ok. We can't afford to fall apart

He rolls his eyes knocking back another drink. See on any other day I would've been pissed, but Nails is a friend. A loyal friend, but it's weird seeing him so soft. The roles are usually reversed. I'm the one who gets to vent but today. Today is his day

His phone rings, he looks up at me and drops the call

Me; and that?

Him; Its nothing

Me; fuck nails, I hope you aren't involved in this

Him; what the fuck Axe, I just fucking gave you

Hammer on a fucking silver platter

Me; so who was that

Him; stop interrogating me,

I look at Nails, I know he's irritated but this is more than just this case. Then it all starts making sense, for the first time since finding out about Hammer, I burst out laughing.

Him; share the joke

Me; See Nails, I have known you for a while, and I know that the minute one of us starts going soft it's because a woman is involved.

He drops his eyes, and I know that I've touched a nerve. We sit in an awkward silence for a few seconds

Me; so

Him; So, what?

Me; well are you going to

tell me who she is

Him; there is no one

Me; nails

Him; let it go Axe

I laugh, taking the Hennessy from him and heading to the other end of the jet, locking myself into a booth and falling asleep instantly.

NAILS

Fucking hell, what part of I am busy does this woman not understand. I have a shit load to do and her constant calling only makes things worse. In the end, I give in answering her call

Her; about damn time

Me; you can't keep doing

this. I told you I was busy

He; tough. I missed you, so I

called you

Me; sigh

Her; when are you

coming back

Me;
soon.

Her; good, because you are taking me on that date

you promised me all those years ago

Me; Amanda

Her; No Phila. The moment you land, I expect a phone call.

She hangs up leaving me frustrated, this woman is going to be the death of me. Bumping into her a few weeks ago, after I hadn't seen her for almost a decade felt surreal.

She is still the same old loud spoken girl who forced me to kiss her when we were in grade 3, and now here she is again telling me I'm taking her on a date. Which I don't get since, I paid for lunch that day I bumped into here. We spent hours talking, well, actually she did all the talking, I just went along with it. She took my number and hasn't stopped calling me since. I won't lie and say I don't enjoy her loud mouth, but I just hate what I've become since we started talking. Ive started missing things, I should've been a step ahead of Hammer, and now because of my negligence, Tshidi could be dead, and to make things worse is the fact that we still don't know what the hell else Hammer has planned.

I get up and go to the fridge pulling out a bottle of

water. I need to sober up, so I can work. Tshidi

Its been over 24 hrs. since I've spoken to Nathi. His phone has been off and I am on what looks like house arrest. The number of guards tripled. There is even a guard outside the entrance door.

I've tried speaking to tools but all he says is that there is nothing to worry about. Mxm, like that isn't something I've heard before.

I'm about to call Nathi again,
when a private call comes in Me;

Hello

Him; Tshidi. Please
don't drop the call Me;

What do you want

Neli

Him; I just need to meet
with you, please Me;
are you crazy?

Him; Please. It will just be a few minutes. I swear on my life I have nothing to do with whatever my sister is involved in

Me; silence

Him; Tshidi, please. I know you probably won't believe me, but I love you. And I know it's wrong because you're married, but I swear on my life I would never hurt you

Me; neli, don't
phone me again

Him; Tshidi

Please.... Just let
me

I end the call not knowing what the fuck to think. This just gets deeper and deeper; how does he think its ok to declare his stupid love to me when his sister held a gun

to me just 48 hours ago.

Nathi

Once we arrive back in SA, we don't even have time to shower, we head straight to HQ. we need to nib this in the butt, before things get further out of hand.

Me; Nails get set up. We start with the girl then Hammer. Him;

Sho Boss

ME; bring her to the interrogation room

I head upstairs to the interrogation room, and wait for them to bring Felicia in... The moment the doors open, she smiles at me

Her; baby, I just knew you

would come for me I look

at her puzzled

Her; Ive been waiting. The guys here are rather mean Me; take a seat

She sits opposite me

Her; so how long till we move into our old house? The sooner the better Me; what?

Her; our house. You know, the one we lived in, before you went and married that broad Me; Felicia

Her; don't call me that. You don't have to hide anymore. Now you can call me Thandiwe. Just like you used to before that tramp came along and stole you from me.

Me; Felicia.. I don't think you understand

Her; oh, I understand perfectly. She used you, she took my place, but im back now and she has to go.

I look at Felicia, and wonder what the hell has gotten into her. At first I thought it was all a joke, but now I realize

that she actually believes this. She actually believes that she is Thandiwe.

I walk out leaving her rambling about our future.

ME; Nails we need to keep her here. Something isn't right Him; sho boss

I see him yawn, and I know we both need to take a breather.

Me; Nails.. Go home. We'll start
back tomorrow again Him; you
sure boss

Me; yah, I think we both need to take a step back.
Get some rest. We start again tomorrow Him; thanks
boss

I grab my geys and before I
leave I take a look at Nails Me;
oh, and say hello to the future

Mrs Nails

He smiles shaking his head

Him; she's not even my girlfriend

Me; well you better wife her up quick. You're cranky as
fuck and that's because you aren't getting laid.

He swings a pen at me and I duck walking away. Its time I
go face my wife. Tomorrow I will deal with all this bullshit.
But tonight, tonight I want to be with Tshidi. Remind her of
old times, especially since I have a feeling that this shit is
going to get darker, before we see the sun.

109

I know I've been jumpy since this whole thing with Felicia
happened. I haven't been able to sleep probably despite me
meditating, but I swear to God I just heard a squeak. I listen
again and hear it, and I immediately know that there is
someone in the house.

I look for my phone and remember I left it in the lounge after I
spoke to Nathi last night. I came upstairs and somehow, I fell
asleep and now I can't even call tools to tell him that there is

someone in the house.

I put on my gown, and try find something that I can defend myself with, but I don't find anything. So, I end up having to rely on my slippers.

I hear the footsteps get closer and I take a deep breath and wait behind the door, It opens slowly and I make a silent prayer then launch at the intruder. I jump onto his back scratching and trying to aim for his eyes. If I can claw out the eyes I know ill be able to run downstairs.

I'm screaming and doing my best to fight till my last breath when I realize that I am fighting my husband. He overpowers me and bursts out laughing. He has my hands behind my back.

Me; wtf Nathi.. you

flipping scared me Him;

im sorry baby..... But

(laughing) Me; its not

funny, let go of me

I try pulling my hands from his hold, but he holds on tighter,

Me; let go of me Nathi

Him; ive

missed you

Me; let go

of me

He doesn't let go, instead I feel his lips on my neck. The energy in the room immediately changing. The feel of him breathing on me wipes away every ounce of anger and is replaced with longing. The longing of him being here, the longing of having him hold me, make love to me. the longing of normalcy.

I close my eyes taking in his smell of cologne

Him; ive missed you

He lets go of my hands turning me around to face him. I look into his eyes and find the reassurance that I've been longing for.

Me; I've missed you more

I stand on my tiptoes and place my hands around his neck bringing him to my lips. He picks me up and walks me to our bed.

Him; I want to worship every inch of you with my lips

The look in his eyes tells me immediately that he is going to devour me.

I immediately squirm at the feel of his lips on my neck, as he takes me apart in every way possible, and then holds me as we both return to earth.

He holds me and stares into my eyes.

Me; how long

Him; let's not talk about that right now

Me; Why not. We both know you leave soon, I just want to know how much time I have with you

Him; I don't know yet

Me; are you going to tell me what's going on

Him; don't worry about it Tshidi. I'll handle it

The way he says his last sentence pisses me off. I hate it when he gets stern with me. This is my life we're talking about. How can he tell me not to worry when this woman came into my house?

I get out of bed annoyed. It's the only way I won't kill him. Instead I get dressed still smelling like him

Him; Tshidi can we not do this right now?

Me; are you serious? Nathi you're doing it again. You're shutting me out. You're leaving me out of something that concerns me.

He gets up and puts on a robe. I already know with the look on his face that he isn't backing down.

Him; Tshidi. I am handling this. I don't want you involved.

Me; involved? Nathi she had a gun to my head.

She told me I took you from her. Him; I know that

Me; and now you expect me to pretend like she didn't

Him; Tshidi

Me; Nathi, who is Felicia to you?

He looks at me and I see his anger start to take over

Him; what are you trying to say

Me; you know exactly what I'm trying to say

Him; you think I would've let you even a meter of her if I had known that I slept with her

Me; I don't know Nathi. You're the one who insists on keeping me in the dark, which only makes me wonder why you were so jealous at the presidential dinner. It's because you knew about her

Him; You honestly think that low of me?

Me; I don't know what to think anymore? You won't say anything

He comes closer and I step back. Yes, we're back there again. We're at the place where neither of us is rational, where we aren't listening to each other. That place that we have been trying si hard not to go back to. But he has pushed me. How many times has he promised never to keep anything from me, but here we are again,

Him; Tshidi, you listen to me and listen carefully. I have fucked a shit load of woman. I know every single one of them. I know their faces when they scream out my name. Never and I mean ever have I laid even a single finger on Felicia.

My heart drops

Him; now if you are finished with your tantrum, I would like to get some sleep.

He walks away and gets into bed, leaving me shocked. Mxm

I go shower, then go downstairs to make myself something to eat. So much for having him home. Nxa, he should just go back to wherever the hell he came from.

110

Fighting with Tshidi isn't something I like, hell or even look forward to. I'm usually able to defuse the situation, but this time I just got pissed. I can't believe she would basically accuse me of cheating, when I have been nothing but loyal to her. I mean really. Would I bring a woman that I've slept with anywhere near her?

I try getting sleep but my heart won't let me. I know I shouldn't have said what I said, but I just hate my loyalty being questioned. It rubs me a million times off the wrong way. Especially with all the compromises I made to get us to this point.

I find Tshidi in the kitchen cooking. The poor cupboards are the ones paying since she keeps banging them closed and then opens them and closes them again

Me; leave the cupboards alone. They didn't do anything to you

Her; mxm

Me; Baby, I just got home. Can we not fight

She slams the fridge and starts chopping vegetables

ME; Sigh... Tshidi

She chops the veggies viciously and continues to ignore me, which sends me over the fucking ledge.

Before I can stop myself, I lunge across the table grabbing the knife safely from her hand. Throwing it across the room.

I can just tell that I frightened her, but I'm too far in. She backs away and tries to get away from me, but instead of stopping myself, I have her pressed against the counter.

Her; Nathi

Me; I've had it with your fucking bullshit. I fucking told you I would handle this. Why can't you just let it go

Her; get away from me

Me; Tshidi, your disrespect is annoying as fuck. You better tow

in line before I fucking lose my shit with you. I already have enough pressure. Is it too much to come home to a smiling wife, instead of this shit

She tries pushing me away, but I don't move even an inch. She punches me screaming trying to move me. I want to move. I do. And I know I promised I wouldn't bring Axe home, but somehow all I'm seeing is red.

She ends up biting my arm, and that's when she manages to slip away.

Her; I'm done with this bullshit. You have no regards for my feelings Nathi.

Me; are you fucking kidding me? Tshidi. I am here. I should be out there working, but I'm here. What more do you want from me

Her; You are actually pathetic. It's a shame that I get more attention from another man, than I do from my own husband.

DING, DING, Ding

I don't know what, where, how but all I know is that she tried walking away after hitting me with those words, and now here she is with my hands

around her neck squeezing. Nathi

110

What the hell am I doing????????? The moment I realize what is happening I let go of her. I watch as everything happens in slow motion as she drops to the floor. Everything happened so quickly. One moment we were just arguing, and then I lost it. In a split second, I just saw black and I attacked. I didn't mean to. I swear it on my life. It all just happened so quickly that even if I tried to stop it I wouldn't have been able to.

Looking at Tshidi gasping for air breaks every cell in me. I know now, in this instance that Tshidi will never forgive me. I have done worse than cheat on her. I have tarnished her trust. I have ruined us, because right now she looks at me with fear. When she sees me she sees Msizi. We aren't different. To her I have just become a monster. One that she will fear and that alone makes me want to put a bullet through my very own head.

Tshidi

I try with everything in me to fight him off, the look in his eyes is

one that I've never seen before. This isn't Nathi. This isn't the man I fell in love with. This.... CREATURE that stands with his hands around my neck is none other than AXE.

Something changes in a split second. He lets go me and I fall to the ground coughing and gasping for air.

He doesn't move. He is frozen, I get up slowly, while coughing. My throat burns. MY lungs are in overkill, trying to get as much air in them as possible.

Nathi or should I say AXE. I don't know who he is right now, tries to help me, but I put up my hand protectively thinking he is going to hit me. I see the pain across his eyes as I look up at him

He takes a step back, understanding that I need him as far away from me as possible. I leave him standing in the passage and go to our room, locking the door behind me.

I am in a daze. I'm back where I started. I walk over to the bed and lay down. I don't know what to think.

What to say. I just lay here. I don't cry., I have no tears. I don't know how we got here. I was angry. I didn't mean to say what I said, but Nathi.... He..

Nathi

Tshidi hasn't come out our room since I ,,,,,, I can't even say it. It doesn't feel real. It feels like I was dreaming. I haven't asked her to come out. I haven't moved from this couch since this it happened.

The sound of a ringing phone snaps me out of my thoughts. I look around and see Tshidi's phone. I take it and decide to answer

Me;

Hello

Him;

Silence

Me;

Hello

Him; Oh, Hi..... can I speak to Tshidi

I know in that moment that the man she was referring to was Neli.

ME; you have some nerve calling my wife

Him; look, man, I'm not looking for trouble. I just need to speak to her.

Me; do yourself a favor. Stay the fuck away from my wife. Don't push me Neli

I end the call and almost fucking break to phone. This man wants to die. He wants me to kill him.

I hear the bedroom door open. I pray to God she doesn't come in here.

An sms comes through and I without shame open it.

IM SORRY TSHIDI. PLEASE.. I LOVE YOU... I

WOULD NEVER HURT YOU. PLEASE JUST

TAKE A MOMEN TO TALK TO ME. I AM

NOT MY SISTER WHATEVER SHE DID, I

SWEAR I HAD NOTHING TO DO WITH IT.

Her; what are you doing with my phone

Her hoarse voice catches me off guard. I look through all the messages and one after the other he tells her how much he loves her. I feel my heart swell. How could she? How could Tshidi betray me like this.

I put her phone down. I am trying to breath. I keep telling myself to calm down. Tshidi needs to walk away. She needs to get out of here, because I can feel it. I am going to lose my shit.

Me; Tshidi... do yourself a favor. Get out of here. Leave, before I do something that we will both regret Her; what's there to regret? You've already killed us.

Hearing those words from her only pisses me off even more. Tshidi has been having an affair behind my back and she thinks she can just say what she wants

I get up and she is backing away instantly. She goes into the kitchen.

Me; how could you. After everything?

Her; Nathi... please

Me; Please what? You have been making me feel like a shit husband, while you are busy sleeping with Neli

She looks at me shocked.

I try coming around to her side, she retracts and somehow the classes on the counter end up on the floor.

Her; Nathi..... I Please

I am around in seconds stand an inch from her, she doesn't move. She is breathing fast. I put my hand in her air. I don't pull. I want to, with everything in me, I want to hurt her, but I don't.

Me; i am going to ask you once, and you had better tell me the truth. How long have you been sleeping with him

Her; never.... I have never once

I bang my fist into the counter. She screams frightened as a plate falls breaking onto the floor

Me; don't you lie to me. I saw his messages.

Before she answers Tools walks in. I wait for him to retract but he doesn't.

Him; (clears throat) Boss, is everything ok

I don't need to look at him to tell that he is surprised by what he sees

Me; leave...

He doesn't move.

Him; boss.. You should let go of her

Me; TOOLS.... I said leave

He doesn't move. All the while I am still standing here with
Tshidi pressed against the counter

Him; Boss, you pay me to make sure she doesn't get hurt. Those
were your orders. I wont let you hurt
her

Me; I said get out

He steps closer

Him; Axe... this isn't who you are. let her go. You love her. You wouldn't hurt her.

I look at Tshidi, and realize that I am turning into a monster.

I step back. She doesn't move. Her glossy eyes are filled with pain and I inflicted it. But I am hurting too. She's betrayed me.

Tools takes a glass and pours me some brandy. He takes Tshidi's hand and leads her out the kitchen. He walks her out the sliding door to the garage, then drives out with her.

Tshidi

I'm numb. I am in a car. Tools is driving me to God knows where, and just sit here, till he pulls up in front of Boni's house. The guards instantly open for us and we drive up the driveway.

Tools gets out the car and opens my door for me. I step out and he walks me to the main door. When Boni appears at the door she takes one look at me and ushers me inside...

Tools doesn't say goodbye. Once the door closes behind me, he leaves.

Boni leads me straight to the spare bedroom. As we walk up the stairs I notice the candle lit dinner laid in the dining room.

Me; Boni.. I didn't mean to interrupt. I
can book myself into a hotel Her; don't
be stupid

She opens the spare bedroom and closes it behind me

Her; what
happened?

Me; sniff

Her; Tshidi what happened

Me; My marriage is over. We can't go back from here.

For the first time since the fight, I break down. My husband betrayed me, and I hate him Boni... I hate him with everything in me.

111

Boni sits with me for what feels like forever. She holds me as I mourn the death of my marriage. There is no way Nathi and I can come back from here. We've both said too much, and now we crumble apart.

Boni; I'm going to get Hlokes to

come check you out Me; I'm

fine Boni

Her; Tshidi he strangled you. Your voice is basically gone

I just nod and she leaves and comes back with Hlokes. He gives me an examination.

Him; you're going to be fine. You just need to rest your voice.

Boni; what about

the bruising Him;

It will go away

eventually Me;

Thanks, Hlokes

Him; don't thank me, I'm just

sorry it happened. Boni; we'll

leave you to rest

Me; no... I need to go by the house and get some clothes, then I need to book myself into a hotel

Boni; Tshidi. you know you can stay here

Me; I know, but I need space. I need to figure out what I'm going to do

Boni; why cant you figure that out here?

Hlokes; Tshidi, you don't need a hotel. You can

stay here as long as you need Boni; we'll give

you space.. Promise

Me; ok, but I need to get

some of my clothes Her; Ill

take you

Hlokes nudges her.

Her; what?

Him; I just don't think it's a good idea to go to the house right now. Me; why?

Him; just stay here tonight. You can get clothes tomorrow. Boni; ill get you something of mine to wear for tonight Me; thank you

Hlokes laves, while I somehow try change into Boni's onsie.

Her; I'm going to leave you to rest

Me; do you think Hlokes could give me something to help with sleeping Her; ill see what I can do

She comes back with exactly 1 tablet, which I take down with some water.

Her; sleep tight

She leaves and I get into bed. Thankfully the pill works its magic, and I'm lights out in a matter of minutes.

Nathi

Tools leaving with Tshidi is something I will eternally grateful for. It scares me to think of what I would've done if he hadn't walked in. I still fail to understand how Tshidi would do this to us. I know I'm not perfect. I know things have been tense, but for her to choose him over us, kills me. Was that bad of a husband that my wife had to look somewhere else for love?

Him; I hope you have more of that since we had to stop what we were doing and come over

I look up and find Hlokes standing at the door. Somehow, he walked in without me even noticing He grabs a glass and sits opposite me. We sit for a few minutes in silence, until he speaks up

Him; She's ok. A bit bruised and swollen, but she should be fine Me;

mhm

Him; is that all you're going to say

Me; im not in the mood

right now Hlokes Him;

well, it's a good thing I

can fight back Me; its not

like that

Him; then how is it?

Me; I lost it ok. I didn't mean to... but I just couldn't hold myself. How could she?

Him; how could she what

Me; she's sleeping with Neli

Hlokes looks at me shocked and pours himself another drink

Me; exactly

Him; are you sure though... Tshidi doesn't seem like the type to cheat

Me; I am sure. He called. I saw the messages and she told me all about how much attention she's getting from him, so yah, I'm sure

Him; damn, I'm sorry man, I know how much you love her

Me; Loved her... I should've never fallen for her. I was fine after Thandiwe. I slept with who I wanted then sent them on their way. No strings attached, but nooo, I had to be stupid and fucking fall for her

Him; I'm sure you can work it out.

Me; naah... We're done. I can't trust her and she probably hates me. There's no coming back from this one Bro

Him; so what now

Me; I sort out this shit with Felicia. Put it to

bed and get my ass on missions Him; damn

Me; yah

Him; well, at least this Johnny walker is faithful to us

Tshidi

Waking up the following morning, I expect to see Nathi, but then it all comes rushing back. My throat feels like its on fire and my fucking bruised as hell.

I change back into my clothes, then head downstairs. As much as I would like to stay in bed and cry, I have a business to run, so sitting at home isn't going to happen.

Boni; oh, look who

decided to wake up Me;

hey friend

Boni; damn, you voice

sounds as hoarse as fuck Me;

thanks

I give her sarcastic look and she smiles

Her have breakfast with me

Me; no thanks love. I need to go home. Change and get to the Boutique

Her; ill make sure that I get some of those Vanilla candles you like for your room Me; Boni... I love you for being there for me, but I need to sort this out by myself Her; fine... but you know where to find me if you need me

Me; yes friend.

Her; come on. I'll get my driver to drive you

Walking into my house after what happened feels surreal. The house feels dark. Heavy even.

Him; so you're back

I turn around and find Nathi standing behind me
Me; I need to get ready for work,
and get a few of my things Him; you
do that

I take that as my cue to leave. I head upstairs and pack a few things, then take a quick shower. The sooner I'm out of here the better.

When I come out the closet, I find Nathi laying down, I would give anything to be in his arms. Anything to forget about what happened, but I can't, because those same arms I want around me we wrapped around my neck last night sucking the life out of me.

I take a deep breath and gather my things. I look everywhere for my phone, but I can't find it anywhere. I already know that Nathi

probably has it. So, I go back upstairs Me;

Have you seen my phone

Him; Silence

Me; Nathi. My life is on that phone.

My clients. Please I need it Him;

silence

Me; Nathi.

Him; It's in my

office. Top draw

Me; thank you

Him; You don't need to move out. I'll move back into my old house

Me; I thought you had sold that house. You made me sell my house, and yet you still had your house Him; yah, well, I

thought I could trust you, so I guess we're even

Me; so you're telling me that you've been holding onto her

Him; (chuckles) well, I guess it's a good thing since you have basically turned out to be her. Must be that evil heart in your body

Ouch

Me; wow, ok... Just for the record. I haven't been having an affair with Neli. The only reason I kept those messages was because I wanted to show them to you. I tried calling you, but as always you were unavailable. I didn't want to delete them and for you to think that I am being unfaithful

Him; yah right

Me; Nathi., I love you... with everything in me. but I can't go back to where I was those years ago, with msizi. I can't stay, knowing you think its ok to strangle me.

Him; Tshidi. you didn't hear me asking you to stay. You can do what you want. I'm done with this just as much as you are. so go be with your Neli and leave me in peace

I feel the knife in my heart turning

Me; so this is how things are going to be between us?

Him; I don't know how else

you want it to be Me; (clears

throat) well, I guess this is

goodbye Him; mhmm

I walk away before I start crying. His coldness hurts me worse than his hands around my throat.

I grab my phone from his office and my car keys. I haven't driven my car for so long, that I'm surprised it even starts. I drive to the Hyde Park Hotel and book myself into a suit, then head off to the Boutique. I may be hurt, but I have to keep working.

The moment I charge my phone, a flood of messages and voice notes from Neli come through. I decide to delete them.

Problem though is that he changes numbers, so I can never truly block him.

Nathi

Once Tshidi leaves, I shower and pack a few of my things and move them to my old house. Then head to HQ.

I find Nails already working, I can tell by the look on his face that he is speaking to Tshidi.

I signal for him to meet me in his office, which he does exactly 3 minutes after my arrival ‘

Him; Boss

Me; anything from Hammer

Him; no. but I may have

found something Me;

what

Him; Tshidi was right Felicia having an op on the very same day as her. They concealed the records, but I'm bust accessing them as we speak

Me; good. The sooner this is sorted, the sooner I can get back to Mexico Him; cool

Me; in the meantime, have one of the rookies bring my axe and a hammer. Him; Sho boss

Me; what did she want?

Him; Who

Me; Tshidi?

Him; Tools asked me to get extra security at her hotel, she was giving me the room number Me; mhmm

Him; she's also asked me to block Neli

Me; mhmm

He walks out and I head to the interrogation room, where Hammer cuffed to the table

Me; well Hammer my man, you don't look too good

Him; Fuck you

Me; you know what you're right. How about we forget the games, how about you tell me what you and

Felicia were planning. That
way we both stay alive Him;
how about you fuck off
Me; wrong answer

I pick up an Axe

Me; talk
Him; fuck you

The moment he says that I slam the Hammer into his right hand. Instantly chopping it in half. He screams out in pain while I pull the Axe out the table

ME; you have 5 seconds

5

4

3

2

Him; ok, ok... shit

Me; talk

Him; She doesn't have Tshidi's heart. She suffered from memory loss due to an accident she had. She had a heart transplant the same day as Tshidi. So after I found out about her, I convinced her she was Thandiwe. I gave her everything she needed to know about her. And when I thought she was ready, I helped her gain Tshidi's trust

Me; was that so difficult? Why didn't you just tell me from the beginning

I look at the blood spewing from his hand and smile

Me; its time you say hello to your

Ancestors. Tell them I said hi Him;

Axe.. Wait

Before he can finish his sentence, I have the axe in his head. His blood splatters all over me but I don't care.

I call in Nails and tell him to bring in Felicia. The minute she sees Hammer she screams

Me; shut her up

Nails covers her mouth

Me; see what I did to your friend? You are going to tell Nails everything about how you met. If for a second I feel that you are lying. I will have you chopped into pieces. Are we clear?

She nods and I leave her in there with Nails. He knows what he needs to do. All I need now is to get a drink and go drown in alcohol. The sooner I wrap up this case, the sooner I can get back to Mexico.

112

What is it about this girl? I don't know. But somehow, I have no choice than to actually do what she asked me to do 3 days ago,. She doesn't pick up the first two times I call, so I take that as a hint and leave her alone, maybe she's actually given up. She probably sees what I see and decided to run. Good for her. Who am I kidding. This is Amanda we're talking about. My phone rings snapping me out of my thoughts

Me; hey

Her; see you finally

decided to grow a pair

Me; chuckles.... So how

about that dinner Her; no

can do

Me; what

Her; I've got a show tonight. I'm in rehearsal as we speak

Me; rehearsal? What are you a stripper or something

Her; I'm the "or something"

ME; so, there's no way we can do dinner

Her; I go on stage at 7, so no. dinner isn't going to happen

Me; but I want to see you

Her; well then you should've called me when I told you to

Me; but I called now

Her; exactly and because of that, you aren't seeing me tonight

Me; but I might be

leaving soon Her;

tough luck

Me; where are you performing?

Her; Montecasino and before you even bother tickets are sold out.

Me; Manda come on... I'm sorry

She doesn't say anything. For a moment I think she's probably going to end the call,

Her; Ill leave you a ticket at the front door. Don't be late '

Me; I wont

With that she ends the call. I let out a dee sigh. I don't like what she is doing to me. I don't beg, never have never will. But Amanda, she seems to be the exception to the rule.

Tshidi

Day 2 of living in this hotel and I haven't left, not once. Instead I have produced some of my best designs yet. I have done more in this 48 hours than I would normally do in a month. I have hardly slept or even bathed, I don't even know what time it is. I get up off the floor and lay my 12 designs on the bed satisfied. At least even with everything I can count on my creativity.

I look at my phone and charge it. I hadn't even noticed that its flat. The moment I switch it on a million messages come through. I delete most of them because I already know that they are from Neli. I was hoping that there would be one from Nathi, but there's nothing. I look at the missed calls and decide to call

Boni back.

Her; about damn time... I was about to drive to you now and drag you over for dinner

Me; sorry babe, been so busy

Her; its fine. you can make it up to me by coming to dinner, the girls are all coming

Me; ahmm... I

Her; he won't be here, He's working

Me; are

you sure

Her; yes,

100%

Me; ok, I'll be there

Her; yay..

I soon end the call to Boni and decide to get ready. Its already after 5pm and she said we should be there by 7pm, and since I haven't been taking care of myself my hair looks like a bush bushveld.

I start with taking a long hot shower, I decide to shave. I usually wax but since I don't have the time, I stick to shaving.

After the shower, I pull out some clothes, and thankfully since dinner is at Boni's I know it will be super casual, so I stick to a pair of faded jeans, with my Puma sneakers my yeezy T-Shirt and a Bomber Jacket in case it gets gold.

I have to wear make-up because I end up using make up to cover the bruises on my neck. I decide to leave my hair as it is. Its natural and bushfelty but who cares? Tonight, I don't have to pretend, I don't have to be miss second lady of anything. Tonight, I'm just me. and Tshidi has her hair bushy.

Tools insists on driving me. I would argue but Since I still have to stop at the store and grab Boni a bottle of Wine and Flowers, I give in and let tools drive me

As always I am late. I swear no matter how hard I try I will probably never be on time, not even if I tried, but thankfully when I walk in at 7;30pm, no one seems to notice, especially since I've come bearing wine.

Boni grabs the wine and flowers, while I hug and kiss the ladies.

Dourine; for someone going through shit, you are looking all sorts of swagged up

I roll my eyes

Fifi; how are you

Me; I'm fine.. haven't really had time to

think about what happened Busi; I'm

sorry babe, I can only imagine how you're

feeling

Me; I'll be fine

Fifi; well if its any consolation, I think you two will work it out

Boni; enough with the guy talk. I didn't bring you ladies here to talk about men

I smile at Boni thankful she changed the subject, because in all honesty, I am in no mood to talk about my failed marriage. Instead I want to drink my brains out and just enjoy the time I have with my girls. Its rare that we get to meet because of all our schedules.

Boni serves us dinner and thankfully everyone has moved passed my issues and we are now concentrating on Boni telling us all about the fun she had at some masked SEXPO, I smile as she tells us how fun it was being able to do something "fun" with Hlokes without anyone knowing it was them.

As always when I'm with the girls I am laughing and drinking. Its already after 10pm, and I am on my 3rd glass of wine. I am finally relaxed and just enjoying the conversation which started with sex, then led to politics, then cooking and now we are back to the one topic all woman enjoy, Sex.

Fifi is busy telling us about being on contraception without Siya knowing when we hear some noise coming from the front door, Hlokes walks in followed by Siya and then Mthunzi.

My heart beats fast because I already know by the look in Hloke's face that Nathi is going to walk in any minute now.

Right on que he walks in almost bumping into Luzuko.

I am immediately sober, My lungs feel like they need

air, I'm sweaty and my heart races. His eyes don't

leave mine. I can see the anger rising. I take this as my

que

Me; (clears throat) I should get going

I stand up putting on my bomber jacket

Boni; no.. you're not going anywhere

Hlokes; don't go, we're
going to the mancave Me; I
don't want to impose,

Boni; Tshidi, sit your ass down

Hlokes leads the guys down to the basement where his man
cave is situated. The moment Nathi is out
the room I start to breath properly. The air around me doesn't
feel as heavy as it did moments ago.

Fifi; are you ok

Me; I'm fine

Boni; I am so sorry Tshidi. they were supposed to be gone.

They weren't supposed to come here Me; don't apologize.

This is your home.

Busi; maybe we should lock you guys in their play room. Maybe
that would help you

I laugh knowing they are trying to lighten the mood. If only that
was enough.

Nails

I drive to Montcasino expecting to be ushered into a small showcase. But the moment I arrive I know that that isn't the case. There are pictures of Amanda plastered everywhere. It's obvious by the long line of people trying to get last minute tickets that this isn't the little Manda I knew in school.

I don't bother writing in the Que. Instead I go straight to the front and by the look I get from the lady at ticket sales she was expecting me.

She hands me my ticket and has someone usher me to the VIP Section.

I make a note at the back of my head to google Amanda. I don't know why I haven't done a background check on her as it is. I usually do one on everyone, but for some odd reason I haven't seen the need to get one on her. It's as if I already trust her. Which is weird, because I don't trust anyone.

I grab a beer from the bar, and sit in my seat. Thankfully the VIP Section isn't overcrowded. I'm not exactly the crowd type.

The lights go off and there is immediate cheer from the crowd below me. the stage lights up and Manda is in the middle of the stage.

She doesn't move, her eyes are closed, then the beat starts and I see the crowd go wild. The sound of her sweet voice has me feeling things I don't know how to describe. She sings and

dances like she was born to do this. She has her crowd eating out of the palm of her hands, not just the crowd, she has me wanting to get on my feet and dance, but I don't, because well, I am a man with two left feet. Dancing isn't my thing.

The first 2 songs die down, and she stands there smiling. She welcomes everyone and thanks them for buying tickets. I just sit there in absolute awe, as the 3rd song starts and she is belting out notes that I have never heard live. She moves as she sings and dances to an upbeat house song, then out of nowhere some guy comes on and starts singing with her. He touches her as she moves her body to sway of the music.

I tense up when I he gets to close for my comfort, he leans in as if he's about to kiss her, but she moves her head playfully and he ends up kissing her on the cheek. Mxm, thankfully the song dies down and he is off the stage just as quick as he came on

Her; this next song, I would like to dedicate to someone very special. I him when I was in grade 1. I made him kiss me in grade 3. But life happened and we grew apart, but somehow, he is here tonight and I am grateful for that.

I smile when her eyes meet mine. She smiles back and starts singing. It's a slow, beautiful melody. She sings it like it's the last time she will ever sing again. she does it so effortlessly that if I wasn't paying attention I would say she was miming, but this is all her and I am captivated.

By the end of the concert I have felt a million emotions. I have laughed, I have felt love and I have enjoyed every bit of watching Amanda perform, so much so that I hang around afterwards as she signs a few autographs. She has someone from her team lead me to her dressing room, while she carries on signing her name on album covers.

When she finally comes back she sits on the couch next to me.

Her; so what did you think?

Me; I didn't know you could sing

Her; well, now you do

Me; you're good. Really good

Her; thank you

Me; I'm still totally shocked. I mean I always knew you would make something of yourself. I just never thought you would do this.

Her; is that a good

or bad thing Me; I

think its good

We sit in an awkward silence for a few seconds, then she speaks up

Her; so why

are you here

Me; you know

why

Her; no,

actually I don't

Me; I wanted

to see you Her;

well you've

seen me

Me; don't be like that Manda

Her; be like what?

Me; I thought we were going to have dinner

Her; Its 11;20pm. I am

way past dinner Me;

then have coffee with

me

Her; then

after coffee?

Me; sigh

Her; look Phila I am 31 years old. Playing games isn't in my
vocab. You either like me or you don't. The whole back and
forth thing doesn't work for me

Me; I don't like being pressured

Her; its not pressure. I like you. You know that. Its either you like
me or you don't. It is really just as
simple as that

ME; can we just get to know one another? If it leads to anything
more then it will. If it doesn't then we
part

ways Her; ill

think about it

Me; manda?

Come on

Her; I have to go to bed. I have

another show tomorrow Me; so

when am I going to see you

Her; come

I look up at her

Her; do you trust me

Me; I don't

trust no one

Her; come

home with me

ME; what

Her; we won't...do anything. But I need some sleep, so I am ready for the showcase tomorrow. So the only time I can spend time with you is now until tomorrow morning

Me; fine... but this doesn't

mean we are exclusive Her;

just shut up Phila.. oh and

you're driving ME; ok.. I guess

She stands up and we walk to where my car is parked.

Thankfully there aren't none of her fans outside left, so we are able to exit Montecasino in peace. She gives me directions as we chat along the way.

She talks so much that I don't even have a moment to question what I am doing. All I know is this woman is changing me, I just cant decide weather it's a good thing or a bad thing.

113

I leave dinner a short while after Nathi arrived. As much as I love my girls, I just couldn't relax knowing that he was just downstairs. Not with everything that's happening. So I left and went straight to my hotel room. Last thing I wanted was to offset him at someone's house. And in all honesty, they were his friends before they were mine.

The moment I arrive my phone rings, I look at the caller ID and its Nathi... my heart sinks instantly. I don't answer, I am tired, I am tipsy and all I want is to sleep. I throw my phone on the bed and change into my PJ's. he doesn't give up though, instead I hear a knock at my door.

Shit

Him; Tshidi open the door

I don't answer. I don't want to fight. I am tired and the last thing I need is to fight with him, but he doesn't stop and so I put a stop to it before he fucking breaks the door. I put on a gown and head to the door.

The moment I open he comes staggering in. I can already tell he

has had far too much to drink

Him; you left without saying goodbye

Me; what are you

doing here Him; I

came to see my

wife

Me; you shouldn't be here. Not when you're like this

He takes a step towards me and I take one back. He takes another back and I take another back, until my back is against the wall and him standing inches from me

Me;

Nathi

Him;

sshhhh

He puts his finger on my lips

Him; not a word

He lowers his lips to my ear

Him; I hate you for doing this to me. I hate you for turning me into this. I can't focus, I can't breathe. I hate myself for loving you. Why can't you just let me hate you Tshidi? Why can't I let you go?

Me; Nathi

Him; I want you out my system. I want to sleep in peace. Let me be, Tshidi please... let me go

Me; Nathi

Him; I love you..., God damn it I don't want to. I want to hate you so badly but you haunt me.

everywhere I go. You're fucking there. Your fucking smile, and you fucking laughter. It fucking haunts me. Let me go Tshidi... fuck sakes set me free

His hand moves to my robe. He unties it swiftly, leaving me with only in my short PJs. I want to stop him.

I do, but I don't

He takes the top off, not removing his eyes from mine, leaving me exposed. His hand slowly traces over my nipples. I need to stop this but his eyes, they stop me.

Him; tell me you hate me. tell me you want me to stop...

I look in his eyes and see tears

Him; please tell me to stop.. tell me you hate me. Tell me you want me to leave you

I keep quite, because I don't actually know what I want

He smashes his hands in the wall angrily.

Him; God damn it Tshidi

I don't move. Hell I don't blink. Because I know what this is. I know what is going to happen. I know we are going to have one of the worst fight ever. I should tell him to go. I really should, but we both know that's not going to happen. Instead I run my hands under his t-shirt. I feel the goosebumps on his skin the second I touch him.

Him; tell me you hate me. please Tshidi. tell so I can walk away.

I nod but move my hands to his jeans, tugging at the belt and stripping him of his jeans. His eyes are black. He's angry. He needs me to release him. He needs me to tell him that I hate him. That I want nothing to do with him, but I don't. Instead I stand on my tiptoes and put my hands around his neck pulling him closer. I know I shouldn't do this. I know that Nathi isn't here, this is and the minute I say those three words we will be at war and God know we both want control so badly. Neither of us wants

to let the other go, neither wants to let go and let the other be in control. I refuse to be vulnerable and so does he, instead we are going to fight each other

Me; I LOVE YOU

He literally loses it. His eyes change color. He clenches his muscles and in an instant my pj shorts a ripped

Him; fuck you Tshidi.. fuck you. I told you to let me go

He tries kissing me but I bite him the minute his lips touch mine. He steps back obviously irritated, angry.

He grabs me and slams me onto the bed. I try pushing against him but he is on top of me with his lips taking charge of my lips forcefully. I bite him but he doesn't stop. He only deepens the kiss, until I get a lucky break and bite at him too hard.

Him; fuck.

He loosens his body and I take that as a chance to
climb over him, sitting on top of. Him; get off me
Tshidi. fucking hell move before I kill you
I slap him instead.

Me; I have had it with your bullshit. Fuck you
Nathi.. You fucking strangled me Him; you
fucked him

Me; how many fucking times to I have to tell
you that I didn't sleep with him I slap him
again and this time he winces,

Him; stop
I slap him again

Him; Tshidi

This time I punch him.

Him; I swear to God if you do that again I am

Before he finishes his sentences, I move up and sit on his face. I move my G-String aside and make him eat my p***y.

Me; Instead of strangling me. eat this you asshole

Shit he starts eating me like I am fucking candy floss, as I ride his face. His hands are on my butt cheeks squeezing as I ride him into submission. He doesn't stop though, he licks, sucks and eats me like his life depends on it.

I start feeling the pressure mounting. I know I'm close, I want to stop but he squeezes my butt Me; I am going to cum... Fuck... ahhh

I have the most explosive orgasm of my life.

I slap the shit out of him when I come back to reality. He had no right to do what he did. I didn't want to cum, he did it again. he didn't have to make me do it. But because he is Nathi, he just had to take control. Nxa

He holds both my hands when I start punching him.

Him; Tshidi, stop...

Me; fuck u

He lowers me and while I claw his skin with my nails. He turns us around and thrusts into me and I let out a scream as he fills every inch of my aching body. This is war and he is making sure that he wins. He is making sure I know that he isn't playing with me, and you know what I hate? I hate that my body so willingly gets wet for him. That it responds to him with a mere touch.

I feel another orgasm building. Body tenses, it aches for relief, he doesn't disappoint, he sends me into a spiraling orgasm again.

I think he is going to stop, but he turns me around and spreads my legs wide Him; tell me to stop.. Tshidi for both our sakes tell me to stop

I don't answer him. I won't let him win this. He can do anything he wants but I won't tell him that I hate him.

He thrusts into me again, without telling removing his eyes from mine

Him; tell me...

Me; I love you

He rams into me again.

Him; why can't you trust me when I tell you that I will handle things

He rams into me again

Him; let me be a man Tshidi... for once, let me be a man

He rams into me again

Him; I will fuck you into submission Tshidi. if it's the last thing I

do I will fucking take it from you

Me; the hell you will

He rams into again, and this time I feel my body build again. I'm too tired for this. I have no energy and he knows it. So, he starts moving faster. I try moving him but he doesn't budge, instead my orgasm builds again, and rips through every inch of my body. Leaving me weaker. I can't take anything another one. If another one comes I will fucking die. But I refuse to let him win. I would rather die, then let him win

Him; you're mine Tshidi. you hear me. You are mine and I will die, before I let that fucker take you from me

Me; Nathi

Him; you know what to do. You have the power to end this. Just say it

He hasn't stopped, and now I have tears in my eyes as the onset of another orgasm surprises me. I can't take anymore. My body is weak. It needs this to stop, but I know if I don't say those words he won't stop. I used to think he held all the power, but he has shifted it and has now bestowed it onto me. Unfairly so, but as much as I hate him for it, I won't tell him I hate him. I won't tell him that I want a divorce.

Me; Nathi I can't take more

Him; say it damn it.... Just fucking say what you feel.

Me; never

Him; you know the monster in me now. I nearly killed you... tell me you hate me Tshidi... please just let me loose

I let out a cry as I orgasm again. I seriously can't do this... not anymore.

Me; Nathi... please... Khumalo... I can't take anymore. Please. I love you... with everything in me. I refuse to lie about it. If you want to leave, then leave me. but I won't tell you that I hate you, because it's not true. I chose to love you, even though you

are a monster. Even though you might kill me, but I won't stop loving you. I couldn't. not even if I tried. So go ahead. Fuck me as much as you want. I'd rather die, than say those words,

He slams into me again, and groans as he releases inside of me, immediately collapsing on me.

Nathi

I lay on Tshidi, trying my best not to strangle the shit out of her. Why does she do this. Why does she always have to win? How do I continue to let her have this hold over me? why can't we just fucking walk away from one another?

I shift off of her feeling not an ounce of relief. Instead of relief, she just validated the one thing I hate the most, that I am nothing without her. That she wouldn't let me go, and I wouldn't either. And where does that leave us? This marriage is toxic and until one of us lets go, we are both bound to have a miserable life.

I get up and put my clothes on. Tshidi doesn't say a word. I know she's angry and well so am I. she pulls the duvet over her body protectively,

Her; get the fuck out my hotel room, and don't fucking come back until you have investigated my so called cheating and have come to the conclusion that you nearly killed me because of your own insecurities.

I look at her and see that

she is 100% serious Me;

why didn't you tell me

about him

Her; when exactly would I have done that? You were never available.

Me; you could've tried harder. Or even had gotten hold of nails. Anything Tshidi

Her; get out

Me; I'll go, but this isn't over Tshidi, I will get to the bottom of this and I pray to God you are telling me the truth because if you aren't I will kill you Tshidi, for both our sakes I will end this.

With that I walk out. Not taking a look back. Because now she knows. Now she knows the real Nathi. She knows Axe. There is no more hiding.

I immediately regret waking up after last night, its Saturday and my body feels like I have been run over by a fucking train. I take an aspirin and go back to bed. I need to sleep this off. If I don't I am going to die, only problem is that my phone isn't participating. I answer it without looking at the Caller ID

Me; Hello (yawn)

Him; Oh thank God... Tshidi.. please don't put the phone down

Me; Neli.. you honestly need to give up

Him; no... please.. I need to know what happened to my sister. I cant get hold of her

Me; I don't know, and quite frankly I don't care

Him; Tshidi

I transfer the call to Nails. I am too sore to even bother myself with what he has to say. Nails will just have to deal with this.

Nails

I've never, and I mean ever spent the night with a woman and not had sex. All we did was talk. That's it, talk. Yes, I'm also shocked, but I won't lie and say I didn't enjoy spending time with her. I did, only problem is that we overslept and now I am late for work.

I don't even bother taking a shower. Amanda is still asleep, and I don't want to wake her.

So I just write her note and get my ass to work. I have a meeting with Axe, which I am already late for and for some reason my phone is on silent. Which I don't remember putting on silent.

I arrive at the office, and I already feel like hell, everyone I walk past keeps looking at me. I get to the IT space and already I know that today is going to be a day from hell.

Him; you look like hell

Me; Are you serious? You look like

you were beaten to a pulp Him; yah,

well

Me; wait... did... oh my God

I burst out laughing

Me; I think I like Tshidi even more. I mean if she can do all this to you and live to tell the tale. She is a keeper

Him; yah, who said she lived to tell the tale

Me: because she just transferred a call to me from that stalker of hers Him; Neli?

Me; yah, the guys just won't let go. He keeps hounding her and all she does is ignore him.

Me; how long has this

been going on Me;

give me a sec to log in

I log into my laptop and access Tshidi's folder.

Me; according to this

for a few weeks Him;

has she ever

responded

Me; mhmmm, lets see

I go through Tshidi's message and all of them seem one sided

Me; nope, not once

Him; can I ask you something

Me; do you think by any chance that she could be having an affair with him

I look at Axe, and try to see if this is a joke.. He doesn't smile. He's serious

Me; are you serious... like serious serious

Him; yes, just answer the question

Me; Axe, your wife is one of the most guarded wives in the force. She has more security than the first lady. Her cellphone calls are recorded. She couldn't cheat, not even if she wanted to

Him; yes, but

Me; are you saying you

doubt my systems Him;

no, but

Me; listen Axe. You know I don't ever get involved in your personal business, but Tshidi is loyal. Hell she doesn't even watch porn

Her laughs

Him; you sure?

Me; please tell me you haven't accused her of anything

Him; well,

Me; oh shit. So that's why you have those bruises. Do you want a word of advice?

Him; no, but I know you're going to tell me

Me; you need to be honest with Tshidi. Stop trying to hide who you are. You and AXE are one. You are trained to be AXE, he is a part of you. Separating the two isn't possible. Instead you make things worse because you aren't honest

Him; what if she wants to leave

Me; if she leaves she leaves. That's her decision to make.

Him; since when are you so soft?

Me; never. I told you guys, to never actually fall for the girls, but what do you do? You fucking fall hard and now they have you guys going crazy. I mean have you seen how dourine gets away with murder? Luzuko is putty in her hands.

Him; you can laugh all you want, but you yourself

have been bitten by the love bug Me; never

Him; you say that now, but yet you are here with the same clothes you were in yesterday,

Me; that doesn't

mean anything Him;

and yet you slept at

her house Me; so

Him; you never sleep over.

You bang and pass Me;well,

it is what it is

Him; Locate him. I think it's time I paid MR Neli a little visit

Me; sho boss

Him; oh, and next time you stay over at a girl's place, make sure you don't have lipstick on your clothes...

it makes it a bit too obvious

Me; well at least I've got a girl.

You on the other hand Him; your

bold lately, I'm guessing it's the

love bug Me; you and I both

know I don't do love

Him; then what exactly is this thing you have going on

Me; it's nothing. We just chilling

Him; yah, whatever you say

He walks away laughing, I try getting into my zone, but I can't

stop thinking of last night. Manda, is one hell of a girl, but I don't know what I am doing here. I don't know what I am trying to do. I call her and she doesn't answer. I try her again and she doesn't answer. I know I shouldn't get irritated, but I do. So I track her phone.

Nathi

It takes Nails exactly 5 minutes to track Neli, He is a stupid and predictable idiot, he is actually staying opposite the same hotel that Tshidi is staying at. That rubs me off the wrong way in every possible way.

I go up to room 108 and as expected he stupidly opens the door for me, he tries closing the door when he saw it was me, but it was too late, I was already in his hotel room.

Him; what are you doing here

Me; I think we need to have a

discussion you know, man to man Him;

you can start by telling me where my

sister is

Me; (chuckles) you have some nerve. Do you honestly think I would come all the way here to speak about your sister?

Him; I want her back

Me; mhmhm that's funny since all it looks like is that you are after my wife

Him; I won't apologize for falling for her, it wasn't planned, but it's the way I feel

Me; well, I am going to tell you this once. Get your ass out of SA. Go back to Angola and stay out my turf. If I smell you within an inch of my wife, I will kill you.

Him; threats? Really, is that what you resort to. Is it because you know that she could actually fall in love with me

Me; you really are as deluded as your sister. Leave Neli. Leave before I have to resort to killing you. I have enough blood on my hands. Last thing I need is to kill you because of my wife

I walk out not bothering to look at him. I have made my point. I will not repeat myself again. If he tries me, I will kill him. Yes, I'm evil, and I'm done making excuses about it. This is Nathi. I am Axe, I kill and that's that.

Tshidi

Just by the sound of the knock on the door I know that Nathi is at the door. I think I could do without him for today, but I know him, if I don't open he will get all mad and I honestly don't want to be kicked out of this hotel.

Me; you better have a good
reason for being here Him; are
you going to let me in?

Me; no, I haven't showered, my head hurts and my body is bruised. Now is not the time

Him; well, too bad we need to talk

He tries stepping inside

but I stand firm me;

Nathi, not now.

Him; I'm taking you home

Me; nope

Him; you going to

tell me to leave Me;

yep

Him; Tshidi

Me; I'm guessing the only reason your here, is because you found out I was telling the truth

I see the pride in his side subside

Him; baby

Me; ohhh right, so wena ne, you now know the truth, and you thought you were going to come here and apologize and I was going to just accept you with open legs ?

Him; Tshidi

Me; no no, you take your cute tight ass out of here. I am done with the bullshit I step back and try closing the door, but he puts his foot in the door

Him; I know I messed up, I'm sorry Tshidi.... I just lost it when I saw those messages.

Me; yah, well shame, now move so I can go get me some sleep Him; How long are you going to punish me?

Me; Nathi... just cause I slept with you doesn't mean I have forgiven you. You know my history with abuse, and you decide to take me back there

Him; Tshidi... please just let me in Me; no

Him; don't make me beg

Me; see. This is what I am talking about. You can't bully me like this Nathi

Him; he takes a step towards me

Me; Nathi

He takes another one

Him; you know I can make you let me in, and I can take you
right now and here, and you will let me Me; fuck you

Him; why don't you

Me; because I don't want to

Him; make

me stop

Me; Nathi

Him; stop acting like this. I said I am sorry

Her; Nathi. You hurt me, and I am not just going to let this go

Him; I know. But please come home. We can work through this
Tshidi

Me; we could've worked through it, but now I'm not so sure

Him; well shame, because you are my wife, and I am not going
to lose you. Not because of this

Before I can even gather my thoughts, He takes my
hand pulling me out the door, Me; Nathi

Him; Tshidi, walk or I

will carry you Me;

Nathi

He comes towards me and I take a step back

Me; ok, hell ill walk

I see a smile creeping up on his face. I don't know why, but I smile too. Yes, I know I'm crazy, but truth is I love him, and well there is no me without him. I may forgive, but God knows I am going to make him suffer. If it's the last thing I do.

Conclusion of part 1

love.

Lobe is one of the hardest feelings in life. No matter how hard you try escaping it, it somehow always comes to life. Especially when I look at the man sleeping besides me. his beautiful dark skin, his hard features, his lips, everything about him. It makes me love him even more

everyday. We haven't had it easy. In fact, the first 3 years of our marriage was a total disaster,

but somehow we always found our way to each other.

He opens his eyes and smiles when he sees me. he doesn't say anything. He doesn't need to, because his eyes tell me everything I need to know. They tell me he loves me. I wasn't always sure about that. There were times where I doubted his love, but we were able to come together after the chocking incident.

We started therapy with Dr S again and this time we did everything we were supposed to do. we have since found

ways to communicate. I've had to also find a way to accept that Axe is a part of our lives. He is runs through these very veins and at times still shows up in moods, but other than that Nathi and I have finally settled. He still works a lot at HQ but is hardly ever on missions. He's handed the ropes to Nails, who has done an amazing job.

He places his hand over my already swollen belly and smiles even more, he speaks to my belly ever since we found out I was pregnant.

Him;

Mtungwa,

Mbulaz'omn

yama,

Nina bakaBhej' eseNgome,

Nin' enadl'umuntu nimyenga ngendaba,

Nin' enadl' izimf'ezimbili ikhambi

laphuma lilinye, Lobengula

kaMzilikazi,

He looks up to me and all he says is thank you. Thank you, Thank you, and as always all I do isshed a tear. And thankfully now the only tears I shed are tears of Joy. Nathi is overly excited about this baby, I think especially since he knows it's a boy,

We hear them before we can even get up. They both come rushing into our bedroom, Aya jumps onto Nathi and Siseko comes running to me. despite my ever growing body parts we all fit on the massive bed.

I look around me and all I can do is thank God for giving me my family. Yes we aren't perfect, yes we fight, but at the end of it we are the Khumalo's and we rise above it. We always have and we always will.

.....The end.....

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

**For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>
And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>**